



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

due 7 1918. 29. 185

ESSEX INSTITUTE.

CANCELLED PRESENTED BY

HENRY WHEATLAND.

The Library Committee shall divide the books and other articles belonging to the Library into three classes, namely: (a) those which are not to be removed from the building; (b) those which may be taken only by written permission of three members of the committee; (c) those which may circulate under the following rules:—

Members shall be entitled to take from the Library two folio or quarto volumes, or four volumes of lesser fold, with the plates belonging to the same, upon having them recorded by the Librarian, or Assistant Librarian, and promising to make good any damage they sustain, while in their possession, and to replace the same if lost, or pay a sum fixed by the Library Committee.

No person shall lend any book belonging to the Institute, excepting to a member, under a penalty of one dollar for each offence.

The Library Committee may allow members to take more than the allotted number of books upon a written application, and may also permit other persons than members to use the Library under such conditions as they may impose.

No person shall detain any book longer than four weeks from the Library, if notified that the same is wanted by another member, under a penalty of five cents per day, and no volume shall be detained longer than three months at one time under the same penalty.

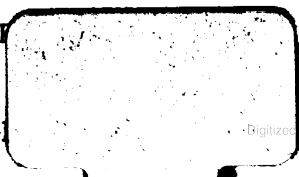
The Librarian shall have power by order of the Library Committee to call in any volume after it has been retained by a member for ten days.

On or before the first Wednesday in May all books shall be returned to the Library, and a penalty of five cents per day shall be imposed for each volume detained.

No book shall be allowed to circulate until one month after its receipt.

HARVARD LIBRARY

GEORGE WASHINGTON





3 2044 102 870 128

H. Wheatland.

Jan. 9th 1832

Handwritten text, possibly a signature or a name, located at the top of the page. The characters are dark and somewhat stylized, but difficult to decipher due to the image quality.

ITALIAN GRAMMAR.

WORKS BY THE SAME AUTHOR.

Scelta di Prose Italiane, tratte da' più Celebri Scrittori Antichi e Moderni, per U'so degli Studiosi di questa Lingua. 1 vol. 12mo. pp. 450.

IN PRESS.

Tetiro Scelto Italiano: contenente l'Aminta di Tasso, l'Artaserse di Metastasio, la Griselda di Goldoni, la Mérope di Maffei, il Saul di Alfieri, e l'Aristodemo di Monti; with Notes, &c. 1 vol. 12mo. about pp. 400.

A Collection of Exercises on the Italian Language, adapted to the Grammar; &c. 1 vol. 12mo. about pp. 100.

P. B. is now occupied in compiling, *Scelta di Poesie Italiane, tratte da' più Celebri Autori Antichi e Moderni, per U'so degli Studiosi di questa Lingua*; a work intended to follow the *Scelta di Prose*, and to form with it a complete *Italian Reader*.

A
GRAMMAR
OF THE
ITALIAN LANGUAGE.

BY
PIÈTRO BÁCHI,
INSTRUCTOR IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY.

*Hæc de grammaticâ, quàm brevissime potui, non ut omnia dicerem,
sectatus, sed ut maxime necessaria.*

QUINTILIAN.

BOSTON:
HILLIARD, GRAY, LITTLE, AND WILKINS.

M DCCC XXIX.

Edward T 1918.29.185

CAMBRIDGE :

HILLIARD, METCALF, AND COMPANY,

Printers to the University.

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY

GIFT OF

GEORGE ARTHUR PLIMPTON

JANUARY 25, 1924

DISTRICT OF MASSACHUSETTS, TO WIT:

District Clerk's Office.

BE it remembered, that on the twenty-first day of January, A. D. 1829, in the fifty-third year of the Independence of the United States of America, William Hilliard, of the said district, has deposited in this office the title of a book, the right whereof he claims as proprietor, in the words following, *to wit*:—"A Grammar of the Italian Language. By Pietro Bachi, Instructor in Harvard University. *Hæc de grammaticâ, quàm brevissime potui, non ut omnia dicerem, sectatus, sed ut maxime necessaria. Quintilian.*"—In conformity to the act of the Congress of the United States, entitled "An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned;" and also to an act, entitled "An act supplementary to an act, entitled, 'An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned;'" and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching historical and other prints." JNO. W. DAVIS,

Clerk of the District of Massachusetts.

TO
CHARLES FOLSOM,
A LOVER OF ITALIAN LITERATURE
AND
THE FIRST TO INTRODUCE THE STUDY OF IT
IN HARVARD UNIVERSITY,
THIS GRAMMAR
IS INSCRIBED
BY
THE AUTHOR.

1*

PREFACE.

AS A NATURAL consequence of the general advancement of this country in literature, the importance attached to an acquaintance with the Italian Language, as a part of polite education, has considerably increased. Not only does it now enter into the circle of the elegant studies of females, as the handmaid and ally of the ornamental arts, but the spirit of its higher literature begins to be understood by the cultivated of both sexes; and within a short time a place has been conceded to *Dante* and *Tasso* in the same academic course with Homer and Virgil.

But while the other languages of the continent of Europe have possessed the advantage of a variety of good grammars written in English, the Italian Instructor has had the mortification to see in almost universal use the farrago of *Veneróni*,* to the disparagement of his native tongue and the perplexity of those who would learn it. It is true that other grammars are extant of various degrees of merit, and those of *Galignani* and *Vergani* are entitled to much praise; the former, however, is hardly known here, and the latter, which is perhaps the best of them all, has been confin-

* *Veneróni* was a native of *Verdun*, a small town of Burgundy, in France; his real name was *Vignerón*; but having learnt Italian, and wishing to teach it in Paris, he Italianized his name and called himself a *Florentine*. *The Complete Italian Master* by Signór *Veneróni* was written for a few crowns by *Rosélli*, the extraordinary adventurer, who has left us his history in the romance entitled *The Unfortunate Neapolitan*.

ed principally to New-York; where indeed the want of a suitable grammar has been far less felt than in other places, from the singular good fortune of that city in enjoying the living instruction of the venerable *Da Ponte*, whose own writings, in prose as well as in verse, form an integral and permanent part of the noble literature, which he has done so much to propagate in America.

The field, therefore, was open for attempting to treat in English the *Grammar of the Italian Language* in a manner better suited to the wants of the public; and the author, in entering it, has flattered himself that he should render an acceptable service, if, after a thorough study of Italian writers on their own tongue, and a diligent examination of the labours of his predecessors both in Great Britain and France, he should be able to produce a more complete, and methodical, and, at the same time, strictly practical treatise, than now exists in English, however far he might fall short of that perfection of which he has the idea.

As the general plan of this Grammar will be readily perceived from the *Analytical Table of Contents* at the end of the volume, only a few observations are here necessary respecting it.

In the *Introduction* are given very summarily the principles of general grammar, and the terms are defined in which those principles are afterwards applied to the Italian tongue.

The Part devoted to *Pronunciation* affords, it is believed, more full information on the subject than can elsewhere be found; and as the words are carefully represented by English combinations of letters of equivalent sound,* students who cannot avail themselves of oral instruction, may yet make such an

* The vowel *a* is represented by the combination of letters *ah*, pronounced without aspiration as in the words *sirrah*, *allelujah*, &c. : *e*, by *ay*, as in *day*, except when it occurs before certain consonants with which in English it has what is called the short sound, nearly resembling the sound in Italian, as in the syllables *en*, *el*, &c. ; before *r*, however, *e* is sounded long, like *ay*, and indeed the name of *r* would have been better represented (on page 12) by *ayr'-ray* : *i*, by *ee*, as in *sleep* : *u*, by *oo*, as in *doom*. In the combinations *k,y* — *g,y* — *l,y* — *n,y*, a comma is inserted to prevent the letter before it from coalescing with the *y*, which is to be pronounced with the following vowel as if it began the syllable.

approximation to a just pronunciation, as to perceive and enjoy in a good degree the rhythm and harmony of the classic authors, and, with few errors to unlearn, be prepared to take advantage of future opportunities of improving their pronunciation by intercourse with accomplished speakers of the language.

The *Orthography* contains the result of what has been written by Italian authors on the subject, and such rules as have been deduced from the usage of the best writers.

In treating of the different Parts of Speech, in the division called *Analogy*, while the author has wished that nothing should be wanting to the completeness of this part of his treatise, he has striven so to methodize the various particulars that they should lie ready for use. The verbs, especially, are given with unexampled fulness; and to both the regular and irregular verbs are annexed the poetical forms, which constitute no small difficulty for learners, even in reading the older prose writers. This is an advantage not afforded to the same extent in any preceding grammar.

As to the *Syntax*, a few scattered observations only are to be found in the best grammars, like those of *Galignani* and *Vergani*. These are here digested under their proper heads, increased by various new ones (particularly those on the use of the *article*, of the pronoun *ella* in addressing persons, of the *prepositions*, and of the *ellipsis*), and all of them supported by citations from those classics from whose authority no appeal can be allowed, though colloquial usage may in a few instances be at variance with them.

It was the intention of the author to follow the *Syntax* by a body of *Exercises* adapted to the Grammar; but the size which the volume had already attained, determined him to reserve them to be published in a separate form, in which perhaps they will be on the whole more conveniently used, if not attended by other advantages.

Throughout the Grammar, it should be observed, the principal rules are placed under their appropriate heads, in a larger type; and under each head, separated by a line, follow observations which, however important, are less strictly essential. Exceptions to general rules and subordinate observations are printed in a smaller type. Every Italian

word of more than one syllable is carefully accented, that the mere perusal of the Grammar may operate as a perpetual lesson in pronunciation, preparing the pupil to read currently the first author put into his hands, and sparing the instructor the trouble of much inculcation. For an analogous reason, every Italian word and sentence is accompanied by a literal English version, which is often indispensable to the beginner, and can rarely be unuseful.

The author is well aware, of the amount of indulgence which his English style will require on the part of his readers, whose very pursuit of a foreign literature implies a degree of cultivation in their own, which must make them impatient of the constraint and want of idiomatic propriety they will here meet with. Grammatical propriety, however, and perspicuity were the highest qualities to which he could at present pretend, in a language whose idioms are so remote from his own; and if he has been in any good degree successful in attaining these, he relies on the candour of ingenuous scholars to attribute his defects to the difficulty of the case, and not suppose that he undervalues or is insensible to the charms of a good style; which would indeed be inexcusable in one whose ambition it is to spread a knowledge of the most graceful of modern dialects:

“ Illam, quidquid agit, quoquò vestigia movit,
Componit furtim subsequiturque Decor.”

Cambridge, February, 1829.

List of Works examined with reference to the Compilation of this Grammar.

Bémbo (Piétro), *Próse, nelle quáli si ragióna délla Volgár Línqua, cólle Giúnte di Lodovíco Castelvétro. Nápoli, 1714. 2 vol. 4to.*

Várcchi (Benedétto), *L'Ercoláno, o Ragionaménto sülle Línque, ed in particuláre délla Toscana e Fiorentína. Venézia. 1680. 1 vol. 4to.*

Buommattéi (Benedétto), *Délla Línqua Toscana, cólle Nóte di Anton-Maria Salvíni. Veróna. 1744. 1 vol. 4to.*

Pergamíni (Giacomo), *Trattáto délla Línqua Italiána. Venézia. 1613. 1 vol. 8vo.*

Cinóbio [alias Mambélli (M. António)], *Osservazióni délla Línqua Italiána. Veróna. 1722. 2 vol. 4to.^o*

Gígli (Girólamo), *Lezióni di Línqua Toscana. Venézia. 1722. 1 vol. 8vo.*

Mánni (Dom. M.), *Lezióni di Línqua Toscana. Firenze. 1737. 1 vol. 8vo.*

Brúni (Donáto Ant.), *Osservaziónti sópra la Línqua Toscana. Nápoli. 1759. 1 vol. 12mo.*

Corticélli (Salvadóre), *Régole ed Osservazióni délla Línqua Toscana. Bassáno. 1817. 1 vol. 12mo.*

Soáve (Francésco), *Gramática Ragionáta délla Línqua Italiána. Venézia. 1807. 1 vol. 12mo.*

Torriáno (Giovánni), *The Italian Revived, or an Introduction to the Italian Tongue. London. 1689. 1 vol. 12mo.*

Palérmo (Evangelísta), *A Grammar of the Italian Language, in two Parts. London. 1755. 1 vol. 8vo.*

Borsacchíni (M. Guélf), *The Tuscan Master. Bath. 1791. 1 vol. 8vo.*

Galignáni (J. A.), *Twenty-four Lectures on the Italian Language. London. 1796. 1 vol. 8vo.*

- Barétti (Giuseppe)*, A New Italian Grammar. London.—1 vol. 12mo.
- Lainé (C.)*, A Grammar of the Italian Language. London. 1813. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Ravissótti (Gaetano)*, A New Italian Grammar in English and Italian. London.—1 vol. 12mo.
- Grágia (G. A.)*, A New Grammar of the Italian Language. London. 1822. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Vergáni (M. A.)*, A New and Complete Italian Grammar. Leghorn. 1824. 1 vol. 12mo.

- De Boldóni (l'Abbé)*, Grammaire Italienne Développée. Paris. 1787. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Scóppa (Antonio)*, E'lémens de la Grammaire Italienne. Paris. 1811. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Brúno (Césare)*, Grammaire Italienne. Londres.—1 vol. 12mo.
- Zótti, (—)*, Grammaire Italienne, et Thèmes sur la Langue Italienne. Paris. 1823. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Biagióli (G.)*, Grammaire Italienne E'lémentaire et Raisonnée. Paris. 1819. 1 vol. 8vo.

Especial use has been made of

- Compagnóni (Giuseppe)*, Teórica de' Verbi Italiáni, compiláta sülle O'pere del Cinónio, del Pistolési, del Mastrofíni, e d' áltri piú Illústri Gramátici. Miláno. 1817. 1 vol. 12mo.
- Barberi (J. Ph.)*, Grammaire des Grammaires Italiennes, ou Cours Complet de Langue Italienne. Paris. 1819. 2 vol. 8vo.

A

GRAMMAR

OF THE

ITALIAN LANGUAGE.

INTRODUCTION.

GRAMMAR is the art of rightly expressing our thoughts by *words*.

WORDS may be considered as *articulate sounds* or as *signs of our thoughts*.

WORDS considered as **ARTICULATE SOUNDS** are formed of *syllables*, and syllables of *letters*.

LETTERS are certain figures or characters, which represent *sounds* and *articulations*.

SOUNDS are simple emissions of the voice; and **ARTICULATIONS** are the modifications which the sounds receive by the movements of the organs of speech.

The letters which represent the sounds, as, *a, e, &c.* are called *vowels*; and those which represent the articulations, as, *b, c, d, &c.* are called *consonants*, because they can only be *sounded with a vowel*.

SYLLABLES consist of one or more letters pronounced by a single impulse of the voice, and constituting a word, or a part of a word; as, *a, to; re, king; li-ra, lyre; a-mi-stà, amity.*

Words considered as SIGNS OF OUR THOUGHTS are divided into different classes, commonly called PARTS OF SPEECH. These in Italian are ten, viz. the *noun, article, adjective, pronoun, verb, participle, adverb, preposition, conjunction, and interjection.*

Of these ten parts of speech, the *noun, article, adjective, pronoun, verb, and participle* are VARIABLE, that is, change their termination; the rest are INVARIABLE.

A NOUN is a word, which subsists by itself, independent of any other word, and denotes a person or thing; as *Piétro*, Peter; *sóle*, sun; *virtù*, virtue.

Nouns are either *proper* or *common*.

A *proper* noun is one, which is individually applicable to a person or thing; as, *Césare*, Cæsar; *Róma*, Rome.

A *common* noun is one, which may be applied to all persons or things of the same kind; as, *uómo*, man; *città*, city.

There are three things to be considered in nouns, viz. *gender, number, and case.*

Gender is a division of nouns according to sex. Nouns denoting males are *masculine*; nouns denoting females are *feminine*.

This division, which properly regards only nouns having sex, is in Italian extended also to all other nouns, though they have no sex; so that every noun is either of the *masculine* or *feminine* gender. But there are certain nouns which belong to both genders, and these are said to be of the *common* gender.

Number is the designation of one or more objects. There are two numbers, viz. the *singular* and *plural*.

The *singular* designates one single person or thing; the *plural*, more than one person or thing.

Case is, properly, the change of the termination of nouns to express the relations they bear to each other.

The Italian has no real cases, but has borrowed this term from the Latin, in which nouns have six different terminations, viz. the *nominative*, *genitive*, *dative*, *accusative*, *vocative*, and *ablative*.

The *nominative* represents the *subject* of a proposition.

The *genitive* denotes the person or thing to which belongs the object of which we speak.

The *dative* shows the person or thing to which the object is attributed.

The *accusative* denotes the *object*, or the end of the action expressed by the verb.

The *vocative* is used for calling or naming the person to whom we speak.

The *ablative* expresses the object from which a thing proceeds, or the manner in which it is done.

The mode of turning and changing a noun according to its several relations, both in the singular and plural, is called *declension*.

Italian nouns are varied by gender and number. The various relations of nouns, which in Latin are denoted by different terminations, are expressed in Italian by certain *prepositions* placed before them; and for the *nominative* and *accusative* of the Latin, have been substituted the terms *subjective* and *objective*; and for the *genitive*, *dative*, and *ablative*,—the terms *relation of possession*, *of attribution*, and *of derivation*.

The **ARTICLE** is a small word placed before a noun to determine the extent of its signification.

Articles are either *definite* or *indefinite*.

The *definite* article determines the particular object of which we speak; as, *il*, *lo*, *la*, the: *il libro*, the book; *lo spróne*, the spur; *la casa*, the house.

The *indefinite* article leaves the object of which we speak in a vague and indeterminate sense.

The Italian has no proper indefinite articles; the English articles *a*, *an*, are expressed by the indefinite pronouns *un*, *úno*, *úna*; as, *un cappélló*, a hat; *úno spéccchio*, a looking-glass; *úna zéba*, a goat.

The Italian articles are varied by gender and number.

AN ADJECTIVE is a word added to a noun to express its quality ; as, *dótto*, learned ; *bélla*, beautiful : *un uómo dótto*, a learned man ; *úna bélla città*, a beautiful city.

Adjectives may express the quality of a noun either *absolutely*, that is, without any relation to other objects ; or *relatively* to other objects ; which produces different degrees of qualification : these have been reduced to the following three, viz. the *positive*, *comparative*, and *superlative*.

The *positive* is the adjective itself expressing the quality of an object without any relation of comparison ; as, *ricco*, rich ; *póvero*, poor.

The *comparative* is the adjective expressing a relation of superiority or inferiority between two or more objects in comparison ; as *più*, or *méno ricco*, more, or less rich ; *più*, or *méno póvero*, more, or less poor : *Piétro è più*, or *méno ricco di Tommáso* ; Peter is more, or less rich than Thomas ; *Tommáso è più*, or *méno póvero di Piétro*, Thomas is more, or less poor than Peter.

The *superlative* is the adjective expressing the quality of the object in the highest degree of superiority, or lowest degree of inferiority.

There are two kinds of superlative, the *relative* and the *absolute*.

The *relative* superlative expresses the superiority or inferiority of an object with relation to others ; as, *il più*, or *il méno ricco*, the most, or the least rich ; *il più*, or *il méno póvero*, the most, or the least poor : *Piétro è il più*, or *il méno ricco*,—*Tommáso è il più*, or *il méno póvero*, *di tútti* ; Peter is the most, or the least rich,—Thomas is the most, or the least poor, of all.

The *absolute* superlative shows that the object spoken of possesses a quality in the superlative degree, but without reference to any other ; as, *ricchíssimo*, very rich ; *poveríssimo*, very poor.

Italian adjectives are varied by gender and number.

A PRONOUN is a word used instead of a noun, already expressed, to prevent its frequent repetition.

Pronouns are either *personal, conjunctive, possessive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, or indefinite.*

The *personal* pronouns mark the *persons* whose place they supply.

The persons are three, viz. the *first, second, and third.* The *first* is the person that speaks; as, *io, I; nói, we*: the *second* is the person to whom we speak; as, *tu, thou; vói, you*: and the *third* is the person of whom we speak; as, *égli, he; élla, she; églino or élleno, they.*

The *conjunctive* pronouns are those, which are always joined to a verb; as, *mi, me; ti, thee; gli, to him; le, to her; si, himself, or herself; ci, us; vi, you; loro, to them; si, themselves.*

The *possessive* pronouns are those, which mark the possession of a thing; as, *mío, my; túo, thy; súo, his, her, or its; nóstro, our; vóstro, your; loro, their: il mío cavallo, my horse; il túo cappéllò, thy hat; il súo líbro, his, her, or its book; &c.*

The *demonstrative* pronouns are those, which precisely point out the particular person or thing to which they relate; as, *quésto, this; quéllò, that: questo giòvane, this youth; quéllò spécchio, that looking-glass.*

The *interrogative* pronouns are those, which are used to interrogate, or ask a question; as, *chi?, who?; che?, what?; quále?, which?: chi è?, who is it?; che fáte?, what are you doing?; quále voléte?, which will you have?*

The *relative* pronouns are those, which relate to a person or thing that has been before spoken of; as, *chi, who or he that; che and il quále, who or which, that: chi si umília si esálta, who, or he that, humbles himself exalts himself; Piétro che or il quále scríve, Peter who or that writes; il líbro che or il quále io léggo, the book which or that I read.*

The *indefinite* pronouns are those, which express a person or thing in a general and unlimited sense; as, *alcúno, some-one; ognúno, every-one; niúno, no-one; &c.*

Italian pronouns, like the nouns, are varied by gender and number.

A **VERB** is a word, which serves to express the being, action, or passion of a person or thing; as, *éssere*, to be; *agíre*, to do; *patíre*, to suffer or undergo.

Hence the general division of verbs into *active*, *passive*, and *neuter*.

Active verbs are those which express an action; as, *amáre*, to love: and necessarily suppose an agent, and an object acted upon; as, *io ámo la virtù*, I love virtue.

Passive verbs express a passion or the receiving of an action; as, *éssere amáta*, to be loved: and necessarily imply, like the active, an agent, and an object acted upon; but with this difference, that in the passive the object acted upon takes the place of the agent; as, *la virtù è amáta da me*, virtue is loved by me.

Neuter verbs express neither action nor passion, but simply being or a state of being; as, *dormíre*, to sleep: *io dórmo*, I sleep.

To these may be added the *pronominal*, and the *unipersonal* verbs.

Pronominal verbs are those, which are conjugated, through all their tenses, with the conjunctive pronouns *mi*, *ti*, *si*, *ci*, *vi*, *si*; as, *pentírsi*, to repent one's self: *io mi pénto*, I repent myself; *tu ti pénti*, thou repentest thyself; *égli si pénte*, he repents himself; *élla si pénte*, she repents herself; &c.

Unipersonal, or, as they are usually called, *impersonal* verbs, are those, which are used only in the third person singular of each tense; as, *accadére*, to happen: *accáde*, it happens; *accádde*, it happened; *accaderà*, it will happen.

Italian verbs are varied by *mood*, *tense*, *number*, and *person*.

Mood is a particular form of the verb, which shows the manner in which the action is represented.

There are five moods, viz. the *infinitive*, *indicative*, *conditional*, *imperative* and *conjunctive*.

The *infinitive* expresses the action in an indefinite manner, and without distinction of person or number; as, *scrivere*, to write.

The *indicative* represents the action absolutely, and without any dependence upon any other word; as, *scrivo*, I write.

The *conditional* represents the action with dependence upon a condition; as, *scrivereí*, *se potessi*; I would write, *if I could*.

The *imperative* marks the action in commanding, exhorting, or intreating; as, *scrivi*, write thou; *scrivete*, write ye; *scriviamo*, let us write.

The *conjunctive* represents the action of the verb with dependence upon another verb with which it is connected by a conjunction; as, *bisogna che scriva*; *it is necessary*, that I write.

Each of these moods, except the imperative, has different tenses.

Tense is a distinction of time, which shows when the action is done. Time strictly speaking is either *present*, *past*, or *future*.

The *present* denotes the action doing by an object at the very time in which we are speaking; - as, *cano*, I sing.

The *past* or *preterite* denotes the action done by an object before the time in which we are speaking; as, *cantai*, I sang.

The *future* denotes the action to be done by an object after the time in which we are speaking; as, *cantareò*, I will sing.

The present is indivisible; whatever is not present is preterite, or future.

The preterite is divided into *imperfect*, *perfect-definite*, *perfect-indefinite*, *pluperfect-definite*, and *pluperfect-indefinite*.

The *imperfect* expresses an action done in a time past, but present in respect to another action done in a time also past; as, *cantava*, *quando vói entraste*; I was singing, *when you came in*.

The *perfect-definite* denotes indeterminately an action done in a time completely past ; as, *io cantái iéri* ; I sang *yesterday*.

The *perfect-indefinite* expresses an action done in a time not specified, or in a time specified but not completely past ; as, *io ò cantáto un' ária* ; I have sung *an air* ; *io ò cantáto óggi* ; I have sung *to-day*.

The *pluperfect-definite* denotes an action done before another in a time past ; as, *io ébbi cantáto, quándo giuocái* ; I had sung, *when I played*.

The *pluperfect-indefinite* denotes that an action was already past when another action also past was done ; *io avéva cantáto, quándo finíi di balláre* ; I had sung, *when I finished dancing*.

The future is divided into *indefinite* and *definite*.

The *future-indefinite* denotes an action to be done in a time yet to come ; as, *io canterò*, I will sing.

The *future-definite* denotes that an action not yet done, will be done, when another action not yet done shall be accomplished ; as, *io avrò cantáto, quándo vói verréte* ; I shall have sung, *when you come*.

Each tense contains two numbers ; the *singular* and *plural*.

The number is *singular* when one single object causes the action of the verb ; it is *plural* when two or more objects contribute to the same action ; as, *io párlo*, I speak ; *nói parliámo*, we speak.

Each number has three different persons, which are denoted by the personal pronouns, *io, tu, égli* or *élla*, in the singular ; and *nói, vói, églino* or *élleno*, in the plural ; as, *io védo*, I see ; *tu védi*, thou seest ; *égli* or *élla véde*, he or she sees : *nói vediámo*, we see ; *vói vedéte*, you see ; *églino* or *élleno védono*, they see.

The due distribution of verbs into their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons, is called *conjugation*.

The term *conjugation* is also applied to an assemblage of several verbs forming all their moods, tenses, numbers, and persons according to the same rule.

Such verbs as conform to the rule of a conjugation

are called *regular*; and such as differ in any respect are called *irregular*.

Verbs which are not used in certain tenses, numbers, or persons, are called *defective*.

The **PARTICIPLE** is an inflexion of the verb, which partakes at the same time of the nature of the verb and of the adjective. It partakes of the nature of the verb, because it has its signification, and has reference to time; and it partakes of the nature of the adjective, because, like an adjective, it expresses a quality.

Participles are divided into *present* and *past*.

The *present* participle expresses the action or the quality of an object at the moment in which we speak; as, *amánte*, loving: *un uómo amánte*, a man loving.

The *past* participle expresses the action or quality as perfected or past; as, *amáto*, loved: *un uómo amáto*, a man loved.

These participles are also called *active* and *passive*; because the first expresses always an action, whilst the second expresses a passion: *amánte*, in the above example, means *che áma*, who loves; and *amáto* means *che è amáto*, who is loved.

With the participle is usually classed the **GERUND**, which, like the participle, is an inflexion of the verb, but has nothing in common with the adjective.

Italian participles are varied, like the adjectives, by gender and number.

An **ADVERB** is a word, which serves to modify a verb, an adjective, or another adverb, expressing the manner, quality, or circumstances of its signification.

Adverbs are divided into those of *time*, *place*, *order*, *quantity*, &c.

Adverbs of *time* are those which express some relation of time; as, *iéri*, yesterday; *óggi*, to-day; *dimáni*, to-morrow: *lo vídi iéri*, I saw him yesterday; *viéni óggi*, come to day; *verrò dimáni*, I shall come to-morrow.

Adverbs of *place* serve to denote the situation or the distance of an object ; as, *quí*, here ; *là*, there ; *vicíno*, near ; *lontáno*, far : *sóno quí*, I am here ; *guárda là básso*, look yonder ; *non è vicíno*, it is not near ; *è tróppo lontáno*, it is too far.

Adverbs of *order* serve to express the arrangement of things in regard to one another ; as, *príma*, first ; *póí*, then ; &c. : *príma andrémo in Fráncia, e póí in Itália* ; we will go first to France, and then to Italy.

Adverbs of *quantity* are those, which modify an object in relation to quantity ; as, *più*, more ; *méno*, less ; *quási*, almost : *sóno più di séi*, they are more than six ; *tre ghinée per lo méno*, three guineas at least ; *sóno quási le diécì*, it is almost ten o'clock.

A **PREPOSITION** is a word, which is placed before a noun, a pronoun, or a verb, to show its relation to some preceding word ; as, *in*, in ; *con*, with ; *diétro*, after ; *síno*, till ; &c.

Prepositions have several denominations, viz. of *place*, *order*, *union*, *separation*, &c. according to the several relations they express.

A **CONJUNCTION** is a word, which serves to join sentences together. It sometimes connects only words.

Conjunctions are divided into *copulative*, *augmentative*, *alternative*, *adversative*, &c.

Copulative conjunctions are those, which merely express an idea of connection ; as, *e*, and ; *nè*, nor, neither : *mángio e bévo*, I eat and drink ; *nè bélla, nè buóna*, neither handsome, nor good.

Augmentative conjunctions are those, which, besides the idea of connexion, express the idea of increase or augmentation ; as, *inóltre*, besides ; *di più*, moreover : *inóltre gli dirái*, besides you will tell him ; *di più conviène díre*, moreover it must be said.

Alternative conjunctions mark an alternative or distinction between the things that they connect ; as, *o*, or ; *ovvéro*, or else : *vuóle il bíanco, o il néro?* do you

wish for the white, or the black ? *scegliete quisto, ovvéro quéllo*, choose this, or else that.

Adversative conjunctions connect two propositions, expressing an idea of opposition in the second as respects the first ; as, *però*, but ; *nondiméno*, nevertheless ; &c.

An **INTERJECTION** is a word, which is used to express an emotion or affection of the mind ; as, *ah !*, *ah !* ; *oh !*, *oh !* ; *aimè !*, *oimè !* alas !, &c.

The affections of the mind may be of *grief*, *joy*, *indignation*, *contempt*, &c. which give to the interjections different denominations.

Words form the whole subject of Grammar.

The collection of the letters of which the words of a language are formed, is called the **ALPHABET**.

The art of expressing the sounds of the letters, is called **PRONUNCIATION**.

The art of combining letters into syllables, and syllables into words, is called **ORTHOGRAPHY**.

That part of Grammar which treats of the different sorts of words, and their various modifications, is called **ANALOGY**.

That part which treats of the connexion and right order of words among themselves, is called **SYNTAX**.

OF THE

ITALIAN ALPHABET.

THE Italian Alphabet contains twenty-two letters, viz.

(Fig.)	(Name.)	(Pron.)	(Fig.)	(Name.)	(Pron.)
A	a	<i>ah</i>	M	émme	<i>em'-may</i>
B	bi	<i>bee</i>	N	énne	<i>en'-nay</i>
C	ci	<i>chee</i>	O	o	<i>o</i>
D	di	<i>dee</i>	P	pi	<i>pee</i>
E	e	<i>ay</i>	Q	cu	<i>koo</i>
F	éffe	<i>ef'-fay</i>	R	érre	<i>er'-ray</i>
G	gi	<i>jee</i>	S	ésse	<i>es'-say</i>
H	ácca	<i>ahc'-kah</i>	T	ti	<i>tee</i>
I	i	<i>ee</i>	U	u	<i>oo</i>
J	i lúngo	<i>ee loon'-go</i>	V	vi	<i>vee</i>
L	élle	<i>el'-lay</i>	Z	zéta	<i>dsay'-tah</i>

Of these twenty-two letters, *A, E, I, O, U* are vowels; *B, C, D, F, G, L, M, N, P, Q, R, S, T, V, Z* are consonants; *J* is considered as a vowel; and *H* is a simple sign, having no sound.

PART I.



OF THE

ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION.



CHAPTER I.

Of the Pronunciation of Vowels.

A is pronounced like *a* in the English word *father* ;
as,

<i>a'ra,</i>	<i>ah'-rah,</i>	altar ;
<i>fáma,</i>	<i>fah'-mah,</i>	fame.

E has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close*.

E open is pronounced like *e* in the English word
met ; as,

<i>téma,</i>	<i>tem'-ah,</i>	☉ theme ;
<i>pésca,</i>	<i>pes'-kah,</i>	peach.

E close is pronounced like *ay* in the English word
day ; as,

<i>téma,</i>	<i>tay'-mah,</i>	fear ;
<i>pésca,</i>	<i>pay'-skah,</i>	fishjng.

I is pronounced like *ee* in the English word *sleep* ; as,

<i>divíno,</i>	<i>dee-vee'-no,</i>	divine ;
<i>finíto,</i>	<i>fee-nee'-to,</i>	finished.

O, as well as E, has two sounds, one *open*, the other *close*.

O *open* is pronounced like o in the English word *not* ; as,

<i>vóto</i> ,	<i>vo'-to</i> ,	void ;
<i>Córso</i> ,	<i>kor'-so</i> ,	Corsican.

O *close* is pronounced like o in the English word *note* ; as,

<i>vóto</i> ,	<i>vo'-to</i> ,	vow ;
<i>córso</i> ,	<i>kor'-so</i> ,	course.

U is pronounced like oo in the English word *doom* ; as,

<i>dúro</i> ,	<i>doo'-ro</i> ,	hard ;
<i>tútto</i> ,	<i>toot'-to</i> ,	all.

When these vowels are at the end of words marked with an accent, they have a quick and sharp pronunciation, which very seldom occurs in the English language ; as,

<i>bontà</i> ,	<i>bon-tah'</i> ,	goodness ;
<i>alòè</i> ,	<i>ah-lo,ay'</i> ,	aloes ;
<i>così</i> ,	<i>ko-see'</i> ,	so ;
<i>fald</i> ,	<i>fah-loh'</i> ,	bonfire ;
<i>virtù</i> ,	<i>veer-too'</i> ,	virtue.

CHAPTER II.

Of the Pronunciation of Consonants.

THE consonants, except C, G, S, Z, are pronounced as in English.

C before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced *hard*, like *k* in English ; or like *c* in the English words *cabin*, *code*, *cook* ; as,

<i>cása</i> ,	<i>kah'-sah</i> ,	house ;
<i>cóllo</i> ,	<i>kol'-lo</i> ,	neck ;
<i>cúra</i> ,	<i>koo'-rah</i> ,	care.

Before the vowels *e, i*, it is pronounced *soft*, like *ch* in the English words *cherry*, *chilly* ; as,

<i>céna</i> ,	<i>chay'-nah</i> ,	supper ;
<i>cíbo</i> ,	<i>chee'-bo</i> ,	food.

It takes the *hard* sound if an *h* is placed between it and the vowels *e, i*; as in the syllables *che, chi*; *kay, kee*;

<i>chéto,</i>	<i>kay'-to,</i>	quiet ;
<i>chíno,</i>	<i>kee'-no,</i>	inclined.

And it takes the *soft* sound if an *i* is placed between it and the vowels *a, o, u*; as in *ciá, ció, ciú*; *che, ah', che, o', che, oo'*;

<i>ciálda,</i>	<i>che, ah'-dah,</i>	wafer ;
<i>ciómpo,</i>	<i>che, om'-po,</i>	carder ;
<i>ciúrma,</i>	<i>che, oor'-mah,</i>	crew.

If *cc* come before the vowels *e, i*, the former *c* is pronounced like *t*, the latter retaining its proper sound; as,

<i>accénto,</i>	<i>ah't-chen'-to,</i>	accent ;
<i>accídio,</i>	<i>ah't-chee'-dee-o,</i>	slaughter ;
<i>fáccia,</i>	<i>fah't'-che, ah,</i>	face ;
<i>kúccio,</i>	<i>loot'-che, o,</i>	pike ;
<i>lacciuólo,</i>	<i>lah't-che, oo, o'-lo,</i>	snare.

G before the vowels *a, o, u*, is pronounced *hard*, as in the English words *gamut, gone, good*; as,

<i>gábbia,</i>	<i>gahb'-bee-ah,</i>	cage ;
<i>góla,</i>	<i>go'-lah,</i>	throat ;
<i>gústto,</i>	<i>goo'-sto,</i>	taste.

Before the vowels *e, i*, it is pronounced *soft*, like *j* in the English words *jest, jig*; as,

<i>gélo,</i>	<i>jay'-lo,</i>	frost ;
<i>giro,</i>	<i>jee'-ro,</i>	turn.

It takes the *hard* sound if an *h* is placed between it and the vowels *e, i*; as in *ghe, ghi*; *gay, ghee*;

<i>ghémbo,</i>	<i>gaym'-bo,</i>	crooked ;
<i>ghíro,</i>	<i>ghee'-ro,</i>	dormouse.

And it takes the *soft* sound if an *i* is placed between it and the vowels *a, o, u*; as, in *giá, gió, giú*; *je, ah', je, o', je, oo'*;

<i>giardíno,</i>	<i>je, ahr-dee'-no,</i>	garden ;
<i>giórno,</i>	<i>je, or'-no,</i>	day ;
<i>giúdice,</i>	<i>je, oo'-dee-chay,</i>	judge.

When *gg* come before the vowels *e, i*, the former *g* is pronounced like *d*; as,

<i>oggétto,</i>	<i>od-jet'-to,</i>	object ;
<i>oggi,</i>	<i>od'-jee,</i>	to-day ;
<i>pióggia,</i>	<i>pe,od'-je,ah,</i>	rain ;
<i>rággio,</i>	<i>rahd'-je,o,</i>	ray ;
<i>aggrúnta,</i>	<i>ahd-je,oon'-tah,</i>	addition.

S in the beginning of words ; and in the middle of words, when preceded or followed by another consonant, or when doubled, is pronounced *sharp*, as in the English words *saint, pulse, discount, assembly* ; as,

<i>sánto,</i>	<i>sahn'-to,</i>	saint ;
<i>gélisa,</i>	<i>jel'-sah,</i>	mulberry ;
<i>e'sca,</i>	<i>ay'-skah,</i>	bait ;
<i>léssso,</i>	<i>les'-so,</i>	boiled.

Between two vowels it is generally pronounced *flat*, or *soft*, something like *s* in the English word *easy*, though not so *soft* or similar to *z* ; as,

<i>víso,</i>	<i>vee'-so,</i>	visage ;
<i>spósa,</i>	<i>spo'-sah,</i>	spouse.

It is pronounced *sharp* in the last syllable of all adjectives ending in *óso, ósa* ; as,

<i>virtuóso,</i>	<i>veer-too-o'-so,</i>	virtuous ;
<i>maestósa,</i>	<i>mah-ay-sto'-sah,</i>	majestic.

And in the last syllable of all nouns and adjectives that end in *ése, úso, úsa*, it is pronounced *flat* or *soft*, like *z*, or like *s* in the English word *easy* ; as,

<i>arnése,</i>	<i>ahr-nay'-zay,</i>	harness ;
<i>palése,</i>	<i>pah-lay'-zay,</i>	manifest ;
<i>abúso,</i>	<i>ah-boo'-zo,</i>	abuse ;
<i>delúso,</i>	<i>day-boo'-zo,</i>	deluded ;
<i>músa,</i>	<i>moo'-zah,</i>	muse ;
<i>confúsa,</i>	<i>kon-foo'-zah,</i>	confounded.

Z, likewise, is pronounced sometimes *sharp*, and sometimes *flat* ; but no certain rule can be given respecting it.

It can only be said, that, when *z* is single or in the beginning of words, it is generally pronounced *flat*, or *soft*, like *ds* in the English word *Windsor* ; as,

<i>Lázaro,</i>	<i>lah'-dsah-ro,</i>	Lazarus ;
<i>zodiaco,</i>	<i>dso-dee'-ah-ko,</i>	zodiac.

And when it is double, in the middle of words, it is generally pronounced *sharp*, like *ts* in the English word *benefits* ; as,

<i>fazzolétto,</i>	<i>faht-so-let'-to,</i>	handkerchief ;
<i>bellézza,</i>	<i>bel-let'-sah,</i>	beauty.

It is pronounced *sharp* in all words, in which it is followed by two vowels, the former being an *i* ; or preceded by the consonants *l, n, r* ; as,

<i>grázia,</i>	<i>grah'-tsee-ah,</i>	grace ;
<i>spézie,</i>	<i>spay'-tsee-ay,</i>	species ;
<i>zio,</i>	<i>tsee'-o,</i>	uncle ;
<i>cálza,</i>	<i>kahl'-tsah,</i>	stocking ;
<i>donzélla,</i>	<i>don-tsel'-lah,</i>	damsel ;
<i>scórza,</i>	<i>skor'-tsah,</i>	bark.

In the last syllable of all words ending in *ánza, éenza, ónza*, it is pronounced something like *s* in the English word *safe* ; as,

<i>abbondánza,</i>	<i>ahb-bon-dahn'-sah,</i>	abundance ;
<i>diligénza,</i>	<i>dee-lee-jen'-sah,</i>	diligence ;
<i>lónza,</i>	<i>lan'-sah,</i>	panther.

CHAPTER III.

Of J and H.

J is considered as a vowel in Italian. It is used instead of *ii* in the plural of those nouns which in the singular end in *io* unaccented, as, *témpio*, temple, *spázio*, space ; and it is sounded like *ee* in the English word *fee*, separately pronounced, *fe,e* ; as,

<i>témpj,</i> for <i>témpii,</i>	<i>tem'-pe,e,</i>	temples ;
<i>spáuzj,</i> for <i>spázii,</i>	<i>spah'-tse,e,</i>	spaces.

We very often in books meet with words in which *j* is used instead of *i*, either at the beginning or in the middle of words ; as, in *jéri* instead of *iéri*, yesterday ; *jurídico* instead of *iurídico*, lawful ; *nója* instead

of *nóia* vexation ; *librájo* instead of *libráio*, bookseller ; but this use is not approved by the authors of the *Vocabolário délla Crúscá*.

H, whether in the beginning, or in the middle of words, has no sound in Italian.

It is only used,

1. To distinguish the words,

<i>ho,</i>	<i>o,</i>	} (verb)	} { I have ; thou hast ; he has ; they have ;
<i>háí,</i>	<i>ah'-ee,</i>		
<i>ha,</i>	<i>ah,</i>		
<i>hánno,</i>	<i>ahn'-no,</i>		

from

<i>o,</i>	<i>o,</i>	(conjunction)	or ;
<i>ái,</i>	<i>ah'-ee,</i>	(prep. & article)	to the ;
<i>a,</i>	<i>ah,</i>	(preposition)	to ;
<i>ánnno,</i>	<i>ahn'-no,</i>	(noun)	year.

2. To denote the hard sound of the consonants, *c*, *g*, before the vowels *e*, *i* ; as, in

<i>chérico,</i>	<i>kay'-ree-ko,</i>	clergyman ;
<i>chína,</i>	<i>kee'-nah,</i>	declivity ;
<i>gherbíno,</i>	<i>gayr-bee'-no,</i>	the south-west wind ;
<i>ghígnno,</i>	<i>ghee'-n,yo,</i>	smile .

3. To prolong the sound of the vowels *a*, *e*, *o*, *u*, in the interjections,

<i>Ah!</i>	<i>āh!</i>	ah!
<i>Deh!</i>	<i>dāy!</i>	alas!
<i>Oh!</i>	<i>ō!</i>	oh!
<i>Uh!</i>	<i>ū!</i>	
	&c.	

And in each case *h* has no particular sound ; it is a sign, a mark of distinction, rather than a letter.

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Pronunciation of Syllables.

Ch followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, as in the syllables *chiá, chié, chió, chiú*, is pronounced like *k* in the English word *kind*; *k,yah', k,yay', k,yo', k,yoo'*;

<i>chiáve,</i>	<i>k,yah'-vay,</i>	key;
<i>chiésa,</i>	<i>k,yay'-sah,</i>	church;
<i>chióma,</i>	<i>k,yo'-mah,</i>	head of hair;
<i>chiúsa,</i>	<i>k,yoo'-sah,</i>	hedge.

Gh followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu*, as, in the syllables *ghiá, ghié, ghió, ghiú*, is pronounced like *g* in the English word *guide*; *g,yah', g,yay', g,yo', g,yoo'*;

<i>ghianda,</i>	<i>g,yahn'-dah,</i>	acorn;
<i>ghiéra,</i>	<i>g,yay'-rah,</i>	quiver;
<i>ghiótto,</i>	<i>g,yot'-to,</i>	glutton;
<i>teggghiúzza,</i>	<i>teg-g,yoot'-sah,</i>	baking-pan.

Gl followed by the vowels *á, e, o, u*, is pronounced *hard*, as in the English words *glance, glen, glory, gloomy*; as,

<i>gladiátore,</i>	<i>glah-dee-ah-to'-ray,</i>	gladiator;
<i>gléba,</i>	<i>glay'-bah,</i>	glebe;
<i>glóbo,</i>	<i>glo'-bo,</i>	globe;
<i>glútine,</i>	<i>gloo'-tee-nay,</i>	glue.

Followed by the vowel *i*, it is pronounced *liquid*, like, *ll* in the English word *brilliant*; as,

<i>gli,</i>	<i>l,yee,</i>	the, or to him;
<i>e'gli,</i>	<i>ay'-l,yee,</i>	he;
<i>quégli,</i>	<i>kway'-l,yee,</i>	he that.

It has the same sound in all the words in which *gli* is followed by another vowel; as,

<i>vóglia,</i>	<i>vo'-l,yah,</i>	desire;
<i>móglie,</i>	<i>mo'-l,yay,</i>	wife;
<i>cíglío,</i>	<i>chee'-l,yo,</i>	eye-brow;
<i>figliuólo,</i>	<i>fee-l,yoo,o'-lo,</i>	son.

But, in all the words in which *gli* is followed by a consonant, *gl* is pronounced *hard*, as in the English word *glimmer*; as,

<i>negligénte,</i>	<i>nay-gee-jen'-tay,</i>	negligent;
<i>Anglicáno,</i>	<i>ahn-gee-kah'-no,</i>	Anglican;

It has the same sound in the words,

<i>A'ngli,</i>	<i>ahn'-glee,</i>	Englishmen ;
<i>A'nglia,</i>	<i>ahn'-glee-ah,</i>	England.

Gn in the syllables *gna, gne, gni, gno, gnu,* is pronounced *liquid*, something like *ni* in the English word *onion* ; *n.yah', n.yay', n.yee', n.yo', n.yoo'* ; as,

<i>magágná,</i>	<i>mah-gah'-n.yah,</i>	blemish ;
<i>agnélló,</i>	<i>ah-n,yel'-lo,</i>	lamb ;
<i>incógnító,</i>	<i>een-ko'-n.yee-to,</i>	unknown ;
<i>bisógnó,</i>	<i>bee-so'-n,yo,</i>	need ;
<i>ignúdo,</i>	<i>ee-n,yoo'-do,</i>	naked.

Sc followed by the vowels *a, o, u,* is pronounced *hard*, like *sk* in English ; -or like *sc* in the English words *scant, sconce, scoop* ; as,

<i>scála,</i>	<i>skah'-lah,</i>	ladder ;
<i>scórno,</i>	<i>skor'-no,</i>	scorn ;
<i>scúsa,</i>	<i>skoo'-zah,</i>	excuse.

Followed by the vowels *e, i,* as, in the syllables *sce, sci,* it is pronounced *soft*, like *sh* in the English words *shell, ship* ; *shay', shee'* ;

<i>scéna,</i>	<i>shay'-nah,</i>	scene ;
<i>scímia,</i>	<i>shee'-mee-ah,</i>	ape.

It takes the *hard* sound, if an *h* is put between it and the vowels *e, i,* as in the syllables *sche, schi* ; *skay, skee* ;

<i>schérno,</i>	<i>skayr'-no,</i>	mockery ;
<i>schifo,</i>	<i>skee'-fo,</i>	skiff.

And it takes the *soft* sound if an *i* is put between it and the vowels *a, o, u,* as in the syllables *sciá, sció, sciú* ; *she,ah', she,o', she,oo'* ;

<i>fáscia,</i>	<i>fah'-she,ah,</i>	band ;
<i>sciócco,</i>	<i>she,ok'-ko,</i>	sottish ;
<i>asciútto,</i>	<i>ah-she,oot-to,</i>	dry.

Sch followed by the vowels *ia, ie, io, iu,* as in the syllables *schia, schié, schió, schiú,* is pronounced like *sk* in the English word *sky* ; *sk,yah', sk,yay', sk,yo', sk,yoo'* ;

<i>schívo,</i>	<i>sk,yah'-vo,</i>	slave ;
<i>schiéna,</i>	<i>sk,yay'-nah,</i>	the back ;

<i>schíppo,</i>	<i>sk,yop'-po,</i>	musket ;
<i>schíuma,</i>	<i>sk,yoo'-mah,</i>	froth.

The syllables *guó, gué, guí,* are pronounced like *gwah, gway, gwee* in English ; as,

<i>guáncia,</i>	<i>gwahn'-che,ah,</i>	cheek ;
<i>guérra,</i>	<i>gwayr'-rah,</i>	war ;
<i>guída,</i>	<i>gwee'-dah,</i>	guide.

The syllables *quá, qué, quí, quó,* have the same sound that *kwah', kway', kwee', kwó',* have in English ; as,

<i>quáto,</i>	<i>kwahn'-to,</i>	how much ;
<i>quésto,</i>	<i>kway'-sto,</i>	this ;
<i>quiéte</i>	<i>kwee-ay'-tay,</i>	rest ;
<i>quotidiáno,</i>	<i>kwo-tee-dee-ah'-no,</i>	daily.

General Remarks on the Italian Pronunciation.

ITALIAN words are pronounced exactly as they are written, there being no silent letter except *h*.

Every vowel preserves always its proper sound, independent of the letters which accompany it.

When consonants are doubled, each of them is separately pronounced ; and when two or more vowels come together, they are pronounced distinctly one after another, as they are written ; as,

<i>erróre,</i>	<i>ayr-ro'-ray,</i>	error ;
<i>attrézzi,</i>	<i>ah-tret'-see,</i>	utensils ;
<i>a'ere,</i>	<i>ah',ay-ray,</i>	air ;
<i>Bórea,</i>	<i>bo'-ray,ah,</i>	Boreas ;
<i>fióre,</i>	<i>fe,o'-ray,</i>	flower ;
<i>vói,</i>	<i>vo',ee,</i>	you ;
<i>uómo,</i>	<i>oo,o'-mo,</i>	man ;
<i>miéi,</i>	<i>me,ay',ee,</i>	my, or mine ;
<i>túói,</i>	<i>too,o',ee,</i>	thy, or thine.

If a word ends with a consonant, and the following word begins with a vowel, the consonant of the for-

mer, in the pronunciation, is joined to the vowel or first syllable of the latter ; as,

per amóre, *pe-ramóre,* *pay-rah-mó'-ray,* for love ;
grand' angóscia, *gran-dango'scia,* *grahn-dahn-go'-she.ah,* great anguish.

And when *gli* precedes a word beginning with a vowel, the vowel or first syllable of the latter is joined to *gli*, so as to form a single syllable ; as,

gli onóri, *glio-nóri,* *lyo-no'-ree,* the honours ;
bégli ócchi, *beglióc-chi,* *bay-l,yok'-kee,* beautiful eyes.

Rules for determining when the vowels E, O, are pronounced open or close.

E is pronounced *open,*

1. When it is derived from the latin *e* ; as in
 rége, king ;
 impéro, empire.
2. When it comes after the vowel *i* ; as in
 liève, light ;
 fiéra, a wild beast.
3. At the end of words when is unaccented ; as in
 vóce, voice ;
 góte, cheeks.
4. When it is preceded by an *r* joined to any other consonant ; as in
 créma, cream ;
 gréve, heavy.
5. When it is followed by two different consonants ; as in
 véste, garment ;
 sérto, wreath.
6. When it is followed by *tt* ; as in
 affétto, kindness ;
 perfétto, perfect.

7. In the terminations *ello, émo, ézza, ério, érra, ésimo* ; in their feminine ; and in their plural ; as in

<i>uccello,</i>	bird ;
<i>prémo,</i>	I press ;
<i>senténza,</i>	sentence ;
<i>sério,</i>	serious :
<i>térra,</i>	earth ;
<i>centésimo,</i>	hundredth.

E is close,

1. When it is derived from the latin *i* ; as in

<i>pílo,</i>	hair ;
<i>léttera,</i>	letter.

2. When it is immediately followed by an *n* ; as in

<i>éna,</i>	supper ;
<i>péna,</i>	pain :

Unless it comes after an *i*, as in *achiéna*, the back ; when it is open.

3. At the end of words when it is accented ; as in

<i>mercè,</i> [<i>mercé</i>]	reward ;
<i>temè,</i> [<i>temé</i>]	he feared :

Except in foreign names as *Noè*, Noah ; *Mosè*, Moses ; &c.

4. In *che*, what, and its compounds ; as

<i>perchè,</i> [<i>perché</i>]	why ;
<i>fuorchè,</i> [<i>fuorché</i>]	except.

5. When it is followed by *nn* ; as in

<i>énno,</i>	hint ;
<i>pénna,</i>	pen.

6. In the monosyllables, *me*, me ; *ne*, us ; *se*, himself ; *te*, thee ; &c .

7. In the terminations *éggio, égno, éguo, élo, ésko, éto, ézzo* ; in their feminine ; and in their plural ; as in

<i>passéggio,</i>	a walk ;
<i>sdéugno,</i>	anger ;
<i>siéguo,</i>	I follow ;
<i>vélo,</i>	veil ;
<i>trésko,</i>	I play ;
<i>acéto,</i>	vinegar ;
<i>rézzo,</i>	shade :

Except where, in the termination *eguo*, it is preceded by *r* joined to another consonant, as in *trégua*, truce ; and where, in the termination *eto*, is preceded by *r* joined to another consonant, or by a vowel, as in *decréto*, decree, *quéto*, quiet ; when it is *open*.

O is pronounced *open*,

1. When it is derived from the latin *au* ; as in

<i>óro,</i>	gold ;
<i>tesóro,</i>	treasure.
2. In all words in which the accent falls upon the *o* ; as in

<i>bósko,</i>	wood ;
<i>órto,</i>	garden.
3. At the end of words when it is accented ; as in

<i>amò,</i>	[<i>amó</i>] he loved ;
<i>canterò,</i>	[<i>canteró</i>] I will sing.
4. When it is preceded by *u* ; as in

<i>cuóre,</i>	heart ;
<i>fuóco,</i>	fire.
5. When it is immediately preceded by an *r* joined to another consonant ; as in

<i>próva,</i>	proof ;
<i>tróvo,</i>	I find.
6. When it is followed by two or three consonants, the first being an *s* ; as in

<i>róspo,</i>	toad ;
<i>chióstro,</i>	cloister.
7. In the last syllable but one of those words in which it is followed by a double consonant ; as in

<i>nótte,</i>	night ;
<i>tósse,</i>	cough.
8. In the monosyllables *do*, I give ; *fo*, I do ; *no*, not ; *so*, I know ; *sto*, I stay ; *vo*, I go ; &c.
9. In the terminations *óso*, *ósa*, of nouns, and in their plural ; as in

<i>ripóso,</i>	rest ;
<i>spósa,</i>	spouse.
10. In the terminations *óglío*, *óglia*, *óglie*, and in their plural ; as in

<i>fóglío,</i>	a sheet of paper ;
----------------	--------------------

vóglia, wish ;
cóglie, he gathers.

O is close,

1. When it is derived from Latin the *u* ; as in

<i>cólpa,</i>	sin ;
<i>pólve,</i>	dust.
2. When it is at the end of words and the accent falls upon some other vowel ; as in

<i>ámo,</i> [ámó]	I love ;
<i>pómo,</i> [pómó]	apple.
3. In all words in which it is preceded by an *m* ; as in

<i>mónco,</i>	maimed ;
<i>mólto,</i>	much.
4. When it is followed by *nt* ; as in

<i>mónte,</i>	mountain ;
<i>frónte,</i>	forehead.
5. In monosyllables in *oi* ; as *nói,* we ; *vói,* you ; &c.
 Except *pói,* then ; *nói,* thou tirest ; where *o* is open.
6. In the terminations *óso,* *ósa,* of adjectives, and in their plural ; as in

<i>amoróso,</i>	full of love ;
<i>paurósa,</i>	fearful.
7. In the terminations *óio,* *óia,* and in their plural ; as in

<i>flatóio,</i>	spinning-wheel ;
<i>mangiatóia,</i>	manger.
8. In the terminations *ógno,* *ógna,* and in their plural ; as in

<i>bisógno,</i>	want ;
<i>vergógna,</i>	shame.
9. In the terminations *óno,* *óna,* *óne,* and in their plural ; as in

<i>perdóno,</i>	forgiveness ;
<i>coróna,</i>	crown ;
<i>ragióne,</i>	reason.
10. In the terminations *óro,* *óra,* *óre,* and in their plural ; as in

<i>córo,</i>	choir ;
--------------	---------

<i>adóra,</i>	adores ;
<i>fióre,</i>	flower :

Except when *o* is used instead of the *au* of the Latin, as in *allóro*, laurel, where it is *open*.

There are many words containing *e*, *o*, which are not comprehended in any of the preceding classes ; but they are too various to be reduced to general rules.

It may be observed, however, with regard to the *e*, that when there is in a word an *e close* and the accent falls upon it, if by the addition of one or more syllables to the word, the accent is transferred to one of the following syllables, the *e* which was *close* becomes *open* ; as,

pénso, I think, *pensieróso*, [*pénsieróso*] pensive ;
Césare, Cæsar, *cesáreo*, [*césáreo*] imperial.

And with regard to the *o*, when the accent renders the sound of the *o open*, if, on account of the addition of one or more syllables to the word, the accent passes to one of the following syllables, the *o open* becomes *close* ; as,

órto, garden, *orticélló*, [*órticélló*] little garden ;
bóscó, wood, *boschéttó*, [*bóschétto*] thicket.

A SYNOPTICAL TABLE

OF THE SOUNDS OF THE LETTERS.

(Letters.)	(Sounds.)	(Examples.)	(Pronunciation.)	
<i>A</i>	<i>a</i>	<i>father</i> ;	<i>fáh'-mah,</i>	fame.
<i>E</i>	<i>e</i>	<i>met</i> ;	<i>tém'-ah,</i>	theme.
	<i>ay</i>	<i>day</i> ;	<i>táy'-mah,</i>	fear.
<i>I</i>	<i>ee</i>	<i>sleep</i> ;	<i>dée-veé'-no,</i>	divine.
<i>O</i>	<i>o</i>	<i>not</i> ;	<i>vo'-to,</i>	void.
	<i>o</i>	<i>note</i> ;	<i>vo'-to,</i>	vow.
<i>U</i>	<i>oo</i>	<i>doom</i> ;	<i>doo'-ro,</i>	hard.

<p>C</p> <p>hard</p> <p> </p> <p>like</p> <p>soft</p> <p>ch in cherry, cabin, &c.</p>	<p>ca, co, cu, che, chi,</p> <p>ce, ci, ciá, cib, ciú,</p>	<p>kah; ko; koo; kay; kee;</p> <p>chay; chee; che,ah'; che,o'; che,oo';</p>	<p>cása, cóllo, cúra, chéto, chíno,</p> <p>céna, cibo, ciúlda, ciómpo, ciúrma,</p>	<p>kah'-sah, kol'-lo, koo'-rah, kay'-to, kee'-no,</p> <p>chay'-nah, chee'-bo, che,ah'-dah, che,om'-po, che,oor'-mah,</p>	<p>house; neck; care; quiet; inclined.</p> <p>supper; food; wafer; carder; crew.</p>
<p>CC</p> <p>like t-ch in hatchet.</p>	<p>cce, cci, cciá, cció, cció,</p>	<p>t-chay'; t-chee'; t-che,ah'; t-che,o'; t-che,oo';</p>	<p>accéto, accúdo, fáccia, lúccio, laccuólo,</p>	<p>ah't-chen'-to, ah't-chee'-dee-o, fah't'-che,ah, loot'-che,o, lah't-che,oo,ó'-lo,</p>	<p>accent; slaughter; face; pike; snare.</p>
<p>G</p> <p>hard</p> <p> </p> <p>like</p> <p>g in gamut, &c.</p>	<p>ga, go, gu, ghe, ghi,</p>	<p>gah; go; goo; gay; ghee;</p>	<p>gábbia, góla, gústo, ghémo, ghíro,</p>	<p>gabb'-bee-ah, go'-lah, goo'-sto, gaym'-bo, ghee'-ro,</p>	<p>cage; throat; taste; crooked; dormouse.</p>

<p>G</p> <p>soft</p> <p>like <i>dy</i> in <i>just, just.</i></p>	<p>gá, gí, gíá, gíb, gív,</p>	<p>jay; jee; je,ah'; je,ó; je,oo';</p>	<p>gélo, gíro, gíardíno, gíórno, gíudíce,</p>	<p>jay'-to, jee'-ro, je,ahr-dee'-no, je,or'-no, je,oo'-dee-chay,</p>	<p>frost; turn; garden; day; judge.</p>
<p>GG</p> <p>like <i>dy</i> in <i>adjust.</i></p>	<p>gge, ggi, ggíá, ggíb, ggív,</p>	<p>d-jay'; d-jee'; d-je,ah'; d-je,ó'; d-je,oo';</p>	<p>oggétto, óggi, pióggia, rúggio, aggvínta,</p>	<p>od-jet'-to, od'-jee, pe,od'-je,ah, rahd'-je,ó, ahd'-je,oon'-tah,</p>	<p>object; to-day; rain; ray; addition.</p>
<p>S</p> <p>sharp</p> <p>like</p> <p><i>s</i> in <i>easy, tho</i> <i>not so soft.</i></p> <p><i>s</i> in <i>smile,</i> <i>etc.</i></p> <p>flat</p>	<p>sámo, gélsa, ésca, léso, virtuóso, maestósa,</p>	<p>sahn'-to, jel'-sah, ay'-skah, les'-so, veer-too-ó-so, mah-ay-sto'-sah,</p>	<p>saint; mulberry; bait; boiled; virtuous; majestic.</p>	<p>visage; spouse.</p>	<p>harness; manifest; abuse; deluded; muse; confounded.</p>

<p>Z</p> <p>sharp = flat</p> <p>like</p> <p>as in benefits.</p> <p>as in Windsor.</p> <p>as in safe.</p>	<p>fazzolétto, <i>faht-so-let-to,</i> bellezza, <i>bel-let'-sah,</i> grázia, <i>grah'-tsee-ah,</i> spézie, <i>spay'-tsee-ay,</i> zío, <i>tsee'-o,</i> cáiza, <i>kahl'-tsah,</i> donzélla, <i>don-tsel'-lah,</i> scórza, <i>skor'-tsah,</i></p> <p>Lázaro, <i>lah'-dsah-ro,</i> zodiaco, <i>dso-dee'-ah-ko,</i></p>	<p>handkerchief; beauty; grace; species; uncle; stocking; damsel; bark.</p> <p>Lazarus; zodiac.</p>
<p>J</p> <p>like ee in fee, separately pronounced.</p>	<p>abbondánza, <i>ahb-bon-dahn'-sah,</i> diligenza, <i>dee-leejen'-sah,</i> lónza, <i>lon'-sah,</i></p> <p>témpj, <i>tem'-pe,e,</i> spázj, <i>spah'-tse,e,</i></p>	<p>abundance; diligence; panther.</p> <p>temples; spaces.</p>
<p>CH</p> <p>followed by ta, etc. like k in kind.</p> <p>chiá, <i>k,yah'-vay,</i> chié, <i>k,yay'-sah,</i> chió, <i>k,yo'-mah,</i> chíú, <i>k,yoo'-sah,</i></p>	<p>chiáve, <i>k,yah'-vay,</i> chiésa, <i>k,yay'-sah,</i> chióma, <i>k,yo'-mah,</i> chíúsa, <i>k,yoo'-sah,</i></p>	<p>key; church; head of hair; hedge.</p>

<p>GH</p>	<p>followed by t, &c. like g in guide.</p>	<p><i>ghid,</i> <i>ghie,</i> <i>ghio,</i> <i>ghiu,</i></p>	<p><i>gyah' ;</i> <i>gyay' ;</i> <i>gyo' ;</i> <i>gyoo' ;</i></p>	<p><i>ghianda,</i> <i>ghiera,</i> <i>ghotto,</i> <i>teghhuza,</i> <i>teg-g,yoot'-sah,</i></p>	<p>acorn ; quiver ; glutton ; baking-pan.</p>
<p>GL</p>	<p>hard liquid like gt in glance, &c. in brilliant.</p>	<p><i>gla,</i> <i>gle,</i> <i>glo,</i> <i>glu,</i> <i>gh,</i> <i>gli,</i> <i>glid,</i> <i>glie,</i> <i>glio,</i> <i>glu,</i></p>	<p><i>glah ;</i> <i>glay ;</i> <i>glo ;</i> <i>gloo ;</i> <i>glee ;</i> <i>lyee' ;</i> <i>lyah ;</i> <i>lyay' ;</i> <i>lyo' ;</i> <i>lyoo' ;</i></p>	<p><i>gladiatore,</i> <i>gleba,</i> <i>globo,</i> <i>glutine,</i> <i>negligente,</i> <i>glah-dee-ah-to'-ray,</i> <i>glay-bah,</i> <i>glo'-bo,</i> <i>gloo'-tee-nay,</i> <i>nay-glee-je'-tay,</i></p>	<p>gladiator ; glebe ; globe ; glue ; negligent. he, or to him ; desire ; wife ; eye-brow ; child.</p>
<p>GN</p>	<p>like n in onion.</p>	<p><i>gna,</i> <i>gne,</i> <i>gni,</i> <i>gno,</i> <i>gnu,</i></p>	<p><i>n,yah ;</i> <i>n,yay' ;</i> <i>nyee ;</i> <i>n,yo' ;</i> <i>n,yoo' ;</i></p>	<p><i>magagna,</i> <i>agnello,</i> <i>incognito,</i> <i>bisagna,</i> <i>ignudo,</i></p>	<p>blemish ; lamb ; unknown ; need ; naked.</p>

<p>SC</p> <p>hard</p> <p>soft</p> <p>like</p> <p>like</p> <p>sh in shell, ship, etc.</p>	<p>scā,</p> <p>scō,</p> <p>scū,</p> <p>sche,</p> <p>schī,</p>	<p>skah ;</p> <p>sco ;</p> <p>skoo ;</p> <p>skay ;</p> <p>skee ;</p>	<p>scāla ;</p> <p>scōrno,</p> <p>scūsa,</p> <p>scherno,</p> <p>schīfo,</p>	<p>skah'-lah,</p> <p>skor'-no,</p> <p>skoo'-zah,</p> <p>skayr'-no,</p> <p>skee'-fo,</p>	<p>ladder ;</p> <p>scorn ;</p> <p>excuse ;</p> <p>mockery ;</p> <p>skiff.</p>
	<p>sce,</p> <p>sci,</p> <p>scīa,</p> <p>sciō,</p> <p>sciū,</p>	<p>shay ;</p> <p>shēe ;</p> <p>shē,ah' ;</p> <p>shē,ō ;</p> <p>shē,ōō ;</p>	<p>scēna,</p> <p>scīmīa,</p> <p>fūscīa,</p> <p>sciōcco,</p> <p>asciūto,</p>	<p>shay'-nah,</p> <p>shēe'-mee-ah,</p> <p>fah'-shē,ah,</p> <p>shē,ōk'-ko,</p> <p>ah'-shē,ōōt'-to,</p>	<p>scene ;</p> <p>ape ;</p> <p>band ;</p> <p>sottish ;</p> <p>dry.</p>
<p>SCH</p> <p>followed by ta, &c.</p> <p>like</p> <p>sk in sky.</p>	<p>schīā,</p> <p>schāē,</p> <p>schīō,</p> <p>schūū,</p>	<p>sk,yah' ;</p> <p>sk,yay ;</p> <p>sk,yō' ;</p> <p>sk,yōō' ;</p>	<p>schīāvo,</p> <p>schīēna,</p> <p>schōppō,</p> <p>schūūma,</p>	<p>sk,yah'-vo,</p> <p>sk,yay,'nah,</p> <p>sk,yōp'-po,</p> <p>sk,yōō'-mah,</p>	<p>slave ;</p> <p>the back ;</p> <p>musket ;</p> <p>froth.</p>
	<p>gwāh' ;</p> <p>gwāy ;</p> <p>gwēe' ;</p>	<p>gwāncīa,</p> <p>gwēerra,</p> <p>gwīda,</p>	<p>gwahn'-che,ah,</p> <p>gwāy'-rah,</p> <p>gwēe-dah,</p>	<p>cheek ;</p> <p>war ;</p> <p>guide.</p>	
<p>kwāh' ;</p> <p>kwāy ;</p> <p>kwēe' ;</p> <p>kwō ;</p>	<p>kwāntō,</p> <p>kwēsto,</p> <p>kwēite,</p> <p>kwōtidīāno,</p>	<p>kwahn'-to,</p> <p>kwāy'-sto,</p> <p>kwēe-ay'-tay,</p> <p>kwō-tee-dee-ah'-no,</p>	<p>how much ;</p> <p>this ;</p> <p>rest ;</p> <p>daily.</p>		

ae,	ah, ay ;	áere,	ah, ay-ray,	air ;
ai,	ah, ee	mái,	mah, ee,	never ;
ao,	ah, o ;	Páolo,	pah, o-lo,	Paul ;
au,	ah, oo ;	auróra,	ah, oo-ro'-rah,	aurora ;
ea,	ay, ah ;	Bórea,	bo'-ray, ah,	Boreas ;
ee,	ay, ay ;	veeménte,	vay, ay-men'-tay,	vehement ;
ei,	ay, ee ;	Déi,	day, ee,	Gods ;
eo,	ay, o ;	E'olo,	ay, o-lo,	Eolus ;
eu,	ay, oo ;	Európa,	ay, oo-ro'-pah,	Europe ;
ia,	e, ah ;	fiáto,	fe, ah'-to,	breath ;
ie,	e, ay ;	miéle,	me, ay'-lay,	honey ;
io,	e, o ;	fióre,	fe, o'-ray,	flower ;
iu,	e, oo ;	piúma,	pe, oo' mah,	feather ;
oi,	o, ee ;	vói,	vó, ee,	you ;
ua,	oo, ah ;	guáncia,	goo, ahn'-che, ah [gwahn'-che, ah],	cheek ;
ue,	oo, ay ;	quésto,	koo, ay'-sto [kway'-sto],	this ;
ui,	oo, ee ;	túí,	loo', ee,	him ;
uo,	oo, o ;	uómo,	oo, o'-mo,	man ;
iei,	e, ay, ee ;	miéi,	me, ay', ee,	my, or mine ;
uoi,	oo, o, ee ;	tuói,	too, o', ee,	thy, or thine ;
iuo,	e, oo, o ;	figliuólo,	fee-í, ye, oo, o'-lo	[fee-í, yoo, o'-lo],
iuoi,	e, oo, o, ee ;	laseiuói,	laht-che, oo, o', ee,	child ; snares.

like

Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of E, O.

Pronounced with <i>e open</i> .		Pronounced with <i>e close</i> .	
<i>accétta,</i>	he accepts ;	<i>accétta,</i>	axe ;
<i>béi,</i>	handsome ;	<i>béi,</i>	drink thou ;
<i>Déi,</i>	Gods ;	<i>déi,</i>	of the ;
<i>è [é],</i>	is ;	<i>é,</i>	and ;
<i>ésca,</i>	let him go out ;	<i>ésca,</i>	bait ;
<i>féro,</i>	fierce ;	<i>féro,</i>	they made ;
<i>fésté,</i>	feasts ;	<i>fésté,</i>	you made ;
<i>légge,</i>	he reads ;	<i>légge,</i>	law ;
<i>méle,</i>	honey ;	<i>méle,</i>	apples ;
<i>mésse,</i>	harvest ;	<i>mésse,</i>	masses ;
<i>mézzo,</i>	middle ;	<i>mézzo,</i>	too ripe ;
<i>néi,</i>	moles ;	<i>néi,</i>	in the ;
<i>péra,</i>	let him perish ;	<i>péra,</i>	pear ;
<i>pésca,</i>	peach ;	<i>pésca,</i>	fishing ;
<i>pésco,</i>	peach tree ;	<i>pésco,</i>	I fish ;
<i>pésté,</i>	plague ;	<i>pésté,</i>	tracks ;
<i>séte,</i>	you are ;	<i>séte,</i>	thirst ;
<i>téma,</i>	theme ;	<i>téma,</i>	fear ;
<i>témi,</i>	themes ;	<i>témi,</i>	thou fearest ;

<i>véggia,</i>	cask ;	<i>véggia,</i>	let him see ;
<i>végghio,</i>	an old man ;	<i>véghio,</i>	I am wake ;
<i>véna,</i>	oats ;	<i>véna,</i>	vein ;
<i>vénti,</i>	winds ;	<i>vénti,</i>	twenty.
Pronounced with <i>o</i> open.			
<i>accórre,</i>	to receive ;	<i>accórre,</i>	he runs ;
<i>accórsi (mi),</i>	I perceived ;	<i>accórsi,</i>	I ran ;
<i>bótte,</i>	blows ;	<i>bótte,</i>	pipe ;
<i>cógli,</i>	thou gatherest ;	<i>cógli,</i>	with the ;
<i>cóllo,</i>	neck ;	<i>cóllo,</i>	with the ;
<i>cólto,</i>	gathered ;	<i>cólto,</i>	cultivated ;
<i>Córso,</i>	Corsican ;	<i>córso,</i>	course ;
<i>cósta,</i>	sea-coast ;	<i>cósta,</i>	it costs ;
<i>fósse,</i>	ditches ;	<i>fósse,</i>	that he might be ;
<i>Fóra,</i>	the Bar ;	<i>fóra,</i>	hole ;
<i>indótto,</i>	ignorant ;	<i>indótto,</i>	induced ;
<i>pósta,</i>	post ;	<i>pósta,</i>	place ;
<i>rócca,</i>	fortress ;	<i>rócca,</i>	distaff ;
<i>rógo,</i>	funeral pile ;	<i>rógo,</i>	blackberry bush ;
<i>rósa,</i>	rose ;	<i>rósa,</i>	gnawed ;
<i>scópo,</i>	scope ;	<i>scópo,</i>	I sweep ;

Pronounced with *o* open.

scórsi,
sóno,
tórré,
tórrta,
tóscó,
vólgo,
vólto,
vóto,

I perceived ;
 sound ;
 to take away ;
 twisted ;
 poison ;
 I turn ;
 turned ;
 void ;

Pronounced with *o* close.

scórsi,
sóno,
tórré,
tórrta,
Tóscó,
vólgo,
vólto,
vóto,

I ran over ;
 I am ;
 tower ;
 tart ;
 Tuscan ;
 the vulgar ;
 face ;
 vow.

PART II.

OF THE

ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Accent.

THE *Accent*, in Orthography, is a small sign placed upon the vowels of words to determine their pronunciation.

There are two accents in Italian, the *grave* and the *acute*.

The grave accent is an oblique line drawn from the left to the right (`); and the acute, an oblique line drawn from the right to the left (´).

These accents are generally put on all words in which a letter or syllable has been suppressed; as in *natio*, *virtù*, in which *v*, and *te*, *de*, or *e* are suppressed; from *nativo*, native; *virtute*, *virtude*, or *virtue*, virtue:

And on those words in which the sameness of spelling might produce a confusion of signification; as in *però*, but; *balia*, power; &c. to distinguish them from *pero*, pear-tree; *balia*, nurse; &c.

The grave accent is put,

1. On those nouns ending in *ta*, which in Latin terminate in *tas*, and in English in *ty*; as,

[*castitas*] *castità,* chastity ;
 [*honestas*] *onestà,* honesty.

2. On nouns ending in *u* ; as,

Corfù, Corfu ;
tribù, tribe.

3. On some nouns ending in *i* ; as,

alcalì, alkali ;
crimistì, crimson.

4. On the first and third persons singular of the future of all verbs ; as,

<i>amerò,</i>	I will	{	love ;	<i>amerà,</i>	he will	{	love ;
<i>temerò,</i>			fear ;	<i>temerà,</i>			fear ;
<i>sentirò,</i>			hear ;	<i>sentirà,</i>			hear.

5. On the third person singular of the perfect-definite of all those verbs in which the first person of the same tense terminates with two vowels ; as,

[<i>cantái,</i>	I	{	sang ;	<i>cantò,</i>	he	{	sang ;
[<i>credéi,</i>			believed ;	<i>credè,</i>			believed ;
[<i>dormíi,</i>			slept ;	<i>dormì,</i>			slept.

6. On the words *oibò,* *fy* ; *orsù,* come ; *costì,* so, or thus ; *testè,* just now ; *collì,* *colà,* *costì,* *costà,* there ; and the interjections *aimè,* *oimè,* alas ; &c.

7. On the words *ciò,* this, or that ; *già,* already ; *già,* below ; *più,* more ; *può,* may, or can ; *quà,* *quí,* here ; which are written with a grave accent in order to show that the two vowels are to be pronounced both in one syllable.

8. And on the words

<i>dì,</i>	(noun, or verb)	day, or say thou ;
<i>dà,</i>	} (verb)	{ gives ;
<i>è,</i>		
<i>là,</i>	} (adverb)	there ;
<i>lì,</i>		
<i>sì,</i>	} (affirmative particle, or adverb)	yes, or so ;
<i>nè,</i>		
<i>chè,</i>	(conjunction)	because ;

in which the grave accent is used as a mark of distinction between them, and the words

<i>di,</i>	}	(preposition)	}	of;
<i>da,</i>				from, or by;
<i>e,</i>	}	(conjunction)	}	and;
<i>la,</i>				the, or her;
<i>li,</i>	}	(article, or conjunctive pronoun)	}	the, or them;
<i>si,</i>				one's self;
<i>ne,</i>	}	(relative particle)	}	of it, or of them;
<i>chê,</i>				(relative pronoun) who, which, or that.

Some use the same mark instead of *h* in the words

[<i>ho</i>]	<i>ò,</i>	I have;
[<i>hai</i>]	<i>ài,</i>	thou hast;
[<i>hà</i>]	<i>ò,</i>	he has;
[<i>hanno</i>]	<i>anno,</i>	they have;

and this orthography is much to be preferred.

The acute accent is sometimes put on the *i* of the terminations *ia, io,* of nouns, when the two vowels are pronounced in two distinct syllables; as,

<i>magià,</i>	magic;
<i>desiò,</i>	desire.

These are all the cases in which the accents are used, except that, in some books which teach the principles of the language, the acute accent is employed to facilitate the pronunciation to learners.

CHAPTER II.

Of the Apostrophe.

The *Apostrophe* is a small sign like a comma ('), inserted between two words to mark the elision of a vowel.

The apostrophe is generally used at the end of those words that terminate with a vowel, followed by a word that begins with the same vowel; as,

[<i>buona avventura</i>]	<i>buon' avventura,</i>	good fortune;
[<i>grande edificio</i>]	<i>grand' edificio,</i>	great edifice;

And at the end of words that terminate with a vowel followed by a word that begins with any other vowel, whenever it is de-

cessary, to render the pronunciation more agreeable ; as,
 [questo uómo] quest' uómo, this man ;
 [quella álbero] quell' álbero, that tree :

The Italians write with an apostrophe,

1. The articles *lo*, *la*, the, making an elision of the vowels *o*, *a*, before words beginning with a vowel ; as,
 l' onóre, the honour ;
 l' innocénza, the innocence.

These articles are also sometimes written without an apostrophe ; as,

lo amóre, the love ;
 la energia, the energy :

But when the article *la*, the, is followed by an *a*, it is always written with an apostrophe ; as,
 l' ánima, the soul.

2. The article *gli*, the, when it is followed by an *i* ; as,

gl' ingégni, the geniuses ;
 gl' ídoli, the idols.

3. The article *le*, the, when the following word begins with *e* ; as,

l' eresie, the heresies ;
 l' eménde, the emendations.

Sometimes we write also with an apostrophe the article *il*, the, after a word ending with a vowel, and make an elision of the vowel *i* ; as,

tutto 'l móndo, all the world ;
 sopra 'l pétto, upon the breast.

4. The words *mi*, me ; *ti*, thee ; *ci*, us ; *vi*, you ; *si*, one's self ; *ne*, of it, *or* of them ; *se*, if ; *di*, of ; when they come before a vowel ; as,

m' ingánno, I deceive myself ;
 t' áma, he loves thee ;
 c' inténde, he understands us ; &c.

5. And the words *e'*, *de'*, *a'*, *dá'*, *co'*, *ne'*, *pe'*, *be'*, *se'*, *ve'*, *po'*, *me'*, *vo'*, &c. abbreviated from *ei*, he, or they ; *déi*, of the ; *ái*, to the ; *dái*, from or by the ; *zói*, with the ; *néi*, in the ; *péi*, for or by the ; *béi*, handsome ; *séi*, thou art ; *védi*, see thou ; *póco*, little ; *méglio*, better ; *vóglío*, I wish ; &c.

The apostrophe is never used when the elision of the vowel might produce, in nouns or adjectives, a confusion of gender, number, or relation.

Thus the feminine of all the adjectives of the common gender, like *innocente*, innocent; *errante*, wandering; &c. preceded by the article *la*, the, are written without elision, *la innocente*, *la errante*, to distinguish them from the masculine, *l'innocente* [*lo innocente*], *l'errante* [*lo errante*]:

The plural of those nouns that, in the plural, do not change their termination, as, *effigie*, image; *èstasi*, extacy; which, preceded by the article *le*, the, are written *le effigie*, the images; *le èstasi*, the extacies; to distinguish them from the singular, *l'effigie* [*la effigie*], the image; *l'èstasi* [*la èstasi*], the extacy:

And the preposition *da*, from or by, expressing the relation of derivation, followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, as, *da amore*, from or by love; is written without elision, to distinguish it from the relation of possession, *d'amore* [*di amore*], of love.

Nor is the apostrophe used when the elision of the vowels would change the sound of the consonants; as in *gli*, the, followed by the vowels *a, e, o, u*, where the elision of the *i* would render hard the sound of the *gl**; as in

<i>gl' avári,</i>	} for	{	<i>gli avári,</i>	the misers;
<i>gl' editti,</i>			<i>gli editti,</i>	the edicts;
<i>gl' ócchi,</i>			<i>gli ócchi,</i>	the eyes;
<i>gl' uccélli,</i>			<i>gli uccélli,</i>	the birds.

For the same reason, *ci*, us, and words ending in *ce, ci, ge, gi*, are never written with an apostrophe before the vowels *a, o, u*, since the elision of *e, i*, would give to the consonants a hard sound †; as in

<i>fac' ardente,</i>	} for	{	<i>face ardente,</i>	burning light;
<i>dolc' accenti,</i>			<i>dolci accenti,</i>	sweet accents;
<i>piagg' apriche,</i>			<i>piágge apriche,</i>	sunny places;
<i>pagg' améni,</i>			<i>póggi améni,</i>	pleasant hills:

* See Pronunciation, page 18.

† Ibid, pp. 15, 16.

But these words are written with an apostrophe before the vowels *e, i*; as in

<i>felic' événto,</i>	happy success ;
<i>audac' imprése,</i>	bold enterprises ;
<i>piagg' erbóse,</i>	grassy places ;
<i>freg' illústri,</i>	illustrious honours ;

since the sound of the consonants does not suffer any alteration by the elision of *e, i*.

Words that end with two vowels, as *cámbo*, exchange ; *nébbia*, fog ; though followed by another vowel, do not receive an apostrophe :

Except a few verbs, ending in *io*, as *vóglío*, *dóglío*, which followed by *to, I*, are written

<i>vog' to,</i>	I wish ;
<i>mi dog' to,</i>	I grieve.

The words that are marked with a grave accent, as *felicità*, happiness ; *gioventù*, youth ; &c. do not receive an apostrophe :

Except *perchè*, *benchè*, and all the compounds of *che* ; as,

<i>perch' egli disse,</i>	because he said ;
<i>bench' ella fússe,</i>	although she was ;
<i>ancorch' io voléssi,</i>	although I would.

CHAPTER III.

Of the Reduplication of Consonants.

The Italians write all words as they pronounce them ; and in those words in which a consonant is pronounced with double force, they double the consonant in writing ; as,

<i>obbligo,</i>	obligation ;
<i>faccénda,</i>	business ;
<i>immáagine,</i>	image ;
<i>legittimo,</i>	lawful.

Consonants are generally doubled,

1. In words compounded of one of the particles *a, o, si, se, nè*, and of any other word beginning with a consonant ; as,

[<i>a péna</i>]	<i>appéna,</i>	hardly ;
[<i>o véro</i>]	<i>ovvéro,</i>	or else ;

[<i>sì còme</i>]	<i>siccòme,</i>	as ;
[<i>se béne</i>]	<i>sebbéne,</i>	although ;
[<i>nè méno</i>]	<i>nemméno,</i>	nor yet.

2. In words compounded of a verb ending with a vowel upon which the accent falls, and of a conjunctive pronoun ; as,

[<i>à lo</i>]	<i>állo,</i>	he has it ;
[<i>dirò vi</i>]	<i>diròvvi,</i>	I will tell you.

3. In all words compounded of an adverb, a preposition, or a conjunction, ending with a vowel, and of any other word beginning with a consonant ; as,

[<i>òltre ciò</i>]	<i>oltreccìò,</i>	besides that ;
[<i>là giù</i>]	<i>laggiù,</i>	there below ;
[<i>già mai</i>]	<i>giammái,</i>	never ;
[<i>sòpra nóme</i>]	<i>soprannóme,</i>	surname ;
[<i>colà su</i>]	<i>colassù,</i>	there above.

G is doubled before the vowels *ia, io, iu*, when they make but a single syllable ; as in

<i>pióggia,</i>	rain ;
<i>rúggio,</i>	ray ;
<i>poggiuóla,</i>	hillock :

But when the vowels *ia, io, iu* form two syllables, as in *bugía, lie* ; &c. *g* is not doubled.

This rule is not without exception, since we find *úgio, ease* ; *leggio, reading-desk* ; the former of which is written with a single *g*, and the latter with a double *g*.

In words ending in *gíone, g* is always single ; as,

<i>cagíone,</i>	cause ;
<i>pigíone,</i>	house-rent.

Z is doubled between two vowels ; as in

<i>gázza,</i>	magpie ;
<i>nózze,</i>	nuptials :

But if the second vowel is an *i* followed by another vowel, *z* is not doubled ; as,

<i>grázia,</i>	grace ;
<i>spézie,</i>	species ;
<i>azióne,</i>	action :

Except in *passia, madness* ; which is written with a double *s*.

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Formation of Syllables.

Syllables are formed of vowels and consonants.

Every syllable must contain a vowel. A vowel can receive after it, in the same syllable, no more than one consonant; but may be preceded by one, two, or three; as,

<i>ál-ma,</i>	soul;
<i>nór-mà,</i>	rule;
<i>sfár-zo,</i>	pomp;
<i>strál-cio,</i>	pruning.

A syllable cannot end with any of the consonants *b, d, f, t, v, z,* unless it is followed by a syllable beginning with the same consonant; as,

<i>láb-bro,</i>	lip;
<i>fréd-ão,</i>	cold;
<i>of-fitio,</i>	office;
<i>át-to,</i>	act;
<i>óv-vio,</i>	obvious;
<i>páz-zo,</i>	mad:

Nor with either of the consonants *c, m,* unless they are double, or followed, the former by *q,* and the latter by *b* or *p;* as,

<i>éc-co,</i>	behold;
<i>góm-ma,</i>	gum;
<i>ác-qua,</i>	water;
<i>óm-bra,</i>	shadow;
<i>im-péro,</i>	empire.

A syllable may end with either of the consonants *l, m, n, r;* but when any of these consonants is found in the middle of a word followed by a vowel, it always belongs to the following syllable; as,

<i>mé-la,</i>	apple;
<i>fá-me,</i>	hunger;
<i>grá-no,</i>	grain;
<i>có-ro,</i>	choir.

A syllable cannot begin with two consonants, unless the second be *l*, *n*, or *r*; or the first be *s*; in which last case it may begin even with three; as,

<i>flagéll</i>	scourge;
<i>gnomón</i>	gnomon;
<i>crític</i>	criticism;
<i>spáda</i>	sword;
<i>stráda</i>	street:

And if two consonants are found in the middle of words of which the former is not an *s*, nor the latter an *l*, *n*, or *r*, the former consonant belongs to the preceding syllable, and the latter to the following; as,

<i>ólmo</i>	elm;
<i>árco</i>	bow;
<i>lán-cia</i>	lance.

A syllable cannot begin or end with a double consonant; as *ll*, *mm*, *ss*, &c. because it could not be sounded; and when a double consonant is found in the middle of a word, the first belongs to the preceding syllable, and the second to the following; as,

<i>vél-lo</i>	fleece;
<i>pén-na</i>	pen;
<i>cás-sa</i>	box.

A consonant between two vowels belongs always to the latter vowel; as,

<i>pé-pe</i>	pepper;
<i>fá-to</i>	fate.

The last syllable in all Italian words ends with a vowel;

Except *il*, the; *in*, in; *con*, with; *non*, no; *or* not; *per*, for; *or* by.

CHAPTER V.

Of the Increase of Words.

When the words *in*, *con*, *non*, *per*, are followed by a word beginning with an *s* followed by another consonant (which is called by the Italians an *impure s*), as, *stráda*, *spavénto*, *scríve*, *schérzo*; to avoid the harsh

ness produced by the meeting of these consonants, the second word commonly takes an *i* before it; as,

<i>in istráda,</i>	} instead of	}	<i>in stráda,</i>	in the street;
<i>con ispávénto,</i>			<i>con spávénto,</i>	with fright;
<i>non iscrive,</i>			<i>non scrive,</i>	does not write;
<i>per ischerzo,</i>			<i>per scherzo,</i>	in jest.

The preposition *a*, to; and the conjunctions *e*, and; *o*, or; when followed by a word beginning with a vowel, sometimes take a *d* after them to prevent the hiatus; as,

<i>ad úno ad úno,</i>	one after another;
<i>amóre ed ódia,</i>	love and hatred;
<i>od in ciéla od in térra,</i>	either in heaven or on earth.

And the prepositions *su*, *insù*, upon, followed by another *u*, sometimes take an *r* after them; as,

<i>sur un mónte,</i>	upon a hill;
<i>insur un pálco,</i>	upon a stage.

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Diminution of Words.

The diminution of words is the suppression or retrenchment of the last vowel of syllable of a word.

The Italians retrench the last vowel of words ending in *e*, *b*, preceded by one of the consonants *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, as *sále*, salt; *úomo*, man; *máno*, hand; *cuóre*, heart; and followed by a word beginning with a consonant; as,

<i>sal comúne,</i>	common salt;
<i>úom di córte,</i>	courtier;
<i>man di donna,</i>	lady's hand;
<i>cuór dolénte,</i>	grieving heart.

And they retrench the whole syllable if the vowel *o* is preceded by *ll* or *nn*; as in *fanciúlle*, youth; *annó*, they have; as,

<i>fanci l vezzóso,</i>	handsome youth;
<i>l'án rubáto,</i>	they have robbed him.

The last vowel of the words *úno*, a, -an; *béne*, well;

bello, good ; and the last syllable of the words *bello*, handsome ; *quello*, that ; *grande*, great ; when they are followed by a word beginning with a consonant, are always retrenched ; as,

<i>un fióre,</i>	a flower ;
<i>ben ti sta,</i>	thou deservest it ;
<i>bùn vino,</i>	good wine ;
<i>bel práto,</i>	beautiful meadow ;
<i>quél libro,</i>	that book ;
<i>gran mercáto,</i>	great market ;
<i>gran città,</i>	great city.

The last syllable of the words *Fráte*, Brother [Friar] ; *Sáto*, Saint ; when they are used as titles ; is also retrenched before a consonant ; as,

<i>Fra Giovánni,</i>	Brother John ;
<i>San Páolo,</i>	Saint Paul.

Words terminating in *a* are never retrenched :

Except *Suóra*, Sister, which, when used as a title, loses the *a* ; as,
Suór María, Sister Mary ;
 and *óra*, now, with its compounds, *allóra*, *ancóra*, *talóra*, &c. which, before a consonant, may be retrenched ; as,

<i>or di,</i>	now say ;
<i>all'ór vídi,</i>	then I saw ;
<i>ancór piänge,</i>	he weeps still ;
<i>talór véggia,</i>	sometimes he is awake.

Words ending in *i* are never retrenched :

Except *fuóri*, out, which before a consonant loses its *i* ; as,
fuór dí città, out of town.

Words terminating in *u*, and words accented on the last syllable, are never retrenched.

Words retrenched in the singular are never retrenched in the plural :

Except *grande*, great, which in its plural *grandi*, also, loses the last syllable ; as,

<i>gran pericoli,</i>	great dangers ;
<i>gran ricchése,</i>	great riches.

Words which would be retrenched before a word beginning with a consonant, are always written with an apostrophe before words beginning with a vowel ; as,

<i>buen' olio,</i>	good oil ;
<i>bell' aspétto,</i>	handsome appearance ;
<i>quell' arco,</i>	that bow ;
<i>ben' inciso,</i>	well engraved ;
<i>grand' uomo,</i>	great man ;
<i>Frat' Albérto,</i>	Brother Albert ;
<i>Sant' Andréa,</i>	Saint Andrew :

Except *ino*, a, an ; and *Suora*, Sister ; which never receive an apostrophe ; as,

<i>un amico,</i>	a friend ;
<i>Suor Angélica,</i>	Sister Angelica.

Words are never retrenched, when they are followed by a *z*, or an *impure s* ; when they are at the end of a sentence ; or when they are followed by a comma, or any other stop.

Some compound words, in their composition lose a letter, or a syllable ; as,

[<i>iéri séra</i>]	<i>ierséra,</i>	last evening ;
[<i>sátto térra</i>]	<i>sottérra,</i>	under ground ;
[<i>dománi mattína</i>]	<i>domattína,</i>	to-morrow morning.

Infinitives of verbs joined to a conjunctive pronoun, drop their final *e* ; as,

[<i>amére ci</i>]	<i>amérci,</i>	to love us ;
[<i>vedére lo</i>]	<i>vedérlo,</i>	to see him ;
[<i>sentíre li</i>]	<i>sentírli,</i>	to hear them.

The first and third persons singular, and the third person plural of the imperfect of the indicative of all the verbs, which in the infinitive terminate in *ére*, *tre* ; as, *io te méva, égli teméva, églino temévano ; io sentíva, égli sentíva ; églino sentívano* ; generally drop the *v* ; as,

<i>io</i>	} <i>teméa,</i>	I	} feared ;
<i>égli</i>		he	
<i>églino</i>	<i>teméano,</i>	they	feared ;
<i>io</i>	} <i>sentía,</i>	I	} heard ;
<i>égli</i>		he	
<i>églino</i>	<i>sentíanó</i>	they	heard.

The words *caválli, capélli, fratélli, quèlli, bélli, délli, álli, dálli, nélli, pélli, cólli, súlli, trállí, and quáli, máli,*

táli, may be contracted into *cavái*, *capéi*, *fratái*, *quái*, *béi*, *déi*, *ái*, *dái*, *nái*, *péi*, *cói*, *súi*, *trái*, *quái*, *mái*, *tái*; which, when they are followed by a consonant, it is more elegant to abbreviate, and write with an apostrophe; as,

<i>cavá'</i> , <i>leggiéri</i> ,	light horses;
<i>capé'</i> <i>biánchi</i> ,	white hair;
<i>fraté'</i> <i>carriáli</i> ,	own brothers;
<i>qué'</i> <i>signóri</i> ,	those gentlemen;
<i>be'</i> <i>costúmi</i> ,	good manners;
<i>de'</i> <i>nemíci</i> ,	of the enemies;
<i>a'</i> <i>parénti</i> ,	to the parents;
<i>da'</i> <i>ládri</i> ,	by the robbers;
<i>ne'</i> <i>bisógni</i> ,	in the necessities;
<i>pe'</i> <i>cámpi</i> ,	through the fields;
<i>co'</i> <i>dénti</i> ,	with the teeth;
<i>su'</i> <i>mónti</i> ,	upon the mountains;
<i>tra'</i> <i>bósci</i> ,	amongst the woods;
<i>quá'</i> <i>dolóri</i> ,	what pains;
<i>ma'</i> <i>pensiéri</i> ,	malicious thoughts;
<i>ta'</i> <i>discórsi</i> ,	such discourses.

The words *égli*, he; and *églino*, they; both of them make *éi*, and *e'*.

This is all that needs to be said on the diminution or retrenchment of words; except that the rule respecting the retrenchment of *e*, *o*, when preceded by *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, does not hold in certain instances, where such retrenchment would produce a harsh sound. Thus the words, *cóme*, how; *nóme*, name; *ánimo*, courage; *chiáro*, clear; *ráro*, rare; *néro*, black; *dúro*, hard; *oscúro*, obscure; are never written *com*, *nom*, *ánim*, *chiár*, *ner*, *rar*, *dur*, *oscúr*.

PART III.

OF THE

ITALIAN ANALOGY.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Articles.

THE Italian has three articles, *il*, *lo*, *la*, the. *Il*, *lo*, are used with masculine, and *la*, with feminine nouns.

Il is prefixed to masculine nouns beginning with any consonant, except *z* and *impure s**; and makes *li* or *i* in the plural; as,

il libro, the book;

li libri, }
or *i libri*, } the books.

We meet with *li* frequently in the classics; but modern writers generally use *i* in preference to it.

Lo, which makes *gli* in the plural, is put before masculine nouns beginning with an *impure s*, a *z*, or a vowel; as,

lo sprone, the spur;

lo zucchero, the sugar;

lo amore, }
or *l' amore*, † } the love;

lo ingegno, }
or *l' ingegno*, } the genius;

gli sproni, the spurs;

gli zuccheri, the sugars;

* See Orthogr. page 45.

† Ibid. p. 40.

gli amóri, the loves;
*gl' ingégni,** the geniuses.

La precedes feminine nouns beginning either with a consonant or a vowel; and makes *le* in the plural; as,

<i>la cása,</i>	}	the house;
<i>la ingiúria,</i>		the injury;
or <i>l' ingiúria,†</i>	}	the heresy;
<i>la eresía,</i>		the effigy;
or <i>l' eresía,</i>	}	thè soul;
<i>la effigie,</i>		the houses;
or <i>l' effigie,</i>	}	the injuries;
<i>l' ánima,</i>		the heresies;
<i>le cåse,</i>	}	the effigies;
<i>le ingiúrie,</i>		the souls.
<i>le eresie,</i>	}	
or <i>l' eresie,‡</i>		
<i>le effigie,</i>		
<i>le ánime,</i>		

After the word *Messère*, Master or My lord; and after the preposition *per*, for or by, whether it be followed by *impure s*, *z*, or any other consonant, the article *lo* is always used; as,

Messér lo príncipe,§ My lord the prince;
per lo régno, through the kingdom.

In the plural, however, if the article is followed by any consonant but *s* or *impure s*, we may use indifferently either *gli* or *li*; as,

per gli } *bóschí,* through the woods.
 or *per li* }

The word *Dío*, God, before its plural *Déi*, Gods, takes the article *gli*; as,

gli Déi, the Gods.

When these articles are immediately preceded by the prepositions *di*, of; *a*, to; *da*, from or by; *in*, in; *con*, with; *per*, for or by; *su*, upon; *tra*, amongst, in order to avoid the harshness of sound produced by two monosyllables coming together, they are united, and form a single word.

* See Orthogr. pp. 40, 41.

† Ibid. pp. 40, 41.

‡ Ibid. p. 40.

§ Ibid. p. 46.

Union of the Prepositions di, a, da, in, con, per, su, tra, with the Articles il, lo, la.

IL.

		Singular.	
[di il]		dél,	of the ;
[a il]		al,	to the ;
[da il]		dal,	from or by the :
[in il]		nel,	in the ;
[con il]		col,	with the ;
[per il]		pel,	for or by the ;
[su il]		sul,	upon the ;
[tra il]		tral,	amongst the.

Plural.

[di li, di i]	déli, déi, de',*	of the ;
[a li, a i]	áli, ái, a',	to the ;
[da li, da i]	dáli, dái, da',	from or by the :
[in li, in i]	néli, néi, ne',	in the ;
[con li, con i]	cólli, cói, co',	with the ;
[per li, per i]	pélli, péi, pe',	for or by the ;
[su li, su i]	súlli, súi, su',	upon the ;
[tra li, tra i]	trálli, trái, tra',	amongst the.

LO.

		Singular.	
[di lo]		déllo,	of the ;
[a lo]		állo,	to the ;
[da lo]		dállo,	from or by the :
[in lo]		néllo,	in the ;
[con lo]		cólllo,	with the ;
[per lo]		pélllo,	for or by the ;
[su lo]		súlllo,	upon the ;
[tra lo]		trálllo,	amongst the.*

* See Orthography, pp. 40, 48, 49.

	Plural.	
[di gli]	dégli,	of the ;
[a gli]	ágli,	to the ;
[dagli]	dágli,	from or by the :
[in gli]	négli,	in the ;
[con gli]	cógli,	with the ;
[per gli]	pégli,	for or by the ;
[su gli]	súgli,	upon the ;
[tra gli]	trágli,	amongst the.

LA.

	Singular.	
[di la]	délla,	of the ;
[a la]	álla,	to the ;
[da la]	dálla,	from or by the :
[in la]	nélla,	in the ;
[con la]	cólla,	with the ;
[per la]	pélla,	for or by the ;
[su la]	súlla,	upon the ;
[tra la]	trálla,	amongst the.

	Plural.	
[di le]	délle,	of the ;
[a le]	álle,	to the ;
[da le]	dálle,	from or by the :
[in le]	nélle,	in the ;
[con le]	cólle,	with the ;
[per le]	pélle,	for or by the ;
[su le]	súlle,	upon the ;
[tra le]	trálle,	amongst the.

It must be observed, however, that *pel*, *pélla*, and *pélla* ; *pélli*, *pégli*, and *pélla*, have become obsolete, and *per lo*, *per la*, *per li*, *per gli*, and *per le*, are now used instead of them.

And scrupulous writers before nouns beginning with

z, or *impure s*, use *cóllo*, *trállo*, *cóllo*, *trállo*, *cógli*, *trágli*, *cólle*, *trálle*, and *súgli*, separated; and say, *con lo zúcchero*, with the sugar; *tra lo sdégno*, in the anger; *con la zázzerà*, with the head of hair; *tra la smánia*, in the madness; *con gli zúfoli*, with the flageolets; *tra gli stúdj*, among the studies; *con le zánne*, with the tusks; *tra le stéllé*, among the stars; *su gli scúdi*, upon the shields.

The English indefinite article *a*, *an*, is expressed by the indefinite pronouns *úno* for the masculine, and *úna* for the feminine, which in the plural make *alcúni* for the masculine, and *alcúne* for the feminine; as, *un amico*,* a friend; *un cappéllo*, a hat; *úno zóccolo*, a sandal; *uno spécchio*, a looking-glass; *úna zéba*, a goat; *un' ánatra*,† a duck; *alcúni amíci*, some friends; *alcúni cappélli*, some hats; *alcúni zóccoli*, some sandals; *alcúni spécchi*, some looking-glasses; *alcúne zébe*, some goats; *alcúne ánatre*, some ducks.

And when a noun is taken in a partitive sense the adjectives *some* and *any* are expressed in Italian by the words *del*, *déllo*, *délla*, for the singular; and *délli*, *déi de'*, *dégli*, *délle*, for the plural; as, *del páne*, some or any bread; *déllo spírito*, some or any spirit; *déllo zúcchero*, some or any sugar; *dell' ólio*, some or any oil; *délla cárne*, some or any meat; *dell' ácqua*, some or any water; *de' líbri*, some or any books; *dégli stroz ménti*, some or any instruments; *dégli zecchíni*, some or any sequins; *dégli uccélli*, some or any birds; *délle cíkége*, some or any cherries; *délle aránce*, some or any oranges.

* See Orthography, p. 46, 47.

† Ibid: p: 39.

CHAPTER II.

Of Nouns.

ITALIAN nouns have but five terminations; viz. those of the five vowels, *a, e, i, o, u.*

It is these terminations that show their gender, and number.

Gender.

Nouns ending in *a* are of the feminine gender; as,
cása, house; *pórta,* door; &c.

Except:

1. The proper names of men; as,
Enéa, Æneas; *Andréa,* Andrew; &c.
 2. The names of professions exercised by men; as,
artista, artizan; *scriba,* scrivener;
legista, lawyer; *poéta,* poet; &c.
 3. Nouns of dignity; as,
Pápa, Pope; *dúca,* duke;
monárca, monarch; *gerárca,* high-priest; &c.
 4. Nouns derived from the Greek; as,
anáthema, anathema; *clíma,* climate;
drámma, drama; *enímma,* enigma;
idióma, idiom; *prisma,* prism; &c.
 5. Nouns formed of a verb and a noun; as,
pascibiétola, loggerhead; *santinfizza,* hypocrite; &c.
 6. And the following nouns:
sofà, sofa; *scipa,* sot;
scilóma, long discourse; *cántapa,* hemp;
- which are all of the masculine gender.

The names of sectarians; as,
deísta, deist; *ateísta,* atheist;
Calvinísta, Calvinist; *Giansentísta,* Jansenist; &c.
and the following,

deícida, deicide; *regícida,* regicide;
parrícida, parricide; *fratricída,* fratricide;
regalísta, royalist; *antagónísta,* antagonist; &c.
are of the common gender.

The words *téma,* fear; *pianéta,* cope, are feminine; but *téma,* theme, and *pianéta,* planet, are masculine.

Nouns ending in *i* are feminine ; as, -
crisi, crisis ; *tési*, thesis ; &c.

Except :

1. The proper names of men ; as,
Lutgi, Louis ; *Giovánni*, John ; &c.
2. Nouns of dignity ; as,
mufti, mufti ; *balli*, bailif, *pári*, peer ;
3. Words formed of a verb and a noun in the plural ; as,
guardaportóni, porter ; *cavadénti*, tooth-drawer ;
graffiasánti, hypocrite ; *leccapiátti*, glutton ; &c.
4. The word *dì*, day, and its compounds ; as,
buondì, good-morrow ; *mezzodì*, noon ;
Lunedì, Monday ; *Martedì*, Tuesday ;
Mercoledì, Wednesday ; *Giovedì*, Thursday ;
Venerdì, Friday.
5. And the following,
appigiónasi, (notice of a house *alcali*, alkali ;
barbagiánni, owl ; [to let) ; *brindisi*, toast ;
zánni, merry-andrew ; *ecclissi*, eclipse ;
diési, diesis [in music] ; *ambássi*, ambs-ac e ;
cremisi, crimson ; *soprattieni*, delay ;

which are all of the masculine gender.

The nouns *pári*, equal ; *Génesi*, Genesis ; are of both genders.

Nouns ending in *u* are feminine ; as,
tribù, tribe ; *grù*, crane ; &c.

Except :

1. Proper names of men ; as,
Esau, Esau ; *Ferrau*, Ferragus ; &c.
2. And the following nouns,
Gesù, Jesus ; *Belzebù*, Beelzebub ;
soprappiù, overplus ;

which are masculine.

Nouns ending in *o* are of the masculine gender ;

uómo, man ; *caválla*, horse ; &c.

Except :

1. Proper names of women ; as,
Sáffo, Sappho ; *E'rató*, Erato ;
Atropo, Atropos ; *Aléttó*, Alecto ; &c.
2. And the words,
máno, hand ; *éto*, echo ;

which are feminine.

Nouns ending in *e* are some of them masculine, and some feminine; as,

cârme, m. poem; *côlle*, m. hill;
néve, f. snow; *siépe*, f. hedge; &c.

Those ending in *me* are masculine; as,

râme, copper; *certîme*, combat;
fiûme, river; *costûme*, custom; &c.

Except:

fâme, hunger; *spéme*, hope;
 which are feminine.

Those ending in *re* are masculine; as,

scolâre, scholar; *ostiére*, inn-keeper;
alâre, andiron; *quartîere*, quarter; &c.

Except:

fébbre, fever; *mâdre*, mother;
pôlvère, dust; *tôrre*, tower;
scûre, hatchet;
 which are feminine.

Aère, air; *cârcere*, prison;
cénere, ashes; *lôpre*, hare;
 are of the common gender.

Those ending in *ore* are masculine; as,

fiôre, flower; *cuôre*, heart;
pudôre, modesty; *splendôre*, splendor; &c.

Fôlgore, thunderbolt; *ârbore*, tree; are of the common gender.

Those ending in *nte* are masculine; as,

dénte, tooth; *mônte*, hill;
pônte, bridge; *gigânte*, giant; &c.

Except:

gênte, people; *mênte*, mind;
patênte, patent; *corrênte*, current;
sorgênte, source;
 which are feminine.

Fânte, servant; *frônte*, forehead; *fônte*, fountain;
 are of the common gender.

Those ending in *one* are feminine ; as,
canzóné, song ; *ragióné*, reason ;
confessióne, confession ; *tribolazióne*, tribulation ; &c.

Except :

bastóné, stick ; *mattóné*, brick ;
paragóné, comparison ; *guiderdóné*, reward ; and a few others ;
 which are masculine.

The nouns,

finé, end ; *fúne*, rope ;
sérpe, snake ; *tráve*, beam ;
grégge, flock ;

are of the common gender.

The nouns *óste*, *órdine*, when they mean host, an innkeeper ; and *orde*, a command, are masculine : but when they mean host, an army ; and *order*, arrangement, or a religious order, they are of the common gender.

Márgine, when it means scar, is feminine ; but when it means extremity, is of the common gender.

The noun *dimáne*, when it means to-morrow, is masculine ; and when it signifies the beginning of the day, is feminine.

As to other nouns ending in *e*, no rules can be given, which are not subject to so many exceptions as to render them useless to learners.

Names of countries and cities ending in *a*, *e*, are feminine ; as,

Francia, France ; *Firénze*, Florence ; &c.

Names of countries ending in *u*, are masculine ; as,

Perù, Peru ; &c.

Names of cities ending in *i*, *o*, are of the common gender ; as,

Nápoli, Naples ; *Miláno*, Milan ; &c.

Names of trees are masculine ; as,

ólmo, elm-tree ; *mírto*, myrtle-tree ;

nóce, walnut-tree ; *limóne*, lemon-tree ;

Except:

<i>quercia,</i>	oak-tree ;	<i>élce,</i>	holm-tree
<i>vite,</i>	vine ;	<i>ginéstra,</i>	broom ;

which are feminine.

Names of fruits are feminine ; as,

<i>péra,</i>	pear ;	<i>méla,</i>	apple ;
<i>arúncia,</i>	orange ;	<i>ciriégia,</i>	cherry ; &c.

Except :

<i>pómo,</i>	apple ;	<i>fico,</i>	fig ;
<i>ptno,</i>	pine ;	<i>cédro,</i>	citron ;
<i>dáttero,</i>	date ;	<i>limóne,</i>	lemon ;
<i>pistáchio,</i>	pistache nut ;		

which are masculine.

The names of the vowels *a, e,* of the consonants *f, l, m, n, r, s, z,* and of *h,* are feminine.

The names of the vowels *i, o, u,* and *j,* of the consonants *b, c, d, g, p, q, t, v,* are masculine.

Number.

Nouns feminine ending in *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e* ; as,

<i>ménsa,</i>	table ;	<i>ménse,</i>	tables ;
<i>chióma,</i>	head of hair ;	<i>chióme,</i>	heads of hair ; &c.

Nouns masculine ending in *a,* form their plural by changing *a* into *i* ; as,

<i>poéma,</i>	poem ;	<i>poémi,</i>	poems ;
<i>clíma,</i>	climate ;	<i>clími,</i>	climates ; &c.

Nouns ending in *e, o,* whether feminine or masculine, form their plural by changing *e, o,* into *i* ; as,

<i>mádre, f.</i>	mother ;	<i>mádri,</i>	mothers ;
<i>máno, f.</i>	hand ;	<i>máni,</i>	hands ;
<i>fiúme, m.</i>	river ;	<i>fiúmi,</i>	rivers ;
<i>cappélló, m.</i>	hat ;	<i>cappélli,</i>	hats ; &c.

The noun *móglie,* wife, forms its plural by suppressing the *e* and changing the *e* into *i* ; or what is the same, by suppressing the *e* ; *mógli,* wives. And the nouns *Dio,* God ; *uómo,* man ; *búe,* ox ; *mille,* thousand ; in the plural make *Déi,* Gods ; *uómini,* men ; *buóí,* oxen ; *míla,* thousands.

Nouns ending in *i*, *u*, do not change their termination in the plural ; as,

<i>eclissi</i> ,	eclipse ;	<i>eclissi</i> ,	eclipses ;
<i>éstasi</i> ,	extacy ;	<i>éstasi</i> ,	extacies ;
<i>grù</i> ,	crane ;	<i>grù</i> ,	cranes ;
<i>tribù</i> ,	tribe ;	<i>tribù</i> ,	tribes ; &c.

Nouns ending in *ie*, do not change their termination in the plural ; as,

<i>spécie</i> ,	} sort,	<i>spécie</i> ,	} sorts ;
or <i>spézie</i> ,		or <i>spézie</i> ,	
<i>réquie</i> ,	requiem ;	<i>réquie</i> ,	requiems ;
<i>superficie</i> ,	surface ;	<i>superficie</i> ,	surfaces ;
<i>barbarie</i> ,	barbarity ;	<i>barbarie</i> ,	barbarities ;
<i>effigie</i> ,	effigy ;	<i>effigie</i> ,	effigies ;
<i>série</i> ,	series ;	<i>série</i> ,	series.

Nouns in which a syllable has been suppressed, and likewise nouns accented on the last syllable, do not change their termination ; as,

<i>rè</i> ,	king ;	<i>rè</i> ,	kings ;
<i>piè</i> ,	foot ;	<i>piè</i> ,	feet ;
<i>città</i> ,	city ;	<i>città</i> ,	cities ;
<i>mercè</i> ,	reward ;	<i>mercè</i> ,	rewards ; &c.

but when they are pronounced or written entire, that is, without the suppression of any syllable ; as, *rége*, *piède*, *cittàde*, *mercède*, &c. they change their termination, and make in the plural *régi*, *piédi*, *cittádi*, *mercédi*, &c. according to the general rule.

Nouns ending in *ca*, *ga*, in order to preserve in the plural before the vowels *e*, *i*, the same sound which *c*, *g*, have in the singular before the vowel *a*, take an *h*, in the plural, after the consonants *c*, *g* ; as

<i>mónaca</i> ,	nun ;	<i>mónache</i> ,	nuns ;
<i>vérge</i> ,	rod ;	<i>vérghe</i> ,	rods ;
<i>gerárca</i> ,	high-priest ;	<i>gerárchi</i> ,	high-priests ; &c.

Nouns of two syllables ending in *co*, *go*, also take an *h* in the plural after *c*, *g* ; as,

<i>giuóco</i> ,	sport ;	<i>giuóchi</i> ,	sports ;
<i>luógo</i> ,	place ;	<i>luóghi</i> ,	places ; &c.

Except :

Gréco, Greek ; *pórcó*, hog ; *mágo*, wise man ;
 which in the plural make
Gréci, Greeks ; *pórci*, hogs ; *mági*, wise men.

Nouns in *co*, *go*, of more than two syllables, if preceded by a consonant, take an *h* in the plural ; as,
maniscalcáo, farrier ; *maniscálchi*, farriers ;
albérgo, inn ; *albérgghi*, inns ; &c.

And if they are preceded by a vowel they are written without *h* ; as,
médico, physician ; *médici*, physicians ;
teólogo, theologian ; *teólogi*, theologians ; &c.

Except the following, which in the plural take an *h* ;

<i>beccafico</i> , fig-pecker ;	<i>beccafíchi</i> , fig-peckers ;
<i>tráfíco</i> , trading ;	<i>tráfíchi</i> , tradings ;
<i>stómaco</i> , stomach ;	<i>stómachi</i> , stomachs ;
<i>fármaco</i> , medicine ;	<i>fármachi</i> , medicines ;
<i>fóndaco</i> , warehouse ;	<i>fóndachi</i> , warehouses ;
<i>párroco</i> , parson ;	<i>párrochi</i> , parsons ;
<i>pedagógo</i> , pedagogue ;	<i>pedagóghi</i> , pedagogues ;
<i>monólogo</i> , monologue ;	<i>monóloghi</i> , monologues ;
<i>gastígo</i> , punishment ;	<i>gastíghi</i> , punishments ;
<i>catálogo</i> , catalogue ;	<i>catáloghi</i> , catalogues ;
<i>impíego</i> , employment ;	<i>impíeghi</i> , employments ;
<i>intrígo</i> , intrigue ;	<i>intríghi</i> , intrigues ;
<i>óbbígo</i> , obligation ;	<i>óbbíghi</i> , obligations ;
<i>preságo</i> , diviner ;	<i>presághi</i> , diviners ;
<i>ripíego</i> , expedient ;	<i>ripíeghi</i> , expedients.

Several other nouns in *co*, *go*, are indifferently written with or without the *h* ; as,

<i>mendíco</i> , beggar ;	{	<i>mendíchi</i> ,	{	beggars ;
		or <i>mendíci</i> ,		
<i>salvático</i> , savage ;	{	<i>salvátíchi</i> ,	{	savages ;
		or <i>salvátici</i> ,		
<i>diálogo</i> , dialogue ;	{	<i>diáloghi</i> ,	{	dialogues ;
		or <i>diálogi</i> ,		
<i>dittóngo</i> , diphthong ;	{	<i>dittóngghi</i> ,	{	diphthongs ;
		or <i>dittóngi</i> ,		

Nouns ending in *cia*, *gia*, in one syllable, form their plural by changing *a* into *e*, and suppressing the *i*; as,

<i>lância</i> ,	lance ;	<i>lância</i> ,	lances ;
<i>frância</i> ,	fringe ;	<i>frância</i> ,	fringes ;
<i>frância</i> ,	arrow ;	<i>frância</i> ,	arrows ;
<i>piaggia</i> ,	strand ;	<i>piaggia</i> ,	strands ; &c.

But if *cia*, *gia*, make two distinct syllables, the *i* is never suppressed ; as,

<i>farmácia</i> ,	pharmacy ;	<i>farmácia</i> ,	pharmacies ;
<i>elegía</i> ,	elegy ;	<i>elegía</i> ,	elegies ; &c.

Nouns ending in *cio*, *gio*, in one syllable, form their plural by changing *o* into *i*, and suppressing the *i* that they have in the singular, or what is the same, suppressing only the *o* ; as,

<i>bácio</i> ,	kiss ;	<i>bácio</i> ,	kisses ;
<i>frégio</i> ,	honour ;	<i>frégio</i> ,	honours ;
<i>stáccio</i> ,	sieve ;	<i>stáccio</i> ,	sieves ;
<i>rággio</i> ,	ray ;	<i>rággio</i> ,	rays ; &c.

Nouns ending *chio*, *ghio*, *glío*, also, form their plural by suppressing the *o* ; as,

<i>ócchio</i> ,	eye ;	<i>ócchio</i> ,	eyes ;
<i>múgghio</i> ,	bellowing ;	<i>múgghio</i> ,	bellowings ;
<i>scóglio</i> ,	rock ;	<i>scóglio</i> ,	rocks ; &c.

All other nouns ending in *io*, if *io* is unaccented, and makes but a single syllable, form their plural by changing *io* into *j* ; as,

<i>stúdio</i> ,	study ;	<i>stúdj</i> ,	studies ;
<i>benefizio</i> ,	benefit ;	<i>benefizj</i> ,	benefits ; &c.

But if *io* is accented, and makes two distinct syllables, the plural is formed by changing the *o* of *io* into *i* ; as,

<i>río</i> ,	rivulet ;	<i>ríi</i> ,	rivulets ;
<i>destío</i> ,	desire ;	<i>desíi</i> ,	desires ; &c.

Nouns ending in *áio*, *óio*, form their plural in *ái*, *ói* ; as,

<i>libráio</i> ,	bookseller ;	<i>librái</i> ,	booksellers ;
<i>filatío</i> ,	spinning-wheel ;	<i>filatói</i> ,	spinning-wheels ; &c.

There are some feminine nouns which have two terminations in the singular, and two in the plural ; as,

<i>ála,</i>	}	wing,	<i>ále,</i>	}	wings ;
or <i>ále,</i>			or <i>áli,</i>		
<i>árma,</i>	}	weapon,	<i>árme,</i>	}	weapons ;
or <i>árme,</i>			or <i>ármi,</i>		
<i>dóte,</i>	}	dowry,	<i>dóti,</i>	}	dowries ;
or <i>dóta,</i>			or <i>dóte,</i>		
<i>véste,</i>	}	garment ;	<i>vésti,</i>	}	garments ; &c.
or <i>vésta,</i>			or <i>véste,</i>		

Some masculine nouns have two terminations in the singular, and but one in the plural ; as,

<i>cavalière,</i>	}	knight,	<i>cavaliéri,</i>	}	knights ;
or <i>cavaliéro,</i>					
<i>destriére,</i>	}	horse,	<i>destriéri,</i>	}	horses ;
or <i>destriéro,</i>					
<i>pensiére,</i>	}	thought,	<i>pensiéri,</i>	}	thoughts ;
or <i>pensiéro,</i>					
<i>scoláre,</i>	}	scholar,	<i>scolári,</i>	}	scholars ; &c.
or <i>scoláro,</i>					

Others have a single termination in the singular and two in the plural ; as the following, which in the plural end in *i*, and more elegantly in *a* ;

<i>anéllo,</i>	ring ;	}	<i>anéli,</i>	}	rings ;
			or <i>anélla,</i>		
<i>bráccio,</i>	arm ;	}	<i>brácci,</i>	}	arms ;
			or <i>bráccia,</i>		
<i>budéllo,</i>	bowel ;	}	<i>budéli,</i>	}	bowels ;
			or <i>budélla,</i>		
<i>calcáño,</i>	heel ;	}	<i>calcágni,</i>	}	heels ;
			or <i>calcáña,</i>		
<i>cárra,</i>	car ;	}	<i>cárra,</i>	}	cars ;
			or <i>cárra,</i>		
<i>castélllo,</i>	castle ;	}	<i>castéli,</i>	}	castles ;
			or <i>castélla,</i>		
<i>cérchio,</i>	circle ;	}	<i>cérchi,</i>	}	circles ;
			or <i>cérchia,</i>		
<i>cervéllo,</i>	brain ;	}	<i>cervéli,</i>	}	brains ;
			or <i>cervélla,</i>		

<i>éiglio,</i>	eyebrow ;	} <i>cigli,</i> or <i>ciglia,</i>	} eyebrows ;
<i>coltéllo,</i>	knife ;		
<i>comanda- ménto,</i>	command- ment ;	} <i>comandamén- ti,</i> or <i>comandamén- ta,</i>	} command- ments ;
<i>éórno,</i>	horn ;		
<i>cuóio,</i>	hide ;	} <i>cuóí,</i> or <i>cuóia,</i>	} hides ;
<i>demónio,</i>	dæmon ;		
<i>ditéllo,</i>	armpit ;	} <i>ditéllo,</i> or <i>ditella,</i>	} armpits ;
<i>dito,</i>	finger ;		
<i>fílo,</i>	thread ;	} <i>fíli,</i> or <i>fíla,</i>	} threads ;
<i>fondaménto,</i>	foundation ;		
<i>framménto,</i>	fragment ;	} <i>framménti,</i> or <i>framménta,</i>	} fragments ;
<i>fúso,</i>	spindle ;		
<i>ginóccchio,</i>	knee ;	} <i>ginóccchi,</i> or <i>ginóccchia,</i>	} knees ;
<i>grído,</i>	cry ;		
<i>gúscio,</i>	shell ;	} <i>gúsci,</i> or <i>gúscia,</i>	} shells ;
<i>lábbro,</i>	lip ;		
<i>lenzuólo,</i>	the sheet of a bed ;	} <i>lenzuóli,</i> or <i>lenzuóla,</i>	} the sheets of a bed ;
<i>létto,</i>	bed ;		
<i>mulíno,</i>	mill ;	} <i>mulíni,</i> or <i>mulína,</i>	} mills ;

<i>múro,</i>	wall ;	{	<i>múri,</i>	{	walls ;
			or <i>múra,</i>		
<i>orécchio,</i>	ear ;	{	<i>orécchi,</i>	{	ears ;
			or <i>orécchia,</i>		
<i>paccáto,</i>	sin ;	{	<i>peccáti,</i>	{	sins ;
			or <i>peccáta,</i>		
<i>pómo,</i>	apple ;	{	<i>pómi,</i>	{	apples ;
			or <i>póma,</i>		
<i>púgno,</i>	fist ;	{	<i>púgni,</i>	{	fists ;
			or <i>púgna,</i>		
<i>quadrélló,</i>	arrow ;	{	<i>quadrélli,</i>	{	arrows ;
			or <i>quadrélla,</i>		
<i>rúbbio,</i>	—	{	<i>rúbbj,</i>	{	(a kind of
			or <i>rúbbia,</i>		measure
					for corn) ;
<i>sáceo,</i>	bag ;	{	<i>sácchi,</i>	{	bags ;
			or <i>sácca,</i>		
<i>strído,</i>	shriek ;	{	<i>strídi,</i>	{	shrieks ;
			or <i>strída,</i>		
<i>tíno,</i>	vat ;	{	<i>tíni,</i>	{	vats ;
			or <i>tína,</i>		
<i>vestigio,</i>	footstep ;	{	<i>vestigi,</i>	{	footsteps ;
			or <i>vestigia,</i>		
<i>vestiménto,</i>	garment ;	{	<i>vestiménti,</i>	{	garments ;
			or <i>vestiménta,</i>		
<i>úrlo,</i>	howl ;	{	<i>úrli,</i>	{	howls.
			or <i>úrta,</i>		

Coltéllo, comandaménto, demónio, framménto, létto, multno, tíno, are more commonly used with the termination in *i*.

When these nouns take the termination in *a* in the plural, they become feminine, and receive the article *le* before them.

The following have only the termination in *a* in the plural, and become feminine like the preceding,

centináio, hundred ; *centináia,* hundreds ;
migliáio, thousand ; *migliáia,* thousands ;
miglio, mile ; *miglia,* miles ;
móggio, — *móggia,* (a sort of measure of
corn or of land) ;

<i>páio</i> ,	pair ;	<i>páia</i> ,	pairs ;
<i>stáio</i> ,	bushel ;	<i>stáia</i> ,	bushels ;
<i>uóvo</i> ,	egg ;	<i>uóva</i> ,	eggs.

Riso, laughter, *membro*, limb, or member of the human body, form their plural in *i* and *a*: *rísi*, *rísa*, laughter; *mémbri*, *mémbrá*, limbs: but *ríso*, rice, *mémbró*, member of a corporation or political body, form their plural in *i* only; *rísi*, rice; *mémbri*, members.

Gésto, exploit; *frútto*, the fruit of a tree; *légno*, fire-wood; form their plural in *i* and *a*; *géstí*, *géstá*, exploits; *frútti*, *frúttá*, fruits; *légni*, *légná*, wood: but *géstó*, gesture; *frúttó*, production of the earth, income; *légno*, the hard substance of a tree, form their plural in *i* only; *géstí*, gestures; *frútti*, produce; *légni*, billets of wood.

Ossó, bone, has a treble termination in the plural, making *óssi*, *ósse*, and *óssa*, bones.

The nouns *collélla*, *orécchio*, *vestigio*, *géstó*, *frúttó*, and *légno*, also have a third termination in *e* in the plural; but this comes rather from the feminine termination in *a* which also they have in the singular; as,

<i>collélla</i> ,	knife ;	<i>collélla</i> ,	knives ;
<i>orécchia</i> ,	ear ;	<i>orécchie</i> ,	ears ;
<i>vestigia</i> ,	footstep ;	<i>vestigie</i> ,	footsteps ;
<i>géstá</i> ,	exploit ;	<i>gésté</i> ,	exploits ;
<i>frúttá</i> ,	fruit ;	<i>frútté</i> ,	fruits ;
<i>légná</i> ,	wood ;	<i>légné</i> ,	wood.

Finally there are in Italian, as well as in all other languages, some nouns which have only the singular number; as, *próle*, generation; *progénie*, progeny; *stírpe*, race; *máne*, morning; *miéle*, honey; &c. and others which have only the plural; as, *lári*, household gods; *annáli*, annals; *calzóni*, breeches; *vánni*, wings; *fúrbici*, scissars; *nózze*, nuptials; *eséquie*, exequies; *réni*, the reins; *mólle* or *mólli*, tongs; *spézie* or *spézi*, spices; &c.

Case.

The several relations of the Italian nouns are expressed, not by change of termination, but by the pre-

positions, *di*, *of*, for the genitive or *relation of possession* ; *a*, *to*, for the dative or *relation of attribution* ; and *da*, *from or by*, for the ablative or *relation of derivation*.

The *subjective* and *objective* are distinguished by the place they occupy in the sentence.

Proper nouns are generally declined or *varied* with the prepositions only ; common nouns with the prepositions and articles.

Variation of Proper Nouns.

Variation of a masculine proper noun beginning^a with a consonant.

Subjective,		<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar ;</i>
Relation of	{	Possession, <i>di</i>	<i>Césare,</i> of <i>Cæsar ;</i>
		Attribution, <i>a</i>	<i>Césare,</i> to <i>Cæsar ;</i>
		Derivation, <i>da</i>	<i>Césare,</i> from <i>or by</i> <i>Cæsar ;</i>
Objective,		<i>Césare,</i>	<i>Cæsar.</i>

Variation of a masculine proper noun beginning with a vowel.

Subjective,			<i>António,</i> Anthony ;		
Relation of	{	Possession, {	<i>di</i> } <i>António,</i> of Antho-		
				Attribution, {	<i>a</i> } <i>António,</i> to Antho-
Objective,			<i>António,</i> Anthony.		

Variation of a feminine proper noun beginning with a consonant.

Subjective,		<i>Róma,</i>	<i>Rome ;</i>
Relation of	{	Possession, <i>di</i>	<i>Róma,</i> of <i>Rome ;</i>
		Attribution, <i>a</i>	<i>Róma,</i> to <i>Rome ;</i>
		Derivation, <i>da</i>	<i>Róma,</i> from <i>or by</i> <i>Rome ;</i>
Objective,		<i>Róma,</i>	<i>Rome.</i>

* See Orthography, p. 40.

† Ibid. p. 46.

Variation of a feminine proper noun beginning with a vowel.

Subjective,		<i>Itália</i> , Italy;
Relation of	{ Possession, { or <i>dí</i> } { Attribution, { or <i>a</i> } { Derivation, <i>da</i>	<i>Itália</i> , of Italy;
		<i>Itália</i> , to Italy;
		<i>Itália</i> , from <i>or</i> by [Italy];
Objective,		<i>Itália</i> , Italy.

• Variation of the proper noun *Dío*, God.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>Dío</i> , God;
Relation of	{ Possession, <i>dí</i> { Attribution, <i>a</i> { Derivation, <i>da</i>	<i>Dío</i> , of God;
		<i>Dío</i> , to God;
		<i>Dío</i> , from <i>or</i> by God;
Objective,	<i>Dío</i> ,	God.

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>gli Déi</i> , the Gods;
Relation of	{ Possession, <i>déglí</i> { Attribution, <i>áglí</i> { Derivation, <i>dáglí</i>	<i>Déi</i> , of the Gods;
		<i>Déi</i> , to the Gods;
		<i>Déi</i> , from <i>or</i> by the [Gods];
Objective,	<i>gli Déi</i> ,	the Gods.

Variation of Common Nouns.

Variation of a masculine common noun beginning with a consonant.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>il libro</i> , the book;
Relation of	{ Possession, <i>del</i> { Attribution, <i>al</i> { Derivation, <i>dal</i>	<i>libro</i> , of the book;
		<i>libro</i> , to the book;
		<i>libro</i> , from <i>or</i> by the [book];
Objective,	<i>il libro</i> ,	the book.

Plural.

Subjective,	{ <i>li</i> } or { <i>i</i> }	<i>libri</i> , the books;
-------------	----------------------------------	---------------------------

Relation of	}	Possession,	{ <i>délli</i> <i>déi</i> or <i>de'</i>	} <i>libri</i> ,	of the books ;		
		Attribution,	{ <i>áli</i> <i>ái</i> or <i>a'</i>			} <i>libri</i> ,	to the books ;
		Derivation,	{ <i>dállli</i> <i>dúi</i> or <i>da'</i>				
Objective,		{ <i>li</i> or <i>i</i>	} <i>libri</i> ,	the books.			

Variation of a masculine common noun beginning with *impure s*.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>lo spróne</i> ,	the spur ;	
Relation of	}	Possession,	<i>délo spróne</i> ,	of the spur ;
		Attribution,	<i>álo spróne</i> ,	to the spur ;
		Derivation,	<i>dálo spróne</i> ,	from <i>or</i> by the [spur ;
Objective,		<i>lo spróne</i> ,	the spur.	

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>gli spróni</i> ,	the spurs ;	
Relation of	}	Possession,	<i>dégli spróni</i> ,	of the spurs ;
		Attribution,	<i>ágli spróni</i> ,	to the spurs ;
		Derivation,	<i>dágli spróni</i> ,	from <i>or</i> by the [spurs ;
Objective,		<i>gli spróni</i> ,	the spurs.	

Variation of a masculine common noun beginning with *z*.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>lo zúcchero</i> ,	the sugar ;	
Relation of	}	Possession,	<i>délo zúcchero</i> ,	of the sugar ;
		Attribution,	<i>álo zúcchero</i> ,	to the sugar ;
		Derivation,	<i>dálo zúcchero</i> ,	from <i>or</i> by the [sugar ;
Objective,		<i>lo zúcchero</i> ,	the sugar.	

		Plural.	
Subjective,		<i>gli zúcceri,</i>	the sugars ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>dégli zúcceri,</i> of the sugars ;
		Attribution,	<i>ágli zúcceri,</i> to the sugars ;
		Derivation,	<i>dágli zúcceri,</i> from <i>or</i> by the [sugars ;
Objective,		<i>gli zúcceri,</i>	the sugars.

Variation of a masculine common noun beginning with a vowel.

		Singular.	
Subjective,		<i>lo</i> or <i>p'</i>	<i>amóre,</i> the love ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>délló</i> or <i>dell'</i>
		Attribution,	<i>állo</i> or <i>all'</i>
		Derivation,	<i>dállo</i> or <i>dall'</i>
Objective,		<i>lo</i> or <i>p'</i>	<i>amóre,</i> the love. [the love ;

		Plural.	
Subjective,		<i>gli amóri,</i>	the loves ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>dégli amóri,</i> of the loves ;
		Attribution,	<i>ágli amóri,</i> to the loves ;
		Derivation,	<i>dágli amóri,</i> from <i>or</i> by the [loves ;
Objective,		<i>gli amóri,</i>	the loves.

Variation of a masculine common noun beginning with *i*.

		Singular.	
Subjective,		<i>lo</i> or <i>p'</i>	<i>ingégnó,</i> the gen- [ius ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>délló</i> or <i>dell'</i>
		Attribution,	<i>állo</i> or <i>all'</i>
			<i>ingégnó,</i> to the gen- [ius ;

Relation of Derivation, { *dállo* } *ingéno*, from or by
 or *dall'* } [the genius;
 Objective, { *lo* } *ingéno*, the genius.
 or *p'* }

Plural.

Subjective, *g^p ingégni*, the geniuses;
 Relation of { Possession, *deg^p ingégni*, of the geniuses;
 Attribution, *ag^p ingégni*, to the geniuses;
 Derivation, *dag^p ingégni*, from or by the
 [geniuses;
 Objective, *g^p ingégni*, the geniuses.

Variation of a feminine common noun beginning with a consonant.

Singular.

Subjective, *la cása*, the house;
 Relation of { Possession, *délla cása*, of the house;
 Attribution, *álla cása*, to the house;
 Derivation, *dálla cása*, from or by the
 [house;
 Objective, *la cása*, the house.

Plural.

Subjective, *le cáse*, the houses;
 Relation of { Possession, *délle cáse*, of the houses;
 Attribution, *álle cáse*, to the houses;
 Derivation, *dálle cáse*, from or by the
 [houses;
 Objective, *le cáse*, the houses.

Variation of a feminine common noun beginning with a vowel.

Singular.

Subjective, { *la* } *ingiúria*, the inju-
 { or *l'* } [ry;

Relation of	{ Possession, } { Attribution, } { Derivation, }	{ <i>délla</i> } { or <i>dell'</i> }	<i>ingiúria</i> , of the in- [jury ; <i>ingiúria</i> , to the in- [jury ; <i>ingiúria</i> , from or by [the injury ; <i>ingiúria</i> , the injury.
		{ <i>álla</i> } { or <i>all'</i> }	
		{ <i>dállla</i> } { or <i>dall'</i> }	
Objective,		{ <i>la</i> } { or <i>l'</i> }	

Plural.

Subjective,			<i>le ingiúrie</i> , the injuries ;
Relation of	{ Possession, } { Attribution, } { Derivation, }	{ <i>délla</i> } { or <i>dell'</i> }	<i>ingiúrie</i> , of the injuries ; <i>ingiúrie</i> , to the injuries ; <i>ingiúrie</i> , from or by the [injuries ;
		{ <i>álla</i> } { or <i>all'</i> }	
		{ <i>dállla</i> } { or <i>dall'</i> }	
Objective,			<i>le ingiúrie</i> , the injuries.

Variation of a feminine common noun beginning with *e*.

Singular.

Subjective,		{ <i>la</i> } { or <i>l'</i> }	<i>eresía</i> , the heresy ;
Relation of	{ Possession, } { Attribution, } { Derivation, }	{ <i>délla</i> } { or <i>dell'</i> }	<i>eresía</i> , of the heresy ; <i>eresía</i> , to the heresy, <i>eresía</i> , from or by [the heresy ;
		{ <i>álla</i> } { or <i>all'</i> }	
		{ <i>dállla</i> } { or <i>dall'</i> }	
Objective,		{ <i>la</i> } { or <i>l'</i> }	<i>eresía</i> , the heresy.

Plural.

Subjective,		{ <i>le</i> } { or <i>l'</i> }	<i>eresíe</i> , the heresies ;
Relation of	{ Possession, } { Attribution, } { Derivation, }	{ <i>délla</i> } { or <i>dell'</i> }	<i>eresíe</i> , of the here- [sies ; <i>eresíe</i> , to the here- [sies ; <i>eresíe</i> , from or by [the heresies ;
		{ <i>álla</i> } { or <i>all'</i> }	
		{ <i>dállla</i> } { or <i>dall'</i> }	

Objective, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{le} \\ \text{or } \textit{l'}$

Variation of a feminine common noun, beginning with *e*, which in the plural does not change its termination.

Singular.

Subjective, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{la} \\ \text{or } \textit{l'}
 Relation of $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Possession, } \left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{della} \\ \text{or } \textit{dell'}
 Objective, $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{la} \\ \text{or } \textit{l'}$$$

Plural.

Subjective, $\textit{le effigie, the effigies ;}$
 Relation of $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Possession, } \textit{delle effigie, of the effigies ;} \\ \text{Attribution, } \textit{alle effigie, to the effigies ;} \\ \text{Derivation, } \textit{dalle effigie, from or by the} \\ \text{[effigies ;}
 Objective, $\textit{le effigie, the effigies.}$$

Variation of a feminine common noun, beginning with *a*.

Singular.

Subjective, $\textit{l' anima, the soul ;}$
 Relation of $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Possession, } \textit{dell' anima, of the soul ;} \\ \text{Attribution, } \textit{all' anima, to the soul ;} \\ \text{Derivation, } \textit{dall' anima, from or by the} \\ \text{[soul ;}
 Objective, $\textit{l' anima, the soul.}$$

Plural.

Subjective, $\textit{le anime, the souls ;}$
 Relation of $\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \text{Possession, } \textit{delle anime, of the souls ;} \\ \text{Attribution, } \textit{alle anime, to the souls ;} \\ \text{Derivation, } \textit{dalle anime, from or by the} \\ \text{souls ;}
 Objective, $\textit{le anime, the souls.}$$

Variation of Common Nouns taken in an indefinite sense.

Variation of a masculine common noun, beginning with a vowel.

Singular.

Subjective, *un amico*, a friend ;
 Relation of { Possession, { *di un* } *amico*, of a friend ;
 { or *d' un* }
 { Attribution, { *a un* } *amico*, to a friend ;
 { or *ad un* }
 { Derivation, *da un amico*, from or by
 [a friend ;
 Objective, *un amico*, a friend.

Plural.

Subjective, *alcuni amici*, some
 [friends ;
 Relation of { Possession, { *di alcuni* } *amici*, of some
 { or *d' alcuni* } [friends ;
 { Attribution, { *a alcuni* } *amici*, to some
 { or *ad alcuni* } [friends ;
 { Derivation, *da alcuni amici*, from or
 by some friends ;
 Objective, *alcuni amici*, some
 [friends.

Variation of a masculine common noun, beginning with a consonant.

Singular.

Subjective, *un cappello*, a hat ;
 Relation of { Possession, { *di un* } *cappello*, of a hat ;
 { or *d' un* }
 { Attribution, { *a un* } *cappello*, to a hat ;
 { or *ad un* }
 { Derivation, *da un cappello*, from or
 [by a hat ;
 Objective, *un cappello*, a hat.

Plural.

Subjective, *alcuni cappelli*, some hats ;

Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di alcúni</i> or <i>d' alcúni</i> } Attribution, { <i>a alcúni</i> or <i>ad alcúni</i> } Derivation, <i>da alcúni</i>	} <i>cappélli</i> , of [some hats ; <i>cappélli</i> , to [some hats ; <i>cappélli</i> , from [or by some hats ; <i>alcúni cappélli</i> , some [hats.	
			Objective,

Variation of a masculine common noun, beginning with *z*.

Singular.

Subjective,	<i>úno zóccolo</i> , a sandal ;		
Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di úno</i> or <i>d' úno</i> } Attribution, { <i>a úno</i> or <i>ad úno</i> } Derivation, <i>da úno</i>	} <i>zóccolo</i> , of a [sandal ; <i>zóccolo</i> , to a [sandal ; <i>zóccolo</i> , from or [by a sandal ; <i>úno zóccolo</i> , a sandal.	
			Objective,

Plural.

Subjective,	<i>alcúni zóccoli</i> , some [sandals ;		
Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di alcúni</i> or <i>d' alcúni</i> } Attribution, { <i>a alcúni</i> or <i>ad alcúni</i> } Derivation, <i>da alcúni</i>	} <i>zóccoli</i> , of some [sandals ; <i>zóccoli</i> , to some [sandals ; <i>zóccoli</i> , from or [by some sandals ; <i>alcúni zóccoli</i> , some [sandals.	
			Objective,

Variation of a masculine common noun, beginning with *impure s*.

Singular.

Subjective,	<i>úno spécchio</i> , a look- [ing-glass ;
-------------	---

Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di úno</i> } { Attribution, { or <i>d' úno</i> } { or <i>a úno</i> } { or <i>ad úno</i> } Derivation, <i>da úno</i>	<i>spécchio</i> , of a [looking-glass ; <i>spécchio</i> , to a [looking-glass ; <i>spécchio</i> , from or [by a looking-glass ; <i>úno spécchio</i> , a look- [ing-glass.	
			Objective,

Plural.

Subjective,	<i>alcúni spécchi</i> , some [looking-glasses ;		
Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di alcúni</i> } { Attribution, { or <i>d' alcúni</i> } { or <i>a alcúni</i> } { or <i>ad alcúni</i> } Derivation, <i>da alcúni</i>	<i>spécchi</i> , of some looking-glasses ; <i>spécchi</i> , to some looking-glasses ; <i>spécchi</i> , from or [by some looking-glasses ; <i>alcúni spécchi</i> , some [looking-glasses.	
			Objective,

Variation of a feminine common noun, beginning with a vowel.

Singular.

Subjective,	{ <i>úna</i> } or { <i>un'</i> }	<i>arância</i> , an [orange ;	
Relation of	{ Possession, { <i>di úna</i> } { or <i>di un'</i> } { <i>d' úna</i> } { or <i>d' un'</i> } Attribution, { <i>a úna</i> } { or <i>a un'</i> } { <i>ad úna</i> } { or <i>ad un'</i> } Derivation, { <i>da úna</i> } { or <i>da un'</i> }	<i>arância</i> , of an [orange ; <i>arância</i> , to an [orange ; <i>arância</i> , from or [by an orange ; <i>arância</i> , an [orange.	
			Objective,

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>alcúne</i>	<i>arúnce</i> ,	some			
				[oranges ;			
Relation of	{ Possession, { Attribution, { Derivation,	{ <i>di alcúne</i> or <i>d' alcúne</i> <i>a alcúne</i> or <i>ad alcúne</i>	{ <i>arúnce</i> , of some [oranges ; <i>arúnce</i> , to some [oranges ; <i>arúnce</i> , from or [by some oranges ;	some [oranges.			
					Objective,	<i>alcúne</i>	<i>arúnce</i> ,

Variation of a feminine common noun, beginning with a consonant.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>úna</i>	<i>cása</i> ,	a house ;			
Relation of	{ Possession, { Attribution, { Derivation,	{ <i>di úna</i> or <i>d' úna</i> <i>a úna</i> or <i>ad úna</i>	{ <i>cása</i> , of a house ; <i>cása</i> , to a house ; <i>cása</i> , from or by [a house ;	a house.			
					Objective,	<i>úna</i>	<i>cása</i> ,

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>alcúne</i>	<i>cáse</i> ,	some			
				[houses ;			
Relation of	{ Possession, { Attribution, { Derivation,	{ <i>di alcúne</i> or <i>d' alcúne</i> <i>a alcúne</i> or <i>ad alcúne</i>	{ <i>cáse</i> , of some [houses ; <i>cáse</i> , to some [houses ; <i>cáse</i> , from or [by some houses ;	some [houses.			
					Objective,	<i>alcúne</i>	<i>cáse</i> ,

CHAPTER III.

Of Adjectives.

Italian adjectives have three terminations, viz. the vowels *o*, *a*, *e*.

Adjectives ending in *o* are used with masculine nouns, and form their plural by changing *o* into *i*; as, *virtuoso*, virtuous; *uomo virtuoso*, virtuous man; *virtuosi*, virtuous; *uomini virtuosi*, virtuous men.

The adjective *bello*, handsome, before nouns beginning with impure *e*, *s*, or a vowel, makes *begli* in the plural; as,
begli stromenti, beautiful instruments;
begli zaffiri, beautiful sapphires;
begli occhi, beautiful eyes.

Adjectives ending in *o* become feminine by changing *o* into *a*; as, *virtuoso*, virtuous; *uomo virtuoso*, virtuous man; *virtuosa*, virtuous; *donna virtuosa*, virtuous woman.

Feminine adjectives ending in *a* form their plural by changing *a* into *e*; as, *virtuosa*, virtuous; *donna virtuosa*, virtuous woman; *virtuose*, virtuous; *donne virtuose*, virtuous women.

Adjectives ending in *e* are of the common gender, and form their plural by changing *e* into *i*; as,
prudente, prudent; { *uomo prudente*, prudent man;
 { *donna prudente*, prudent woman;
prudenti, prudent; { *uomini prudenti*, prudent men;
 { *donne prudenti*, prudent women.

Adjectives ending in *co*, *go*, *ca*, *ga*, *cio*, *cia*, *gio*, *chio*, *ghio* and *io*, in the singular, follow, in their plural, the rules already given for the formation of the plural of nouns.

*Of Comparatives and Superlatives.**Comparatives of Superiority, Inferiority, and Equality.*

Comparatives of superiority are generally formed by prefixing the adverb *più*, more, to the adjective; as,

<i>più</i> {	<i>virtuoso,</i> <i>onesto,</i> <i>prudente,</i>	<i>more</i> {	virtuous ; honest ; prudent.
--------------	--	---------------	------------------------------------

Comparatives of inferiority are formed by prefixing the adverb *méno*, less, to the adjective ; as,

<i>méno</i> {	<i>sincero,</i> <i>allegro,</i> <i>felice,</i>	<i>less</i> {	sincere ; merry ; happy.
---------------	--	---------------	--------------------------------

The English particle *than*, which is used after the comparative of superiority and inferiority, if it is followed by a noun, or a pronoun, is generally rendered in Italian by *di* ; as,

<i>Londra è più grande di</i>	London is larger than	Constantinople ;
<i>Costantinòpoli,</i>		
<i>èlla è men lieta di vbi,</i>	she is less cheerful than you ;	
<i>più or men bello di quello,</i>	more or less handsome than	that.

If the noun or pronoun which follows *than*, requires the article before it, *than*, with the article, is rendered by *del, dello, della* for the singular, and by *delli, déi or de', degli, delle* for the plural ; as,
il maestro è più pigro degli scolari, the master is more idle than the scholars ;
il vostro libro è più or men grande del mio, your book is more or less large than mine.

But if *than* is followed by an adjective, a verb, or an adverb, it is rendered by *che* ; as,
èlla è più graziosa che bella, she is more genteel than handsome ;
affligge più che non conforta, she afflicts more than she consoles ;
méglio oggi che domani, better to-day than to-morrow.

Comparatives of equality are formed by the adverbs *si* or *così*, so ; *tánto* or *altrettánto*, so, so much ; *quánto più*, the more ; &c. and their correlatives *cóme*, as, *quánto*, as, as much ; *tánto più*, the more ; &c. as,
il mio fratello non è sì or così buono come il vostro, my brother is not as yours ;

<i>ella era tanto or altrettanto</i>	she was as handsome as he
<i>bella quanto egli desidera- va,</i>	wished ;
<i>quanto più la veggio tanto</i>	the more I see her, the more
<i>più di lei m' innamorò,</i>	I am enamoured of her.

There are a few comparatives, derived from the Latin, which do not require the addition of any adverb ; as,

<i>maggiore,</i>	greater ;
<i>minore,</i>	less ;
<i>superiore,</i>	superior ;
<i>inferiore,</i>	inferior ;
<i>migliore,</i> }	better ;
or <i>méglio,</i> }	
<i>peggiore,</i> }	worse.
or <i>péggio,</i> }	

Méglio and *péggio* are of both genders, and of both numbers.

To increase or diminish the force of comparatives, we make use of the adverbs *mólto* or *assái*, or *via* or *vie*, much or a great deal, before *più*, *méno* ; as, *mólto* or *assái più*, *via* or *vie più*, much or a great deal more ; *mólto* or *assái méno*, *via* or *vie méno*, much or a great deal less ; &c. as,

<i>Ciceróne era mólto or as- sái più eloquente di Or- tensio,</i>	Cicero was much or a great deal more eloquent than Hortensius ;
<i>il sóle è via or vie più gránde délla térra,</i>	the sun is much or a great deal larger than the earth ;
<i>Ariósto è mólto or assái méno corrétto del Tússó,</i>	Ariosto is much or a great deal less correct than Tasso ;
<i>Pompéo era via or vie méno stimáto di Césare,</i>	Pompey was much or a great deal less esteemed than Cæsar.

Relative and Absolute Superlatives.

Comparative superlatives are formed by putting the
Com₁ *il*, the, for the masculine, and *la*, the, for the
prefixing before the comparative ; as,

<i>il</i>	}	<i>più</i>	}	<i>dòtto,</i>	the most	{	<i>learned ;</i>
<i>la</i>				<i>bèlla,</i>			<i>handsome ;</i>
<i>il or la</i>	}	or <i>méno</i>	{	<i>gránde,</i>	or least	{	<i>great.</i>

Absolute superlatives are formed by changing the last vowel of the plural of the adjective into *íssimo*, for the masculine, and into *íssima*, for the feminine ; as, *virtuóso*, virtuous ; *virtuosíssimo*, virtuous ; *póvera*, poor ; *poveríssima*, very poor ; *cortése*, courteous ; { *cortesíssimo*, } very { *cortesíssima*, } courteous.

Absolute superlatives may be also formed by putting the adverb *assái* or *mólto* before the adjective ; as, *assái* or *mólto* { *bélla,* } very { *bélla,* } handsome ; { *buóna,* } good ; { *amábile,* } amiable.

A few absolute superlatives take the termination *érrimo*, for the masculine, and *érrima*, for the feminine ; as, *íntegro*, just ; *íntegérrimo*, just ; *sálubre*, wholesome ; { *salubérrimo*, } very { *salubérrima*, } wholesome ; [&c.

The following adjectives, derived from the Latin, are superlatives by themselves without any addition or alteration :

<i>mássimo,</i>	}	greatest ;
<i>ménomo,</i>		least ;
or <i>mínimo,</i>	}	supreme ;
<i>suprémo,</i>		highest ;
or <i>sómmo,</i>	}	lowest ;
<i>ínfimo,</i>		very good ;
<i>óttimo,</i>		very bad.
<i>péssimo,</i>		

The superlative is sometimes formed by the repetition of the adjective ; as,

vivo vivo,
chéta chéta,
fine fine,

very { lively ;
 quiet ;
 fine.

And to give more force to the expression, the repeated adjective is used in the superlative form ; as,

fréddo freddissimo, cold, extremely cold ;
cálda caldissima, warm, exceeding warm ;
gránde { grandissimo, } large, very large.
{ grandissima, }

These are commonly called *superlatives of exaggeration*.

Of Augmentatives and Diminutives.

A great number of Italian nouns and adjectives are susceptible of a change of termination, which, modifying the primitive idea expressed by them, augments or diminishes their signification.

The nouns and adjectives thus altered are called *augmentatives* and *diminutives*.

Augmentatives.

There are three kinds of augmentatives ; those that express bigness and grandeur ; those that express strength, vigour, and beauty ; and those that express contempt.

To express bigness and grandeur, we change the last vowel of nouns or adjectives, if masculine, into *óne*, *ózza*, and, if feminine, into *éne*, *ézza* ; as,
cappélló, hat ; *cappéllóne*, large hat ;
forésa, country girl ; *forésózza*, a large country
 [girl ; &c.

When a feminine noun takes the termination *éne*, in the augmentative, it becomes masculine ; as,

dónna, f. woman ; *dónnéne*, m. large woman ;
pórtá, f. door ; *pórténe*, m. large door ; &c.

To express strength, vigour, or beauty, we use *ótto* for the masculine, and *ótta* for the feminine ; as, *giòvane*, youth ; *giòvanótto*, handsome and stout

[youth ;
ragázza, girl ; *ragazzótta*, large handsome girl ; &c.

To express contempt we use the terminations *úccio*, *úzzo*, *ústro* for the masculine, and *úccia*, *úzza*, *ústra*, and *úglia* for the feminine ; as,

libro, book ; *librúccio*, bad book ;
pópulo, people ; *popolúzzo*, populace ; [woman ;
giòvine, young woman ; *giòvanústra*, contemptible young
gente, people ; *gentúglia*, rabble ; &c.

We can join the augmentative termination of bigness to that which expresses contempt, and that of contempt to that of bigness, from which results a double augmentative ; as,

ribáldo, ribald ; *ribaldóne*, great ribald ; *ribaldonúccio*,
[very great ribald ;
uómo, man ; *omúccio*, bad man ; *omaccióne*,
[large man ; &c.

And we can sometimes make a treble augmentative ; as, *biáncò*, white ; *biancústro*, whitish ; *biancastróne*, slightly whitish ; *biancastronúccio*, of a dirty white ; &c.

Diminutives.

All the Italian diminutives may be divided into four classes, viz. those that express smallness or prettiness ; those that express kindness or tenderness ; those that express compassion ; and those that express contempt and indignation.

To express smallness or prettiness, we generally change the last vowel of nouns and adjectives into *íno*, *étto*, *éllo*, *úccio*, *úzzo* for the masculine, and *íno*, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza* for the feminine ; as,
fanciúllò, child ; *fanciullíno*, pretty little child ;
ruscéllò, brook ; *ruscellétto*, small brook ;

canestro, basket; *canestréllò*, small basket;
cappéllò, hat; *cappellúccìò*, pretty little hat;
bócca, mouth; *boccúzza*, pretty little mouth; &c.

Some feminine nouns take the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *éllò*, in the diminutive, and then they become masculine; as,
cása, f. house; *casíno*, m. small house, or a coun-
 [try seat;
capánna, f. cottage; *capannétto*, m. little cottage;
campána, f. bell; *campanéllò*, m. small bell; &c.

To express kindness or tenderness, we use the terminations *eréllò* for the masculine, and *erélla* for the feminine; as,

pázzo, fool; *pazzeréllò*, dear little fool;
vecchia, old woman; *vecchierélla*, little old woman;
 [&c.

To express compassion, we use the terminations *ino*, *étto*, *éllò*, *úccìò*, *úzzo*, and *icciúòlo* for the masculine, and *ina*, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza*, and *icciúòla* for the feminine; as,

póvero, poor man; *poveríno*, poor little man;
gíovana, young woman; *giovanéttà*, poor young woman;
mísera, unhappy wo- *miserélla*, poor little unhap-
 [man; [py woman;
cása, house; *casúccia*, miserable house;
fanciúllò, child; *fanciullúzzo*, poor little child;
mémbro, member; *membraicciúòlo*, poor little mem-
 [ber.

To express contempt and indignation, we use the terminations *étto*, *éllò*, *úccìò*, *úzzo*, *icciúòlo*, *icciátto* or *icciátto*, for the masculine, *étta*, *élla*, *úccia*, *úzza*, *icciúòla*, *icciátta* or *icciátto*, for the feminine; as,

dónna, woman; *donnétta*, despicable little woman;
paése, country; *paeséllò*, petty country, of no im-
 [portance;

gènte, people; *gentúccia*, low people;
poéta, poet; *poetúzzo*, petty poet;
úòmo, man; { *omicciúòlo*, } despicable puny fel-
 { *omicciátto*, } [low.
 or *omicciátto*, }

These are the terminations most generally used to form the different kinds of diminutives. Many of them are used promiscuously to express compassion, indignation, &c.; and some vary their signification according to their different connexions;

<i>fanciullino</i> ,	pretty little child;	<i>poverino</i> ,	poor little [man;
<i>casúccia</i> ,	miserable house;	<i>gentúccia</i> ,	low peo- [ple;
<i>donnétta</i> ,	despicable little woman;	<i>amábile don-</i>	
		<i>nétta</i> ,	lovely little woman;
<i>omicciúolo</i> ,	despicable puny fellow;	<i>buón omicciúolo</i> ,	[poor good little man.

There are a few other terminations which are sometimes also used to express either smallness and prettiness, or tenderness and compassion, as, *cíno* or *icíno*, and *célla* or *icélla*, for the masculine; and *cína* or *icína*, and *célla* or *icélla*, for the feminine;

<i>lúme</i> ,	light;	<i>lumicíno</i> ,	small light;
<i>canzóne</i> ,	song;	<i>conzoncína</i> ,	little song;
<i>porzióne</i> ,	portion;	<i>porzioncélla</i> ,	small portion;
<i>cámpo</i> ,	field;	<i>campicélla</i> ,	little field; &c.

The terminations *cíno*, *célla*, and *cína*, *célla*, are used with nouns, the final vowel of which is preceded by *n*; and *icíno*, *icélla*, and *icína*, *icélla*, with nouns, the final vowel of which is preceded by any other consonant.

Some nouns to form their diminutives, take the terminations *líno*, *lína*; and some, the terminations *uólo*, *uóla*; as,

<i>mémbro</i> ,	member;	<i>membrolíno</i> ,	little member;
<i>biánca</i> ,	white;	<i>biancolína</i> ,	whitish;
<i>rággio</i> ,	ray;	<i>raggiúolo</i> ,	little ray;
<i>béstia</i> ,	beast;	<i>bestiúola</i> ,	small beast; &c.

Some others take an irregular termination; such are the following:

<i>nóta,</i>	note ;	<i>nótola,</i>	little note ;
<i>págliá,</i>	straw ;	<i>pagliúcola,</i>	little straw ;
<i>córpo,</i>	body ;	<i>corpúscolo,</i>	small body ;
<i>cáne,</i>	dog ;	<i>cagnúolo,</i>	little dog ;
<i>cása,</i>	house ;	<i>castípola,</i>	} small poor house ;
		or <i>castípola,</i>	
<i>libro,</i>	book ;	<i>libricóto,</i>	} small poor book ;
		or <i>libércolo,</i>	
<i>bácio,</i>	kiss ;	<i>baciózzo,</i>	cordial smacking
		<i>baciúccid,</i>	soft kiss ; [kiss ;
<i>dottóre,</i>	doctor ;	<i>dottoricchio,</i>	little young doctor ;
<i>médico,</i>	physician ;	<i>medicónzolo,</i>	quack, ignorant [physician.
<i>préte,</i>	priest ;	<i>pretazzúolo,</i>	ignorant and déspi- [cable priest ;
<i>tristo,</i>	unhappy [man ;	<i>tristanziúolo,</i>	unhappy young [man ;
<i>lúpo,</i>	wolf ;	<i>lupátto,</i>	young wolf ;
<i>cérvo,</i>	stag ;	<i>cerbiátto,</i>	fawn ;
<i>órso,</i>	bear ;	<i>orsátto,</i>	cub ;
<i>lépre,</i>	hare ;	<i>leprátto,</i>	} leveret ;
		or <i>leprótto,</i>	
<i>abbruciáto,</i>	burnt ;	<i>abbruciatúccio,</i>	superficially [burnt ;
		<i>abbruciacchiáto,</i>	burnt here and [there ;
<i>rósso,</i>	red ;	<i>rossúccio,</i>	} reddish ;
		or <i>rossúgno,</i>	
<i>amáro,</i>	bitter ;	<i>amarúccio,</i>	} bitterish ;
		<i>amarógnolo,</i>	
		or <i>amarógnolo,</i>	
<i>vérdé,</i>	green ;	<i>verdúgno,</i>	} greenish ;
		<i>verdógnolo,</i>	
		or <i>verderógnolo,</i>	

We may join two different terminations in the formation of diminutives, and then we form a double diminutive ; the first termination expressing kindness or tenderness, and the second, prettiness or flattery ; as,

ghiótto, glutton; *ghiotteréllò*, little glutton; *ghiotte-
[rellíno, ;*
cattíva, miserable woman; *cattivélla*, a wretched wo-
[man; *cattivellúccia*, sorry woman; &c.

In some double diminutives the second termination serves to diminish the object still more, and in that case, it always conveys also the idea of prettiness; as,
libro, book; *librétto*, small book; *librétтино*,
[pretty little book;
cósa, thing; *cosétta*, little thing; *cosettína*,
[pretty little thing; &c.

Sometimes we make use of the diminutive terminations to diminish the augmentatives; as,
ladro, robber; *ladróne*, highwayman; *ladroncéllò*,
[. ;
cássa, box; *cassóne*, large box; *cassoncéllò*,
[. &c.

And when we want to express contempt for the object represented by the name already diminished, we augment this diminutive; as,
dáma, lady; *damúzza*, petty lady; *damuzzúccia*,
[pretended lady;
stánza, room; *stanzúccia*, small room; *stanzucció-
[cia*, a dirty little room; &c.

Finally, such is the genius of the Italian language in this respect, that we may even modify the verbs and adverbs by one or more syllables added to them; thus from

<i>baciáre</i> , to kiss;	we make <i>baciucchiáre</i> ,	} to give many small kisses one after an- other;
<i>rubáre</i> , to rob;	<i>rubacchiáre</i> ,	
<i>cantáre</i> , to sing;	{ <i>cancerelláre</i> ,	} to hum;
	{ or <i>canticchiáre</i> ,	
<i>mórdere</i> , to bite;	{ <i>morsecchiáre</i> ,	} to bite soft- [ly
	{ or <i>morseggiáre</i> ,	

<i>póco,</i>	little ;	{	<i>pochíno,</i>	}	very little ;
			or <i>pocolíno,</i>		
<i>béne,</i>	well ;	{	<i>beníno,</i>	}	pretty well ;
			<i>benóne,</i>		very well ; &c.

Of Numeral Adjectives.

Numeral adjectives are a certain class of words which are particularly used to qualify objects either with regard to their number or their arrangement. These are commonly called *numbers*, and are divided into two kinds, the *cardinal* and *ordinal*.

Cardinal numbers are those which determine a collection of objects with regard to their number ; such are the following :

<i>úno,</i>	one ;
<i>dúe,</i>	two ;
<i>tre,</i>	three ;
<i>quáttro,</i>	four ;
<i>cínque,</i>	five ;
<i>séi,</i>	six ;
<i>sétte,</i>	seven ;
<i>óttó,</i>	eight ;
<i>nóve,</i>	nine ;
<i>diéci,</i>	ten ;
<i>úndici,</i>	eleven ;
<i>dódicí,</i>	twelve ;
<i>trédici,</i>	thirteen ;
<i>quattórdici,</i>	fourteen ;
<i>quíndici,</i>	fifteen ;
<i>sédici,</i>	sixteen ;
<i>diciassétte,</i>	seventeen ;
<i>dicióttó,</i>	eighteen ;
<i>diciannóve,</i>	nineteen ;
<i>vénti,</i>	twenty ;

<i>vent' uno,</i>	}	twenty-one;
or <i>ventuno,</i>		twenty-two; &c.
<i>ventidue,</i>	}	twenty-eight; &c.
or <i>ventotto,</i>		
<i>tréнта,</i>		thirty;
<i>trentino,</i>		thirty-one; &c.
<i>quaránta,</i>		forty; &c.
<i>cinquánta,</i>		fifty; &c.
<i>sessánta,</i>		sixty; &c.
<i>settánta,</i>		seventy; &c.
<i>ottánta,</i>		eighty; &c.
<i>novánta,</i>		ninety; &c.
<i>cénto,</i>		hundred;
<i>duecénto,</i>	}	two hundred;
<i>ducénto,</i>		
or <i>dugénto,</i>		
<i>trecénto,</i>		three hundred; &c.
<i>mille,</i>		thousand;
<i>millióne,</i>		million.

Ordinal numbers determine objects in relation to their arrangement; these are,

<i>primo,</i>	first;
<i>secóndo,</i>	second;
<i>térzo,</i>	third;
<i>quárto,</i>	fourth;
<i>quánto,</i>	fifth;

<i>sésto,</i>	sixth ;
<i>séttimo,</i>	seventh ;
<i>ottávo,</i>	eighth ;
<i>nóno,</i>	ninth ;
<i>décimo,</i>	tenth ;
<i>decimoprímo,</i>	eleventh ;
<i>decimosecúndo,</i>	twelfth ;
<i>decimotérzo,</i>	thirteenth ;
<i>decimoquárto,</i>	fourteenth ;
<i>decimoquínto,</i>	fifteenth ;
<i>decimosésto,</i>	sixteenth ;
<i>decimoséttimo,</i>	seventeenth ;
<i>decim' ottávo,</i> }	eighteenth ;
or <i>decimottávo,</i> }	nineteenth ;
<i>decimonóno,</i>	twentieth ;
<i>ventésimo,</i>	
<i>ventesimoprímo,</i>	twenty-first ;
<i>ventesimosecúndo,</i>	twenty-second ; &c.
<i>ventesimottávo,</i>	twenty-eighth ; &c.
<i>trentésimo,</i>	thirtieth ;
<i>trentesimoprímo,</i>	thirty-first ; &c.
<i>quarantésimo,</i>	fortieth ; &c.
<i>cinquantésimo,</i>	fiftieth ; &c.
<i>sessantésimo,</i>	sixtieth ; &c.
<i>settantésimo,</i>	seventieth ; &c.
<i>ottantésimo,</i>	eightieth ; &c.
<i>novantésimo,</i>	ninetieth ; &c.
<i>centésimo,</i>	hundredth ;
<i>dugentésimo,</i>	two hundredth ;

<i>trecentésimo,</i>	three hundredth ; &c.
<i>millésimo,</i>	thousandth ;
<i>miliónésimo,</i>	millionth.

Besides these two kinds of numbers, there are three others which are formed from the numeral adjectives, but belong to the nouns ; these are the *collective*, *distributive*, and *proportional numbers*.

Collective numbers denote a determinate number of objects ; as,

<i>paio,</i>	a pair ;
<i>cinquína,</i>	the number of five ;
<i>decína,</i>	ten, or half a score ;
<i>dozína,</i>	a dozen ;
or <i>dozzína,</i>	
<i>ventína,</i>	a score, or twenty ;
<i>trentína,</i>	thirty, or a score and a half ;
<i>centínio,</i>	a hundred ;
<i>migtidío,</i>	a thousand.

Distributive numbers express the different parts of a whole ; as,

<i>úna metà,</i>	one half ;	<i>un térsio,</i>	one third ;
<i>un quártio,</i>	one fourth ;	<i>un quántio,</i>	one fifth ; &c.

Proportional numbers show the progressive increase of the number of things ; as.

<i>dóppio,</i>	double ;	<i>tríplo,</i>	triple ;
<i>quádruplo,</i>	quadruple ;	<i>quántuplo,</i>	quintuple ; &c.

The cardinal numbers, except *úno*, one ; *mille*, thousand ; *milióné*, million ; are invariable.

Úno and its compounds *ventúno*, twenty-one ; *trentúno*, thirty-one ; &c. before feminine nouns, like other adjectives, change *o* into *a* ; as,

<i>úna líbra,</i>	one pound ;
<i>ventúna péra,</i>	twenty-one pears ;
<i>trentúna líbra,</i>	thirty-one livres ; &c.

Mille, in the plural, makes *míla* ; as,

<i>dúe míla,</i>	two thousand ;
<i>tre míla,</i>	three thousand ; &c.

And *milióné* makes *milióni*, millions.

The ordinal numbers, *prímo*, first ; *secóndo*, second ; *térzo*, third ; &c. *décimo*, tenth ; *ventésimo*, twentieth ; *trentésimo*, thirtieth ; &c. before feminine nouns change

o into *a* ; and in the plural change *o* into *i* for the masculine, and *a* into *e* for the feminine ; as,

<i>la décima lexióne,</i>	the tenth lesson ;
<i>i prími líbri,</i>	the first books ;
<i>le térze nóte,</i>	the third notes ; &c.

And their compounds, *decimotérzo*, thirtieth ; *trentesimoprímo*, thirty-first ; *centesimonóno*, hundred and ninth ; &c. change both the last vowel of the last, and the last vowel of the first of the two component numbers ; as,

<i>la decimatérza. giornáta,</i>	the thirteenth day ;
<i>la trentesimapríma settimána,</i>	the thirty-first week ;
<i>la centesimanóna stánza,</i>	the one hundred and ninth [stanza ; &c.

The collective, distributive, and proportional numbers follow the rules of nouns.

The cardinal numbers *ventiséi*, *ventisétte* ; and *novantasei*, *novantasette*, are sometimes contracted into *venzéi*, twenty-six ; *venzétte*, twenty-seven ; and *novanzéi*, ninety-six ; *novanzétte*, ninety-seven.

The last syllable of *cénto*, hundred ; when it is followed by *quaránta*, forty ; *cinquánta*, fifty ; *sessánta*, sixty ; or *settánta*, seventy ; may be suppressed ; as in

<i>senquaránta zecchini,</i>	one hundred and forty sequins ;
<i>cencinquánta uómini,</i>	one hundred and fifty men ;
<i>censessánta fánti,</i>	one hundred and sixty foot-soldiers ;
<i>censettánta cavaliéri,</i>	one hundred and seventy horsemen.

The ordinal numbers from *decimoprímo* to *decimonóno*, are expressed likewise by

<i>undécimo,</i>	}	eleventh ;
<i>duodécimo,</i>		twelfth ;
or <i>dodécimo,</i>		
<i>terzodécimo,</i>		thirteenth ;

<i>quartodécimo,</i>	fourteenth ;
<i>quintodécimo,</i>	fifteenth ;
<i>sestodécimo,</i>	sixteenth ;
<i>settiodécimo,</i>	seventeenth ;
<i>ottodécimo,</i>	eighteenth ;
<i>nonodécimo,</i>	nineteenth.

The numbers from *decimoprimo* to *centésimo* may also be written,

<i>undécimo,</i>	eleventh ;
<i>dodécimo,</i>	twelfth ;
<i>tredecésimo,</i>	thirteenth ;
<i>quattordécésimo,</i>	fourteenth ;
<i>quindicésimo,</i>	fifteenth ;
<i>sedécésimo,</i>	sixteenth ;
<i>diciassettésimo,</i>	seventeenth ;
<i>diciottésimo,</i>	eighteenth ;
<i>diciannovésimo,</i>	nineteenth ;

<i>ventésimo,</i>	twentieth ;
<i>ventunésimo,</i>	twenty-first ;
<i>ventiduéximo,</i>	twenty-second.
<i>ventitrésimo,</i>	twenty-third ; &c.
<i>ventiscésimo,</i>	twenty-sixth ;
<i>ventisettésimo,</i>	twenty-seventh ; &c.

<i>trentésimo,</i>	thirtieth ;
<i>trentunésimo,</i>	thirty-first ; &c.

And instead of *ventésimo*, *trentésimo*, &c. we may use

<i>vigésimo,</i>	twentieth ;
<i>trigésimo,</i>	thirtieth ;
<i>quadragesimo,</i>	fortieth ;
<i>quingagesimo,</i>	fiftieth ;
<i>sessagesimo,</i>	sixtieth ;
<i>settuagesimo,</i>	seventieth ;
<i>ottagesimo,</i>	eightieth ;
<i>nonagesimo,</i>	ninetieth.

CHAPTER IV.

Of Pronouns.

Personal Pronouns.

THE personal pronouns are,

<i>io,</i>	I ;
<i>tu,</i>	thou ;
<i>égli,</i>	he ;
<i>élla,</i>	she ;
<i>éssó,</i>	he or it ;
<i>éssa,</i>	she or it ;
<i>se,</i>	{ one's self, himself, herself, } itself ; themselves.

Io is for the first person, both masculine and feminine, and makes *nói*, we, in the plural.

Tu is for the second person masculine and feminine, and makes *vói*, ye, you, in the plural.

Egli and *éssó* are for the third person masculine, and in the plural make *églino*, *éssi*, they.

Ella and *éssa* are for the third person feminine, and in the plural make *élleno*, *ésse*, they.

Egli and *élla* are used for animate beings: *éssó* and *éssa* are used for beings both animate and inanimate.

Se is used to express a relation of identity with the subject, and consequently has no subjective; it is for the third person of both genders and of both numbers.

Se may be applied both to animate and inanimate beings.

Personal pronouns are varied, like the nouns, with the prepositions *di*, *a*, *da*.

Variation of the pronoun *io*.

	Singular.	
Subjective,	<i>io,</i>	I ;
Relation of	{ Possession, <i>di me,</i>	of me ;
	{ Attribution, <i>a me, mi,</i>	to me ;
	{ Derivation, <i>da me,</i>	from or by me ;
Objective,	<i>me, mi,</i>	me.

		Plural.	
Subjective,		<i>nói,</i>	we ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>di nói,</i> of us ;
		Attribution,	<i>a nói, ci, ne,</i> to us ;
		Derivation,	<i>da nói,</i> from <i>or</i> by us ;
Objective,		<i>nói, ci, ne,</i>	us.

Variation of the pronoun *tu*.

		Singular.	
Subjective,		<i>tu,</i>	thou ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>di te,</i> of thee ;
		Attribution,	<i>a te, ti,</i> to thee ;
		Derivation,	<i>da te,</i> from <i>or</i> by thee ;
Objective,		<i>te, ti,</i>	thee.

		Plural.	
Subjective,		<i>vói,</i>	ye, you ;
Relation of	{	Possession,	<i>di vói,</i> of you ;
		Attribution,	<i>a vói, vi,</i> to you ;
		Derivation,	<i>da vói,</i> from <i>or</i> by you ;
Objective,		<i>vói, vi,</i>	you.

Variation of the pronoun *égli*.

		Singular.	
Subjective,		{ <i>égli,*</i> }	he ;
Relation of	{		{ <i>éi,</i>
			{ <i>or e',</i>
		Possession,	<i>di lúi,</i> of him ;
Relation of	{	Attribution,	<i>a lúi, gli, li,</i> to him ;
		Derivation,	<i>da lúi,</i> from <i>or</i> by him ;
Objective,		<i>lúi, il, lo,</i>	him.

		Plural.	
Subjective,		{ <i>églino,*</i> }	they ;
		{ <i>éi,</i>	
		{ <i>or e',</i>	

* See Orthography, p. 49.

Relation of	Objective,	{	Possession,	<i>di lóro,</i>	of them ;
			Attribution,	<i>a lóro, lóro,</i>	to them ;
			Derivation,	<i>da lóro,</i>	from <i>or</i> by them ;
				<i>lóro, glí, lí,</i>	them.

Variation of the pronoun *élla*.

Singular.

Subjective,			<i>élla,</i>	she ;	
Relation of	Objective,	{	Possession,	<i>di léi,</i>	of her ;
			Attribution,	<i>a léi, le,</i>	to her ;
			Derivation,	<i>da léi,</i>	from <i>or</i> by her ;
			<i>léi, la,</i>	her.	

Plural.

Subjective,			<i>élleno,</i>	they ;	
Relation of	Objective,	{	Possession,	<i>di lóro,</i>	of them ;
			Attribution,	<i>a lóro, lóro,</i>	to them ;
			Derivation,	<i>da lóro,</i>	from <i>or</i> by them ;
			<i>lóro, le,</i>	them.	

Variation of the pronoun *éssó*.

Singular.

Subjective,			<i>éssó,</i>	he <i>or</i> it ;	
Relation of	Objective,	{	Possession,	{ <i>di éssó,</i> or <i>d' éssó,</i> }	of him <i>or</i> it ;
			Attribution,	{ <i>a éssó,</i> or <i>ad éssó,</i> }	to him <i>or</i> it ;
			Derivation,	<i>da éssó,</i>	from <i>or</i> by him [<i>or</i> it ;
			<i>éssó,</i>	him <i>or</i> it.	

Plural.

Subjective,			<i>éssi,</i>	they ;	
Relation of	Objective,	{	Possession,	{ <i>di éssi,</i> or <i>d' éssi,</i> }	of them ;
			Attribution,	{ <i>a éssi,</i> or <i>ad éssi,</i> }	to them ;
			Derivation,	<i>da éssi,</i>	from <i>or</i> by them ;
			<i>éssi,</i>	them.	

Variation of the pronoun *éssa*.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>éssa,</i>	she or it ;
Relation of	Possession,	{ <i>di éssa,</i> or <i>d' éssa,</i>	} of her or it ;
		Derivation,	<i>da éssa,</i>
Objective,		<i>éssa,</i>	her or it.

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>ésse,</i>	they ;
Relation of	Possession,	{ <i>di ésse,</i> or <i>d' ésse,</i>	} of them ;
		Derivation,	<i>da ésse,</i>
Objective,		<i>ésse,</i>	them.

Variation of the pronoun *se*.

Relation of	Possession,	<i>di se,</i>	of one's self, him- [self, herself, or itself ; themselves ;
	Attribution,	<i>a se, si,</i>	to one's self, him- [self, herself, or itself ; themselves ;
	Derivation,	<i>da se,</i>	from or by one's [self, himself, herself, or itself ; themselves ;
Objective,		<i>se, si,</i>	one's self, himself, [herself, or itself ; themselves.

Instead of *éssso, éssa*, in the subjective only, the words *déssso, déssa*, and, in the plural, *déssi, désse*, are more elegantly used ; as,

lo véggio, égli è déssso,
cérto è déssa,

I see him, it is he ;
certainly it is she ; &c.

To give emphasis or to express opposition, we often add to the personal pronouns, the indefinite pronoun *stésso* or *medésimo*, self, for the masculine ; and *stéssa* or *medésima*, for the feminine, and thus form the compound pronouns,

<i>io stésso,</i>	}	myself ;	<i>ó i stéssi,</i>	}	our-	
or <i>io medésimo,</i>			or <i>nóí medésimi,</i>			[selves ;
<i>io stéssa,</i>			<i>nóí stésse,</i>			
or <i>io medésima,</i>	or <i>nóí medésime,</i>					
<i>tu stésso,</i>	}	thyself ;	<i>vóí stéssi,</i>	}	your-	
or <i>tu medésimo,</i>			or <i>vóí medésimi,</i>			[selves ;
<i>tu stéssa,</i>			<i>vóí stésse,</i>			
or <i>tu medésima,</i>	or <i>vóí medésime,</i>					
<i>égli stésso,</i>	}	himself ;	<i>églino stéssi,</i>	}	them-	
or <i>égli medésimo,</i>			or <i>églino medésimi,</i>			[selves ;
<i>élla stéssa,</i>			<i>élleno stésse,</i>			
or <i>élla medésima,</i>	or <i>élleno medésime,</i>					
<i>ésso stésso,</i>	}	himself,	<i>éssi stéssi,</i>	}	them-	
or <i>ésso medésimo,</i>			or <i>éssi medésimi,</i>			[selves ;
<i>éssa stéssa,</i>			or <i>ésse stésse,</i>			
or <i>éssa medésima,</i>	or <i>ésse medésime,</i>					
<i>se stésso,</i>	}	himself, or	<i>se stéssi,</i>	}	them-	
or <i>se medésimo,</i>			or <i>se medési mi</i>			[selves.
<i>se stéssa,</i>			<i>se stésse,</i>			
or <i>se medésima,</i>	or <i>se medésime,</i>					

When the pronouns *me*, *me* ; *te*, *thee* ; *se*, one's self, &c. are preceded by the preposition *con*, with ; we often transpose the preposition, make an elision of the *n*, and form of them a single word ; as,

con me, [*me con*] *méco*, with me ;
con te, [*te con*] *téco*, with thee ;

con se, [*se con*] *séco*, { with himself, with herself,
 with itself, with them-
 selves ; with him, &c.

We find in the classics *nóscó*, and *vóscó*, used for *con nóí*, with us ; *con vóí*, with you ; but these expressions have become obsolete.

Conjunctive Pronouns.

The conjunctive pronouns are,

<i>mi,</i>	}	[<i>a me</i>]	to me ;
		[<i>me</i>]	me ;
<i>ti</i>	}	[<i>a te</i>]	to thee ;
		[<i>te</i>]	thee ;
<i>gli,</i>	}	[<i>a lui</i>]	to him ;
or <i>li,</i>			
<i>il,</i>	}	[<i>lui</i>]	him ;
or <i>lo,</i>			
<i>le,</i>	}	[<i>a lei</i>]	to her ;
<i>la,</i>		[<i>lei</i>]	her ;
<i>ci,</i>	}	[<i>a noi</i>]	to us ;
or <i>ne,</i>		[<i>noi</i>]	us ;
<i>vi,</i>	}	[<i>a voi</i>]	to you ;
		[<i>voi</i>]	you ;
<i>loro,</i>	}	[<i>a loro</i>]	to them ;
<i>gli,</i>		[<i>loro</i>]	them ;
or <i>li,</i>			
<i>loro,</i>	}	[<i>a loro</i>]	to them ;
<i>le,</i>		[<i>loro</i>]	them ;
<i>si,</i>	}	[<i>a se</i>]	} to himself, herself, or [itself, themselves ;
		[<i>se</i>]	
<i>ne,</i>	}	[<i>di lui</i>]	of him ;
		[<i>di lei</i>]	of her ;
		[<i>di ciò</i>]	of it ;
		[<i>di loro</i>]	of them.

Ne, of it, of them ; which generally is classed with the conjunctive pronouns, is more properly considered as a relative particle.

Mi, *ti*, *ci* or *ne*, *vi*, are of both genders, and can only be applied to persons.

Gli or *li*, *il* or *lo*, *gli* or *li*, are masculine ; *le*, *la*, *le*, are feminine ; *si*, *ne*, *loro*, are of both genders ; and all of them may be used for persons or things.

When the pronouns *mi, ti, gli, ci, vi, si*, are immediately followed by the pronouns *lo, la, gli, li, le, ne*, they are generally united and form a single word.

Union of the Pronouns mi, ti, gli, ti, vi, si, with the Pronouns lo, la, gli, li, le, ne.

MI.

[mi lo]	<i>mélo,</i>	him or it to me ;
[mi la]	<i>méla,</i>	her or it to me ;
[mi gli]	<i>mégli,</i>	} them to me ;
[mi li]	<i>méli,</i>	
[mi le]	<i>méle,</i>	} to me of it, or to me of
[mi ne]	<i>méne,</i>	

TI.

[ti lo]	<i>télo,</i>	him or it to thee ;
[ti la]	<i>téla,</i>	her or it to thee ;
[ti gli]	<i>tégli,</i>	} them to thee ;
[ti li]	<i>téli,</i>	
[ti le]	<i>téle,</i>	} to thee of it, or to thee of
[ti ne]	<i>téne,</i>	

GLI.

[gli lo]	<i>gliélo,</i>	him or it to him or her ;
[gli la]	<i>gliéla,</i>	her or it to him or her ;
[gli li]	<i>gliéli,</i>	} them to him or her ;
[gli le]	<i>gliéle,</i>	
[gli ne]	<i>gliéne,</i>	to him of it or to him of
		[them.]

To her of it, or, to her of them, is expressed by *le ne*.

CI.

[ci lo]	<i>célo,</i>	him or it to us ;
[ci la]	<i>céla,</i>	her or it to us ;
[ci gli]	<i>cégli,</i>	} them to us ;
[ci li]	<i>céli,</i>	
[ci le]	<i>céle,</i>	} to us of it, or to us of them.
[ci ne]	<i>céne,</i>	

VI.

[vi lo]	vélo,	him or it to you ;
[vi la]	véla,	her or it to you ;
[vi glí]	végli,	} them to you ;
[vi lí]	véli,	
[vi le]	véle,	} to you of it, or to you of
[vi ne]	véne,	

SI.

[si lo]	sélo,	} him or it to himself, herself, itself, themselves ;
[si la]	séla,	
[si glí]	ségli,	} them to himself, herself, itself, themselves ;
[si lí]	séli,	
[si le]	séle,	
[si ne]	séne,	} to himself, herself, itself, themselves of it, or to him- self, herself, itself, them- selves of them.

Mélo, télo, gliélo, célo, vélo, sélo, &c. before a verb which does not begin with *z* or *impure s*, are sometimes contracted into *mel, tel, gliél, cel, vel, sel, &c.* ; as,

<i>mel promise,</i>	he promised it to me ;
<i>tel concéde,</i>	he grants it to thee ;
<i>gliél celái,</i>	I concealed it from him ;
<i>cel promise,</i>	he promised it to us ;
<i>vel díco,</i>	I tell it to you ;
<i>sen ríse,</i>	he laughed at it.

Before verbs beginning with a vowel they are writ with an apostrophe ; as,

<i>mel' invierà,</i>	he will send it to me ;
<i>tel' d' détto,</i>	I told it to you ;
<i>sen' andò,</i>	he went off.

When the pronoun *lo* is preceded by the negative particle *non*, no, not, it is more elegantly changed into *il*, and joined with the particle in a single word, [*non il*] *nol* ; thus we say, *nol vóglío* ; *nol négo, &c.* instead of *non lo vóglío*, I do not want it ; *non lo négo*, I do not deny it, &c.

Possessive Pronouns.

The possessive pronouns are,

<i>mío,</i>	<i>mía,</i>	my or mine ;
<i>túo,</i>	<i>túa,</i>	thy or thine ;
<i>súo,</i>	<i>súa,</i>	his, her or hers, its ;
<i>nóstrò,</i>	<i>nóstra,</i>	our or ours ;
<i>vóstro,</i>	<i>vóstra,</i>	your or yours ;
<i>lóro,</i>	<i>lóro,</i>	their or theirs.

Mío, túo, súo, nóstrò, vóstro, are masculine ; and in the plural make,

<i>miéi,</i>	my or mine ;
<i>tuói,</i>	thy or thine ;
<i>suói,</i>	his, her or hers, its ;
<i>nóstri,</i>	our or ours ;
<i>vóstri,</i>	your or yours.

Mía, túa, súa, nóstra, vóstra, are feminine ; and in the plural make,

<i>míe,</i>	my or mine ;
<i>túe,</i>	thy or thine ;
<i>súe,</i>	his, her or hers, its ;
<i>nóstre,</i>	our or ours ;
<i>vóstre,</i>	your or yours.

Lóro, their or theirs, is of both genders and of both numbers.

Possessive pronouns are generally varied with the prepositions and articles.

Variation of a masculine possessive pronoun.

Singular.

Subjective,	<i>il mío,</i>	my or mine ;		
Relation of	{ Possession,	<i>del mío,</i>	of my or mine ;	
		Attribution,	<i>al mío,</i>	to my or mine ;
		Derivation,	<i>dal mío,</i>	from or by my or [mine ;
Objective,	<i>il mío,</i>	my or mine.		

Plural.

Subjective,		$\left. \begin{array}{l} \textit{li} \\ \text{or } \textit{i} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \right\}$ <i>miéi</i> , my or mine ;
Relation of	Possession,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{déli} \\ \textit{déi} \\ \text{or } \textit{de'} \end{array} \right.$	$\left. \right\}$ <i>miéi</i> , of my or [mine ;
	Attribution,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{áli} \\ \text{or } \textit{a'} \end{array} \right.$	$\left. \right\}$ <i>miéi</i> , to my or [mine ;
	Derivation,	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{dáli} \\ \textit{dái} \\ \text{or } \textit{da'} \end{array} \right.$	$\left. \right\}$ <i>miéi</i> , from or by [my or mine ;
Objective,		$\left. \begin{array}{l} \textit{li} \\ \text{or } \textit{i} \end{array} \right\}$	$\left. \right\}$ <i>miéi</i> , my or mine.

Variation of a feminine possessive pronoun.

Singular.

Subjective,		<i>la nóstra</i> ,	our or ours ;
Relation of	Possession,	<i>délla nóstra</i> ,	of our or ours ;
	Attribution,	<i>álla nóstra</i> ,	to our or ours ;
	Derivation,	<i>dála nóstra</i> ,	from or by our [or ours ;
Objective,		<i>la nóstra</i> ,	our or ours.

Plural.

Subjective,		<i>le nóstre</i> ,	our or ours ;
Relation of	Possession,	<i>déle nóstre</i> ,	of our or ours ;
	Attribution,	<i>ále nóstre</i> ,	to our or ours ;
	Derivation,	<i>dále nóstre</i> ,	from or by our [or ours ;
Objective,		<i>le nóstre</i> ,	our or ours.

Variation of the pronoun *loro*, of the common gender.

		Singular.		
Subjective,	{	<i>il loro,</i>	{	their <i>or</i> theirs ;
		<i>la loro,</i>		
Relation of	{ Possession,	<i>del loro,</i>	{	of their <i>or</i> theirs ;
		<i>della loro,</i>		
	{ Attribution,	<i>al loro,</i>	{	to their <i>or</i> theirs ;
		<i>alla loro,</i>		
	{ Derivation,	<i>dal loro,</i>	{	from <i>or</i> by their [or theirs ;
		<i>dalla loro,</i>		
Objective,	{	<i>il loro,</i>	{	their <i>or</i> theirs.
		<i>la loro,</i>		

		Plural.			
Subjective,	{	<i>li</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	their <i>or</i> [theirs ;
		or <i>i</i>			
	{	<i>le</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	
Relation of	{ Possession,	<i>delli</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	of their <i>or</i> [theirs ;
		<i>déi</i>			
	or <i>de'</i>	<i>delle</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	
	{ Attribution,	<i>alli</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	to their <i>or</i> [theirs ;
		<i>ái</i>			
or <i>a'</i>	<i>alle</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>		
{ Derivation,	<i>dalli</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	from <i>or</i> by [their <i>or</i> [theirs ;	
	<i>dái</i>				
or <i>da'</i>	<i>dalle</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>		
Objective,	{	<i>li</i>	{	<i>loro,</i>	their <i>or</i> [theirs.
		or <i>i</i>			
		<i>le</i>		<i>loro,</i>	

Demonstrative Pronouns.

The Italian has three kinds of demonstrative pronouns :

The first points out an object near the person who speaks ; as,

quésto, this ; *quésta*, this ;
costúí, he or this man ; *costéi*, she or this woman ;
 and in the plural,
quésti, these ; *quéste*, these ;
costóro, they or these men ; *costóro*, they or these wo-
 [men.]

The second points out an object at a distance from the person who speaks, as well as from the person who is spoken to ; as,

*quéllo,** } that ; *quélla*, that ;
 or *quél*, }
colúí, he or that man ; *coléi*, she or that wo-
 and in the plural, [man ;
quélíi,† } those ; *quélle*, those ;
quéi, }
 or *que'*, }
colóro, they or those men ; *colóro*, they or those wo-
 [men.]

The third points out an object near the person who is spoken to ; as,

codésto, { that man or *codésta*, { that woman
 or *cotésto*, { thing near or *cotésta*, { or thing near
 you ; you.
 and in the plural,
codésti, { those men or *codéste*, { those women
 or *cotésti*, { things near or *cotéste*, { or things near
 you ; you.

Quésto, *quésta* ; *quéllo* or *quél*, *quélla* ; *codésto* or *co-
 tésto*, *codésta* or *cotésta*, are generally used in speaking
 both of persons and things.

Costúí, *costéi* ; *colúí*, *coléi*, cannot be employed but
 in speaking of persons.

To these may be added the pronoun *ciò*, this or that,
 which is equivalent to *quésto*, *quéllo* or *quél*, *cotésto* ;
 in the signification of *quésta* or *quella cosa* ; *cotesta cosa* ;
 this or that thing ; that thing near you ; but it never
 refers to a person.

* See Orthogr. p. 46, 47.

† Ibid. p. 48, 49.

Demonstrative pronouns are varied with the prepositions only.

Quésta before the nouns *mattina* or *máne*, morning ; *séra*, evening ; *nótte*, night ; often loses in the singular its first syllable, and forms with them a single word ; as,

[<i>quésta mattina</i>]	<i>stamattina,</i>	} this morning ;	
[<i>quésta máne</i>]	<i>stamáne,</i>		
[<i>quésta séra</i>]	<i>staséra,</i>		this evening ;
[<i>quésta nótte</i>]	<i>stanótte,</i>		to-night, or last [night.

Quéllo followed by a noun beginning with a vowel, *z*, or *impure s*, in the plural makes *quégli* ; as,

<i>quégli úomini,</i>	those men ;
<i>quégli zaffiri,</i>	those sapphires ;
<i>quégli strométi,</i>	those instruments.

We sometimes use *quésti*, *quégli*, and *quéi*, in the singular, and *quéglino* in the plural, speaking of persons, but in the subjective only ; and then *quésti* is equivalent to *quest' úomo*, this man ; *quégli* and *quéi* to *quell' úomo*, he that or that man ; and *quéglino* to *quégli úomini*, those men.

E'to, *ésta*, for *quésto*, *quésta*, this ; and *coléstui*, *coléstéi*, for *colésto uomo*, that man or the man near you ; *colésta donna*, that woman or the woman near you, have become obsolete.

Relative Pronouns.

The Italian relative pronouns are *quále*, *che*, who or which, that ; *chi*, who, he or she that, they that.

The first two refer to persons or things, the last to persons only.

Quále is of both genders, and in the plural makes *quáli*, who or which, that.

Che, chi are of both genders and of both numbers.
Quále is varied with the prepositions and articles ;
the others, with the prepositions only.

Variation of the pronoun *quále*.

Singular.

Subjective,	{	<i>il quále,</i>	}	who or			
	{	or	<i>la quále,</i>	}			
				[which, that ;			
Relation of	{	Possession,	{	<i>del quále,</i>	} of whom or		
			{	or <i>délla quále,</i>		} [which, that ;	
		Attribution,	{	<i>al quále,</i>			} to whom or
			{	or <i>álla quále,</i>			
Derivation,	{	<i>dal quále,</i>	} from or by				
	{	or <i>dólla quále,</i>		} [whom or			
						[which, that ;	
Objective,	{	<i>il quále,</i>			}	whom or	
	{	or	<i>la quále,</i>		}		
				[which, that.			

Plural.

Subjective,	{	or	{	<i>li</i>	} <i>quáli,</i>	} who or								
				<i>le</i>			<i>quáli,</i>	[which,						
Relation of	{	or	{	<i>délli</i>	} <i>quáli,</i>	} of whom or								
				<i>déi</i>			} [which,							
				or <i>de'</i>				} [that ;						
				<i>délle</i>					} [that ;					
				<i>áli</i>						} to whom or				
				or <i>á'</i>							} [which,			
				<i>álle</i>								} [that ;		
				<i>dáli</i>									} from or by	
				or <i>da'</i>										} [whom or
				<i>dáli</i>										
or <i>da'</i>	} [that ;													
<i>dálle</i>		} [that ;												
Objective,			{	<i>li</i>	}	whom or								
			{	or	<i>i</i>	}								
					<i>quáli,</i>	[which,								
				<i>le</i>	<i>quáli,</i>	[that.								

Variation of the pronoun *che*.

Subjective,	<i>che</i> ,	who or which, that ;	
Relation of	Possession, Attribution, Derivation,	<i>di che</i> , { of whom or [which, that ; <i>a che</i> , { to whom or [which, that ; <i>da che</i> , { from or by whom [or which, that ;	
		Objective,	<i>che</i> , { whom or which. [that.

Variation of the pronoun *chi*.

Subjective,	<i>chi</i> ,	who, he or she that ; [they that ;	
Relation of	Possession, Attribution, Derivation,	<i>di chi</i> , of whom, him or her [that ; them that ; <i>a chi</i> , to whom, him or her [that ; them that ; <i>da chi</i> , from whom, him or [her that ; them that ;	
		Objective,	<i>chi</i> , whom, him or her [that ; them that.

Instead of *quale, che, chi*, in the relations of possession, attribution, and derivation, *cui* is often used, which is also considered as a relative pronoun : it is of both genders, and of both numbers, and is varied, like *che, chi*, with the prepositions only.

Onde is also employed, particularly in poetry, as a relative pronoun, and then it is equivalent to *di cui, del or della quale, dei or delle quali ; da cui, dal quale, da' quali ; con cui, col quale ; per lo quale*.

Besides these relative pronouns there are in Italian the particles *ne, ci, vi*, which never vary, and always refer to some person, thing, or place which has been spoken of before.

Ne refers to one person or thing, or to more than one, according to the number of the objects, which have been mentioned; and it is rendered in English by—of him, her, it; of them; some of it, some of them—; as,

<i>ne páre innamóráto,</i>	he seems enamoured of her;
<i>ne avréi quáttro,</i>	I might have four of them;
<i>ne ò présò,</i>	I have taken some of it or of [them; &c.

Ne is also used to express the place which one comes from or goes to, and then it corresponds to the English adverbs, hence, thence; as,

<i>quándo ne andréte?</i>	when shall you go hence?
<i>ne véngo óra,</i>	I come thence now.

Ci, *vi*, generally refer to a place, and correspond to the adverbs, here, there; hither, thither; as,

<i>ci rimángo con piacére,</i>	I remain here with pleasure;
<i>vi passerémo tútta la</i>	} we shall pass all the sum- [mer there;
[<i>státe,</i>]	
<i>ci ritorneréte?</i>	shall you return hither?
<i>vi andrò dimáni,</i>	I shall go thither to-morrow.

Ci properly refers to a place near the person who speaks, and *vi* to a place at a distance. This distinction, however, is not observed when the particles *ci*, *vi*, and the conjunctive pronouns *ci*, *vi* would be brought together, as in *ío vi vi condurrò*, *vóci ci ci avéte condótti*; in which case, to avoid the harsh sound, we say,

<i>ío vi ci condurrò,</i>	I shall conduct you hither, or [thither;
<i>vóci vi ci avéte condótti;</i>	you have conducted us thith- [er, or hither;

whether the place referred to is near or far off.

Sometimes *ci*, *vi* refer to persons or things, and then they take the signification of the persons or things which they refer to; as,

<i>pensúste a me? sí, ci pen-</i>	} did you think of me? yes, I [thought of you;
[<i>sái;</i>]	
<i>baderéte a quésto? sí, vi</i>	} will you attend to this? yes, [I will attend to it.
[<i>baderò;</i>]	

Interrogative Pronouns.

The interrogative pronouns are *chi?*, who?; *che?*, what?; *quále?*, which?, which of them?.

Chi? is used only in speaking of persons, and is of both genders, and of both numbers.

Che? serves for either persons or things, and is likewise of both genders, and of both numbers.

Quále? is used for either persons or things of both genders, and in the plural makes *quáli?*, which?, which of them?

The interrogative pronouns are varied with the prepositions only.

Indefinite Pronouns.

The indefinite pronouns are the following:

M. & F.

ógni,
quálche,

every each ;
some ;

chiúnque,
chicchessía,
chisivóglia,
qualúnque,
qualsisía,
qualsivóglia,

whosoever,
whatsoever ;

whosoever,
whatsoever.

Masc.

uno, or *un,*
unáltro,
qualcúno,
qualchedúno,
ognúno,
ciascúno,
ciaschedúno,
nessúno,
nissúno,
niúno,
verúno,
núllo,

Fem.

úna,
unáltra,
qualcúna,
qualchedúna,
ognúna,
ciascúna,
ciaschedúna,
nessúna,
nissúna,
niúna,
verúna,
núlla,

one ;
another ;

} some one, some-
[body ;

} every one, every
[body ;

} no one, nobody ;

which are used only in the singular, and cannot be put before nouns of the plural number.

Except *ogni*, which before numeral adjectives, as in the phrases *ogni due giorni*, every two days ; *ogni sei mesi*, every six months ; *ogni dieci anni*, every ten years ; &c. and in the word *Ogni-santi*, the day of All-saints ; is used with nouns in the plural.

<i>certúni,</i>	<i>certúne,</i>	some ;
<i>parécchi,</i>	<i>paréccie,</i>	several, divers ;
which are used only in the plural ;		
<i>Púno</i>	<i>Púna,</i>	the one, the former ;
<i>alcúno,</i>	<i>alcúna,</i> }	some one, some- [body ;
<i>talúno,</i>	<i>talúna,</i> }	
<i>áltro,</i>	<i>áltra,</i>	other ;
<i>cérto,</i>	<i>cérta,</i>	certain ;
<i>stéssu,</i>	<i>stéssa,</i> }	same ;
<i>medésimo,</i>	<i>medésima,</i> }	
<i>tútto,</i>	<i>tútta,</i>	all ;
<i>alquánto,</i>	<i>alquánta,</i>	a little, somewhat ;
<i>tánto,</i>	<i>tánta,</i> }	so much ;
<i>cotánto,</i>	<i>cotánta,</i> }	
<i>altrettánto,</i>	<i>altrettánta,</i>	as much, as much more ;
<i>póco,</i>	<i>póca,</i>	few ;
<i>mólto,</i>	<i>mólta,</i>	much ;
<i>tróppo,</i>	<i>tróppa,</i>	too much ;
<i>tále or tal,*</i>	<i>tále,</i>	such ;
<i>cotále or cotál,</i>	<i>cotále,</i>	such, such a one ;
which in the plural make,		
<i>gli úni,</i>	<i>le úne,</i>	some, the former ;
<i>alcúni,</i>	<i>alcúne,</i> }	some ;
<i>talúni,</i>	<i>talúne,</i> }	
<i>áltri,</i>	<i>áltre,</i>	others ;
<i>cérti,</i>	<i>cérte,</i>	certain ;
<i>stéssi,</i>	<i>stésse,</i> }	same ;
<i>medésimi,</i>	<i>medésime,</i> }	
<i>tútti,</i>	<i>tútte,</i>	a few, not many ;
<i>alquánti,</i>	<i>alquánte,</i>	so many ;
<i>tánti,</i>	<i>tánte,</i>	
<i>cotánti,</i>	<i>cotánte,</i>	
<i>altrettánti,</i>	<i>altrettánte,</i>	as many, as many more ;

* See Orthog. pp. 48, 49.

<i>póchi,</i>	<i>póche,</i>	few ;
<i>mólti,</i>	<i>mólte,</i>	many ;
<i>tróppi,</i>	<i>tróppe,</i>	too many ;
<i>táli, tái, or ta',</i>	<i>táli,</i>	such ;
<i>cotáli, cotái, or cotá',</i>	<i>cotáli,</i>	such, such ones.

Chiúnque; chicchessia; chisivógliá; qualcúno, qualsúna; qualchedúno, qualchedúna; ognúno, ognúna; gli úni, le úne; certúni, certúne; talúno, talúna; talúni, talúne; are applied to persons only; the others may be applied both to persons and things.

Indefinite pronouns are generally varied with the prepositions only; except *gli úni, le úne; áltro, áltra; stéssó, stéssa; medésimo, medésima;* which are varied with the prepositions and articles.

Si is generally considered as an indefinite pronoun, and is used both for the masculine and feminine, gender, singular and plural; it is equivalent to the English words—one, we, people, they—; as,

<i>si véde che siéte un galan-</i>	} one sees that you are a gen-	[tuómo, }	[tleman ;
<i>cóme si è détto,</i>			as we have said ;
<i>si parláva di guérra,</i>			people talked of war ;
<i>si loderà móltó il súo corág-</i>	} they will praise his courage	[gio, }	very much.

But in these and similar phrases *si* holds the place of a passive proposition, and may be equally well rendered in English by—it is, it was, it will be—; as,

<i>si díce che la páce è già</i>	} it is said that the peace is	[fermáta, }	[already concluded ;
<i>si credeva così generalmén-</i>	} it was generally so believed.	[te,	

si premierò certamente la vó- } your fidelity will certainly
[stra lealtà, } } [be rewarded.

We sometimes use *áltri* in the singular, and in its three relations *altrúi*, as *di altrúi* or *d'altrúi*, &c. speaking of persons; and then *áltri* is equivalent to *un áltro úomo*, another man; *di altrúi*, to *di un áltro úomo*, of another man, &c.; but when it is used distributively, it corresponds to the English pronouns—one, another—; as, *áltri piánge, áltri ride,* one weeps, another laughs; *áltri párla di páce, áltri di }* one talks of peace, another
[guérra, } } [of war.

Chi is also used as an indefinite pronoun in a distributive sense, and it is equivalent to—one, another—; as,
chi va, chi viéne, one goes, another comes;
chi è avventuráto, chi mí- } one is happy, another is
[sero, } } [miserable.

CHAPTER V.

Of Verbs.

Italian verbs are divided into three different conjugations, which are distinguished by the termination of the infinitive.

The first conjugation comprehends those verbs which in the infinitive end in *áre*; as, *amáre*, to love.

The second comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *ére* or *ere*; as, *temére*, to fear; *crédere*, to believe.

The third comprehends those verbs, which in the infinitive end in *tre*; as, *sentire*, to hear.

All the verbs of these three different conjugations, whether regular or irregular, are conjugated or *varied* with one of the auxiliary verbs, *avére*, to have; or *éssere*, to be.

The auxiliary verb *avére* in its compound tenses is varied with its own participle, *avúto*, had; and *éssere* in the variation of its compound tenses borrows the participle *státo*, been, from the verb *stáre*, to be, to stand.

Variation of the auxiliary verb *av re*.

In the variation of this and the following verbs the words between parentheses, are the poetical forms of the verb. Some of these are elegantly used even in prose, and some are entirely confined to verse; in order to distinguish the latter, from the former the latter are printed in Roman characters.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

avére, to have.

Past.

avére avúto, to have had.

Future.

avére ad avére, or *éssere per avére*. to have to have, or to be about to have.

GERUND.

Present.

avéndo, having.

Past.

avéndo avúto, having had.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

avénte, having.

Past.

avúto, avúta, } avúti, avúte, }	had.
------------------------------------	------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

ò, ài, à (àve), abbiámo, avéte, ànno,	I have ; thou hast ; he, she, or it has ; we have ; you have ; they have.
--	--

Imperfect.

avéva or avéa,* avévi, avéva or avéa (avía), avévamo, avévate, avévano or avéano (avéno),	I had ; thou hadst ; he, she, or it had ; we had ; you had ; they had.
--	---

Perfect-definite.

ébbi, avésti, ébbe, avémmo, avéste, ébbero,	I had ; thou hadst ; he, she, or it had ; we had ; you had ; they had.
--	---

Perfect-indefinite.

ò avúto, ài avúto, à avúto,	I have had ; thou hast had ; he, she, or it has had ;
-----------------------------------	---

* See Orthogr. p. 48.

abbiamo avúto,
avéte avúto,
anno avúto,

we have had ;
you have had ;
they have had.

Pluperfect-definite.

ebbi avúto,
avésti avúto,
ebbe avúto,
avémmo avúto,
avéste avúto,
ebbero avúto,

I had had ;
thou hadst had ;
he, she, or it had had ;
we had had ;
you had had ;
they had had.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva avúto,
avévi avúto,
avéva avúto,
avévamo avúto,
avévate avúto,
avévano avúto,

I had had ;
thou hadst had ;
he, she, or it had had ;
we had had ;
you had had ;
they had had.

Future-indefinite.

avrò,
avrái,
avrà,

I shall or will have ;
thou shalt or wilt have ;
he, she, or it shall or will
[have ;

avrémo,
avréte,
avránno,

we shall or will have ;
you shall or will have ;
they shall or will have.

Future-definite.

avrò avúto,
avrái avúto,
avrà avúto,

I shall or will have had ;
thou shalt or wilt have had ;
he, she, or it shall or will
[have had ;

avrémo avúto,
avréte avúto,
avránno avúto,

we shall or will have had ;
you shall or will have had ;
they shall or will have had.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>avrèi</i> (avria),	I should, would, or could
<i>avrèsti</i> ,	[have ; or might have ; thou shouldst, wouldst, or
<i>avrèbbe</i> (avria),	[couldst have ; &c. he, she, or it should, would,
<i>avrèmmo</i> ,	[or could have ; &c. we should, would, or could
<i>avrèste</i> ,	[have ; &c. you should, would, or could
<i>avrèbbero</i> (avriano or a- [vríeno]),	[have ; &c. they should, would, or could [have ; &c.]

Past.

<i>avrèi avúto</i> ,	{ I should, would, or could [have had ; or might [have had ;
<i>avrèsti avúto</i> ,	
<i>avrèbbe avúto</i> ,	thou shouldst, wouldst, or
<i>avrèmmo avúto</i> ,	[couldst have had ; &c. he, she, or it should, would,
<i>avrèste avúto</i> ,	[or could have had ; &c. we should, would, or could
<i>avrèbbero avúto</i> ,	[have had ; &c. you should, would, or could
	[have had ; &c. they should, would, or could
	[have had ; &c.]

IMPERATIVE.

<i>ábbi</i> ,	have thou ;
<i>ábbia</i> ,	let him, her, or it have ;
<i>abbiamo</i> ,	let us have ;
<i>abbiate</i> ,	have ye ;
<i>abbiano</i> ,	let them have.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>ábbia,</i>	that I have ; <i>or</i> may have ;
<i>ábbi or ábbia,</i>	that thou hast ; &c.
<i>ábbia,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it has ; &c.
<i>abbiamo,</i>	that we have ; &c.
<i>abbiate,</i>	that you have ; &c.
<i>abbiano,</i>	that they have ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>avéssi,</i>	if I had ; <i>or</i> should have ;
<i>avéssi,</i>	if thou hadst ; &c.
<i>avésse,</i>	if he, she, <i>or</i> it had ; &c.
<i>avéssimo,</i>	if we had ; &c.
<i>avéste,</i>	if you had ; &c.
<i>avéssero,</i>	if they had ; &c.

Preterperfect.

<i>ábbia avúto,</i>	that I have had ; <i>or</i> may [have had ;
<i>ábbi avúto,</i>	that thou hast had ; &c.
<i>ábbia avúto,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it, has had ; [&c.
<i>abbiamo avúto,</i>	that we have had ; &c.
<i>abbiate avúto,</i>	that you have had ; &c.
<i>abbiano avúto,</i>	that they have had ; &c.

Preterpluperfect.

<i>avéssi avúto,</i>	if I had had ;
<i>avéssi avúto,</i>	if thou hadst had ;
<i>avésse avúto,</i>	if he, she, <i>or</i> it had had ;
<i>avéssimo avúto,</i>	if we had had ;
<i>avéste avúto,</i>	if you had had ;
<i>avéssero avúto,</i>	if they had had.

Variation of the auxiliary verb *essere*.

INFINITIVE.

	<i>Present.</i>	to be.
<i>essere,</i>	<i>Past.</i>	
		to have been.
<i>essere státo, -a,</i>	<i>Future.</i>	
		to be about to be, or
<i>essere per essere, or</i> <i>avére ad essere,</i>		to have to be.

GERUND.

	<i>Present.</i>	being.
<i>esséndo,</i>	<i>Past.</i>	
		having been.
<i>esséndo státo, -a,</i>		

PARTICIPLE.

	<i>Present.</i>	
.
	<i>Past.</i>	
<i>státo, státa, }</i> <i>státi, státe, }</i>		been.

INDICATIVE.

	<i>Present.</i>	
<i>sóno,</i>		I am ;
<i>séi,</i>		thou art ;
<i>è,</i>		he, she, or it is ;
<i>siámo,</i>		we are ;
<i>siéte (séte),</i>		you are ;
<i>sóno,</i>		they are.
	<i>Imperfect.</i>	
<i>éra,</i>		I was ;
<i>éri,</i>		thou wast ;
<i>éra,</i>		he, she, or it was ;

eravamo,
eravate,
erano,

we were ;
you were ;
they were.

Perfect-definite.

fui,
fosti,
fu,
fummo,
foste,

furono (*fúrno, fúro, fur, or* }
[*fóro*], } they were.

I was ;
thou wast ;
he, she, or it was ;
we were ;
you were ;

Perfect-indefinite.

sóno státo, -a,
séi státo, -a,
è státo, -a,
siámo státi, -e,
siéte státi, -e,
sóno státi, -e,

I have been ;
thou hast been ;
he, she, or it has been ;
we have been ;
you have been ;
they have been.

Pluperfect-definite.

fui státo, -a,
fosti státo, -a,
fu státo, -a,
fummo státi, -e,
foste státi, -e,
furono státi, -e,

I had been ;
thou hadst been ;
he, she, or it had been ;
we had been ;
you had been ;
they had been.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

éra státo, -a,
éri státo, -a,
éra státo, -a,
eravamo státi, -e,
eravate státi, -e,
erano státi, -e,

I had been ;
thou hadst been ;
he, she, or it had been ;
we had been ;
you had been ;
they had been.

Future-indefinite.

sarò (fia),	I shall or will be ;
sarai,	thou shalt or wilt be ;
sarà (fia),	he, she, or it shall or will be ;
saremo,	we shall or will be ;
sarete,	you shall or will be ;
saranno (fiano or fieno),	they shall or will be.

Future-definite.

sarò stato, -a,	I shall or will have been ;
sarai stato, -a,	thou shalt or wilt have been ;
sarà stato, -a,	he, she, or it shall or will [have been ;
saremo stati, -e,	we shall or will have been ;
sarete stati, -e,	you shall or will have been
saranno stati, -e,	they shall or will have been.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

sarei (saria, fora),	I should, would, or could be ;
saresti,	[or might be ;
sarebbe (saria, fora),	thou shouldst, wouldst, or [couldst be ; &c.
saremmo,	he, she, or it should, would, [or could be ; &c.
saresté,	we should, would, or could [be ; &c.
sarebbero (sariano or sa- rieno, forano),	you should, would, or could [be ; &c.
	they should, would, or could [be ; &c.

Past.

*saréi státo, -a,**sarésti státo, -a,**sarébbe státo, -a,**sarénmo státi, -e,**saréste státi, -e,**sarébbero státi, -e,*

{ I should, would, or could
[have been; or might
[have been;
thou shouldst, wouldst, or
[couldst have been; &c.
he, she, or it should, would;
[or could have been; &c.
we should, would, or could
[have been; &c.
you should, would, or could
[have been; &c.
they should, would, or could
[have been; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

*sii or sia,**sia,**siámo,**siáte,**stano or steno,*

be thou;
let him, her, or it be;
let us be;
be ye;
let them be.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present,

*sia,**sti or stá,**stá,**siámo,**siáte,**stano or steno,*

that I be; or may be;
that thou be; &c.
that he, she, or it be; &c.
that we be; &c.
that you be; &c.
that they be; &c.

Imperfect:

*fóssi,**fóssi,**fósse,*

if I were; or should be;
if thou wert; &c.
if he, she, or it were; &c.

fóssimo,
fóste,
fóssero,

if we were ; &c.
if you were ; &c.
if they were ; &c.

śia státo, -a,

that I have been ; or may
[have been ;

śti státo, -a,
śta státo, -a,

that thou hast been ; &c.
that he, she, or it has been ;
[&c.

śiámo státi, -e,
śiáte státi, -e,
śiáno státi, -e,

that we have been ; &c.
that you have been ; &c.
that they have been ; &c.

Pluperfect.

fóssi státo, -a,
fósti státo, -a,
fósse státo, -a,
fóssima státi, -e,
fóste státi, -e,
fóssero státi, -e,

if I had been ;
if thou hadst been ;
if he, she, or it had been ;
if we had been ;
if you had been ;
if they had been.

Of Regular Verbs.

Variation of Active Verbs.

Active verbs in the compound tenses are varied with the auxiliary verb *avére*, to have.

First Conjugation.

Variation of the verb *amáre*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *áre*.)

ANALOGY:

INFINITIVE:

*Present.**am-áre,*

to love.

*Past.**avére amáto,*

to have loved.

*Future.**avére ad amáre, or
éssere per amáre,*to have to love, or
to be about to love.

GERUND.

*Present.**am-úndo,*

loving.

*Past.**avéndo amáto,*

having loved.

PARTICIPLE.

*Present.**am-únte*

loving.

*Past.**am-úto, am-úta, }
am-úti, am-úte, }*

loved.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**ám-o,*I love ; or do love ; or am
[loving ;*ám-i,*

thou lovest ; &c.

ám-a,

he, she, or it loves ; &c.

am-iámo,

we love ; &c.

am-áte,

you love ; &c.

ám-ano,

they love ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>am-áva,</i>	I loved ; <i>or</i> did love ; <i>or</i> was [loving ;
<i>am-ávi,</i>	thou lovedst ; &c.
<i>am-áva,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it loved ; &c.
<i>am-avámo,</i>	we loved ; &c.
<i>am-aváte,</i>	you loved ; &c.
<i>am-ávano,</i>	they loved ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>am-ái,</i>	I loved ; <i>or</i> did love ;
<i>am-ásti,</i>	thou lovedst ; &c.
<i>am-ò,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it loved ; &c.
<i>am-ámmo,</i>	we loved ; &c.
<i>am-áste,</i>	you loved ; &c.
<i>am-árono (am-áro or am-ár),</i>	they loved ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

<i>ò amáto,</i>	I have loved ;
<i>ài amáto,</i>	thou hast loved ;
<i>ò amáto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it has loved ;
<i>abbiamo amáto,</i>	we have loved ;
<i>avéte amáto,</i>	you have loved ;
<i>anno amáto,</i>	they have loved.

Pluperfect-definite.

<i>ébbi amáto,</i>	I had loved ;
<i>avésti amáto,</i>	thou hadst loved ;
<i>ebbe amáto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it had loved ;
<i>avémmo amáto,</i>	we had loved ;
<i>avéste amáto,</i>	you had loved ;
<i>ebbero amáto,</i>	they had loved.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

<i>avéva am-áto,</i>	I had loved ;
<i>avévi am-áto,</i>	thou hadst loved ;
<i>avéva am-áto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it had loved ;

avevamo amato,
avevate amato,
avevano amato,

we had loved ;
 you had loved ;
 they had loved.

Future-indefinite.

am-erò,
am-erai,
am-erà,
am-eremo,
am-erete,
am-eranno,

I shall *or* will love ;
 thou shalt *or* wilt love ;
 he, she, *or* it shall *or* will love ;
 we shall *or* will love ;
 you shall *or* will love ;
 they shall *or* will love.

Future-definite.

avrò amato,
avrà amato,
avrà amato,

I shall *or* will have loved ;
 thou shalt *or* wilt have loved ;
 he, she, *or* it shall *or* will
 [have loved ;

avrèmo amato,
avrète amato,
avranno amato,

we shall *or* will have loved ;
 you shall *or* will have loved ;
 they shall *or* will have loved.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

am-eréi (am-eria),

I should, would, *or* could
 [love ; *or* might love ;
 thou shouldst, wouldst, *or*
 [couldst love ; &c.

am-erésti,

he, she, *or* it should, would,
 [or could love ; &c.

am-erèbbe (am-eria),

we should, would, *or* could
 [love ; &c.

am-erèmmo,

you should, would, *or* could
 [love ; &c.

am-erèste,

they should, would, *or* could
 [love ; &c.

am-erèbbero (am-eriano,
 [am-erieno),

they should, would, *or* could
 [love ; &c.

Past.

avrèi amáto,
avrèsti amáto,
avrèbbe amáto,
avrèmmo amáto,
avrèste amáto,
avrèbbero amáto,

{ I should, would, or could
 have loved; or might
 [have loved;
 thou shouldst, wouldst, or
 [couldst have loved; &c.
 he, she, or it should, would;
 [or could have loved; &c.
 we should, would, or could
 [have loved; &c.
 you should, would, or could
 [have loved; &c.
 they should, would, or could
 [have loved; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

ám-a,
ám-i,
am-ámo,
am-áte,
ám-ino,

love thou;
 let him, her, or it love;
 let us love;
 love ye;
 let them love.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

ám-i (ám-e),
ám-i,
ám-i (ám-e),
am-ámo,
am-áte,
ám-ino,

that I love; or may love;
 that thou lovest; &c.
 that he, she, or it loves; &c.
 that we love; &c.
 that you love; &c.
 that they love; &c.

Imperfect.

am-ássi,
am-ássi,
am-ásse,

if I loved; or should love;
 if thou lovedst; &c.
 if he, she, or it loved; &c.

am-ássimo,
am-áste,
am-ássero,

if we loved ; &c.
if you loved ; &c.
if they loved ; &c.

Perfect.

ábbia amáto,

that I have loved ; or may
[have loved ;

ábbi amáto,
ábbia amáto,

that thou hast loved ; &c.
that he, she, or it has loved ;
[&c.

abbíamo amáto,
abbiate amáto,
abbiamo amáto,

that we have loved ; &c.
that you have loved ; &c.
that they have loved ; &c.

Pluperfect.

avéssi amáto,
avéssi amáto,
avésse amáto,
avéssimo amáto,
avéste amáto,
avéssero amáto,

if I had loved ;
if thou hadst loved ;
if he, she, or it had loved ;
if we had loved ;
if you had loved ;
if they had loved.

Verbs ending in *cáre, gáre*, in order to preserve the hard sound of *c, g*, throughout the conjugation, take an *h* after those consonants whenever they precede *e, i*.

Variation of the verb *cercáre*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *cáre*.)

*INFINITIVE:**Present.*

cercáre,

to search.

Past.

avére cercáto, to have searched.

Futura.

avérs a cercáre, or to have to search, or
éssere per cercáre, to be about to search.

GERUND.

Present.

cerc-ándo, searching.

Past.

avéndo cercáto, having searched.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

cerc-ánte, searching.

Past.

*cerc-áto, cerc-áta, }
cerc-áti, cerc-áte, }* searched.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

cerc-o, I search; or do search; or
[am searching;
cérch-i, thou searchest; &c.
cérc-a, he, she, or it searchest; &c.
cérch-iámo, we search; &c.
cerc-áte, you search; &c.
cérc-ano, they search; &c.

Imperfect.

cerc-áva, &c. I searched; did search; or
[was searching; &c.

*Perfect-definite.**cerc-ái, &c.*I searched ; or did search ;
[&c.*Perfect-indefinite.**ó cercáto, &c.*

I have searched ; &c.

*Pluperfect-definite.**ébbi cercáto, &c.*

I had searched ; &c.

*Pluperfect-indefinite.**avéva cercáto, &c.*

I had searched ; &c.

*Future-indefinite.**cerch-ero,**cérch-erái,**cerch-eró,*I shall or will search ;
thou shalt or wilt search ;
he, she, or it shall or will
[search ;*cerch-éremo,**cerch-eréte,**cerch-eránnó,*we shall or will search ;
you shall or will search ;
they shall or will search.*Future-definite.**ávóó cercáto, &c.*I shall or will have search-
[ed ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

*Present.**cerch-eréi (cerch-ería),**cerch-erésti,**cerch-erébbe (cerch-ería),*I should, would, or could
[search ; or might search ;
thou shouldst, wouldst, or
[couldst search ; &c.
he, she, or it should, would,
[or could search ; &c.

<i>cerch-erémmo,</i>	we should, would, or could
<i>cerch-eréste,</i>	[search; &c.
<i>cerch-erébbéro (cerch-eréano,</i>	you should, would, or could
<i>cerch-eréano),</i>	[search; &c.
	they should, would, or could
	[search; &c.

Past.

<i>avrei cercato, &c.</i>	{ I should, -would, or could	
		[have searched; or might
		[have searched; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>cerch-a,</i>	search thou;
<i>cerch-i,</i>	let him, her, or it search;
<i>cerch-iámo,</i>	let us search;
<i>cerch-áte,</i>	search ye;
<i>cerch-ino,</i>	let them search.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>cerch-i (cerch-é),</i>	that I search; or may search;
<i>cerch-i,</i>	that thou searchest;
<i>cerch-i (cerch-e),</i>	that he, she, or it searches;
	[&c.
<i>cerch-iámo,</i>	that we search; &c.
<i>cerch-áte,</i>	that you search; &c.
<i>cerch-ino,</i>	that they search; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>cerch-assi, &c.</i>	if I searched; or should
	[search; &c.

Perfect.

<i>abbia cercato, &c.</i>	that I have searched; or
	[may have searched; &c.

*Pluperfect.**avessi cercato, &c.*

if I had searched; &c.

Variation of the verb *pregare*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gare*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**preg-are,*

to entreat.

*Past.**avere pregato,*

to have entreated.

*Future.**avere a pregare, or
essere per pregare,*to have to entreat, or
to be about to entreat.

GERUND.

*Present:**preg-ando,*

entreating.

*Past.**avendo pregato,*

having entreated,

PARTICIPLE.

*Present.**preg-ante,*

entreating.

Past.

*preg-úto, preg-úta, }
preg-úti, preg-úte, }* entreated.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

preg-o, I entreat; *or* do entreat; *or*
[am entreating;
prégh-i, thou entreatest; &c.
prég-a, he, she, *or* it entreats; &c.
pregh-idmo, we entreat; &c.
preg-áte, you entreat; &c.
prég-ano, they entreat; &c.

Imperfect.

preg-áva, &c. I entreated; *or* did entreat;
[*or* was entreating; &c.

Perfect-definite.

preg-ái, &c. I entreated; *or* did entreat;
[&c.

Perfect-indefinite.

ò pregáto, &c. I have entreated; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

èbbi pregáto, &c. I had entreated; &c.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva pregáto, &c. I had entreated; &c.

Future-indefinite.

pregh-erò, I shall *or* will entreat;
pregh-erái, thou shalt *or* wilt entreat;
pregh-erá, he, she, *or* it shall *or* will en-
[treat;

pregħ-erémo, we shall *or* will entreat ;
pregħ-eréte, you shall *or* will entreat ;
pregħ-eránno, they shall *or* will entreat.

Future-definite.

avrò pregáto, &c. I shall *or* will have entreat-
 [ed ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

pregħ-eréi (pregħ-ería), I should, would, *or* could en-
 [treat ; *or* might entreat ;
pregħ-erésti, thou shouldst, wouldst, *or*
 [couldst entreat ; &c.
pregħ-erébbe (pregħ-ería), he, she, *or* it should, would,
 [or could entreat ; &c.
pregħ-erémmo, we should, would, *or* could
 [entreat ; &c.
pregħ-eréste, you should, would, *or* could
 [entreat ; &c.
pregħ-erébbero (pregħ-erí- } they should, would, or could
[ano, pregħ-eríeno), } [entreat ; &c.

Past.

avréi pregáto, &c. { I should, would, *or* could
 [have entreated ; *or* might
 [have entreated ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

prég-a, entreat thou ;
prégh-i, let him, her, *or* it entreat ;
pregħ-iámo, let us entreat ;
preg-áte, entreat ye ;
prégh-ino, let them entreat ;

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>prégh-i</i> (<i>prégh-e</i>),	that I entreat ; <i>or</i> may en- [treat ;
<i>prégh-i</i> ,	that thou entreatest ; &c.
<i>prégh-i</i> (<i>prégh-e</i>),	that he, she, <i>or</i> it entreats ; [&c.
<i>pregh-iámo</i> ,	that we entreat ; &c.
<i>pregh-iáte</i> ,	that you entreat ; &c.
<i>prégh-ino</i> ,	that they entreat ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>preg-ássi</i> , &c.	if I entreated ; <i>or</i> should [entreat ; &c.
------------------------	---

Perfect.

<i>ábbia pregáto</i> , &c.	that I have entreated ; <i>or</i> [may have entreated ; &c.
----------------------------	--

Pluperfect.

<i>avéssi pregáto</i> , &c.	if I had entreated ; &c.
-----------------------------	--------------------------

Second Conjugation.

The verbs of this conjugation are commonly divided into two classes, those ending in *ére* (accented), and those ending in *ere* (unaccented): both of which in the *perfect-definite* have two terminations, *éi* and *étti* ; except a few which have the termination *éi* only.

Variation of the verb *temére*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ére*, accented.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>tem-ére</i> ,	to fear.
------------------	----------

*Past.**avére temúto,*

to have feared.

*Future.**avére a temére, or
éssere per temére,*to have to fear, or
to be about to fear.

GERUND.

*Present.**tem-éndo,*

fearing.

*Past.**avéndo temúto,*

having feared.

PARTICIPLE.

*Present.**tem-énte,*

fearing.

*Past.**tem-úto, tem-úta, }
tem-úti, tem-úte, }*

feared.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**tém-o,*I fear ; or do fear ; or am
[fearing ;*tém-i,*

thou fearest ; &c.

tém-e,

he, she, or it, fears ; &c.

tem-iámo,

we fear ; &c.

tem-éte,

you fear ; &c.

tém-ono,

they fear ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>tem-éva</i> or <i>tem-éa</i> ,	I feared ; or did fear ; or was [fearing ;
<i>tem-évi</i> ,	thou fearedst ; &c.
<i>tem-éva</i> or <i>tem-éa</i> ,	he, she, or it feared ; &c.
<i>tem-evámo</i> ,	we feared ; &c.
<i>tem-eváte</i> ,	you feared ; &c.
<i>tem-évano</i> or <i>tem-éano</i> ,	they feared ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>tem-éi</i> or <i>tem-étti</i> ,	I feared ; or did fear ;
<i>tem-ésti</i> ,	thou fearedst ; &c.
<i>tem-è</i> or <i>tem-étte</i> ,	he, she, or it feared ; &c.
<i>tem-émmo</i> ,	we feared ; &c.
<i>tem-éste</i> ,	you feared ; &c.
<i>tem-érono</i> or <i>tem-étero</i> ,	they feared ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

<i>ò temúto</i> ,	I have feared ;
<i>ài temúto</i> ,	thou hast feared ;
<i>à temúto</i> ,	he, she, or it has feared ;
<i>abbiamo temúto</i> ,	we have feared ;
<i>avéte temúto</i> ,	you have feared ;
<i>anno temúto</i> ,	they have feared.

Pluperfect-definite.

<i>ébbi temúto</i> ,	I had feared ;
<i>avésti temúto</i> ,	thou hadst feared ;
<i>ébbe temúto</i> ,	he, she, or it had feared ;
<i>avémmo temúto</i> ,	we had feared ;
<i>avéste temúto</i> ,	you had feared ;
<i>ébbéro temúto</i> ,	they had feared.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

<i>avéva temúto,</i>	I had feared ;
<i>avévi temúto,</i>	thou hadst feared ;
<i>avéva temúto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it had feared ;
<i>avevámo temúto,</i>	we had feared ;
<i>aveváte temúto,</i>	you had feared ;
<i>avévano temúto,</i>	they had feared.

Future-indefinite.

<i>tem-erò,</i>	I shall <i>or</i> will fear ;
<i>tem-erái,</i>	thou shalt <i>or</i> wilt fear ;
<i>tem-erà,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it shall <i>or</i> will [fear ;
<i>tem-erémo,</i>	we shall <i>or</i> will fear ;
<i>tem-eréte,</i>	you shall <i>or</i> will fear ;
<i>tem-eránno,</i>	they shall <i>or</i> will fear.

Future-definite.

<i>avrò temúto,</i>	I shall <i>or</i> will have feared ;
<i>avrái temúto,</i>	thou shalt <i>or</i> wilt have fear- [ed ;
<i>avrà temúto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it shall <i>or</i> will [have feared ;
<i>avrémo temúto,</i>	we shall <i>or</i> will have feared ;
<i>avréte temúto,</i>	you shall <i>or</i> will have fear- [ed ;
<i>avránno temúto,</i>	they shall <i>or</i> will have fear- [ed.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>tem-eréi (tem-ería),</i>	I should, would, <i>or</i> could [fear ; <i>or</i> might fear ;
<i>tem-erésti,</i>	thou shouldst, wouldst, <i>or</i> [couldst fear ; &c.
<i>tem-erébbe (tem-ería),</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it should, would, [<i>or</i> could fear ; &c.

<i>tem-erémmo,</i>	we should, would, <i>or</i> could [fear ; &c.
<i>tem-eréste,</i>	you should, would, <i>or</i> could [fear ; &c.
<i>tem-erébbero,</i> (<i>tem-eriano,</i> [<i>tem-eríenó</i>),	they should, would, <i>or</i> could [fear ; &c.

Past.

<i>avréi temúto,</i>	} I should, would, <i>or</i> could [have feared ; <i>or</i> might [have feared ;
<i>avrésti temúto,</i>	
<i>avrébbe temúto,</i>	thou shouldst, wouldst, <i>or</i> [couldst have feared ; &c.
<i>avrénmo temúto,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it should, would, [<i>or</i> could have feared ; &c.
<i>avréste temúto,</i>	we should, would, <i>or</i> could [have feared ; &c.
<i>avrébbero temúto,</i>	you should, would, <i>or</i> could [have feared ; &c.
<i>avrébbero temúto,</i>	they should, would, <i>or</i> could [have feared ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>tém-i,</i>	fear thou ;
<i>tém-a,</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it fear ;
<i>tem-iámo,</i>	let us fear ;
<i>tem-éte,</i>	fear ye ;
<i>tém-ano,</i>	let them fear.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>tém-a,</i>	that I fear ; <i>or</i> may fear ;
<i>tém-a or tém-i,</i>	that thou fearest ; &c.
<i>tém-a,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it fears ; &c.

tem-iámo,
tem-iáte,
tém-ano,

that we fear ; &c.
that you fear ; &c.
that they fear ; &c.

Imperfect.

tem-éssi,
tem-éssi,
tem-ésse,
tem-éssimo,
tem-éste,
tem-éssero,

if I feared ; *or* should fear ;
if thou fearedst ; &c.
if he, she, *or* it feared ; &c.
if we feared ; &c.
if you feared ; &c.
if they feared ; &c.

Perfect.

ábbia temúto,
ábbi temúto,
ábbia temúto,

that I have feared ; *or* may
[have feared ;
that thou hast feared ; &c.
that he, she, *or* it has feared ;
[&c.

abbiámo temúto,
abbiáte tem-úto,
ábbiano tem-úto,

that we have feared ; &c.
that you have feared ; &c.
that they have feared ; &c.

Pluperfect.

avéssi temúto,
avéssi temúto,
avésse temúto,
avéssimo temúto,
avéste temúto,
avéssero temúto,

if I had feared ;
if thou hadst feared ;
if he, she, *or* it had feared ;
if we had feared ;
if you had feared ;
if they had feared.

Variation of the verb *credere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ere*, unaccented.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

cred-ere, to believe.

Past.

avére credúto, to have believed.

Future.

avére a credere, or to have to believe, or
éssere per credere, to be about to believe.

GERUND.

Present.

cred-éndo, believing.

Past.

avéndo credúto, having believed.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

cred-éndo, believing.

Past.

cred-úto, cred-úta, }
cred-úti, cred-úte, } believed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

cred-o, &c. { I believe ; or do believe ;
[or am believing ; &c.

Imperfect.

cred-éva or *cred-éa* (*cred-* } I believed ; or did believe ;
[*ia*), } [or was believing ;
cred-évi, } thou believedst ; &c.
cred-éva or *cred-éa,* } he, she, or it believed ;
[&c.

cred-evámo, } we believed ; &c.
cred-eváte, } you believed ; &c.
cred-évamo or *cred-éano,* } they believed ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

cred-éi or *cred-étti,* } I believed ; or did believe ;
cred-ésti, } thou believedst ; &c.
cred-è or *cred-éte* (*cred-éo*), } he, she, or it believed ; &c.
cred-émmo, } we believed ; &c.
cred-éste, } you believed ; &c.
cred-érono or *cred-éttero* } they believed ; &c.
(*cred-éro*), }

Perfect-indefinite.

ò credúto, &c. } I have believed ; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

ébbi credúto, &c. } I had believed ; &c.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva credúto, &c. } I had believed ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

cred-erò, &c. I shall *or* will believe ; &c.

Future-definite.

avrò credúto, &c. I shall *or* will have believ-
[ed ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

cred-eréi (cred-ería), &c. { I should, would, *or* could be-
[lieve ; *or* might believe ;
[&c.

Past.

avréi credúto, &c. { I should, would, *or* could
[have believed ; *or* might
[have believed ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

cred-i, &c. believe thou ; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

cred-a, &c. that I believe ; *or* may be-
lieve ; &c.

Imperfect.

cred-éssi, &c. if I believed ; *or* should be-
lieve ; &c.

Perfect.

ábbia credúto, &c. that I have believed ; *or* may
[have believed ; &c.

*Pluperfect.**avéssi credúto, &c.*

if I had believed ; &c.

Variation of the verb *téssere*.(Paradigm of those verbs of the second conjugation which in the *perfect-definite* end in *éi* only.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**téss-ere,*

to weave.

*Past.**avére tessúto,*

to have woven.

*Future.**avére a téssere, or
éssere per téssere,*to have to weave, or
to be about to weave.

GERUND.

*Present.**tess-éndo,*

weaving.

*Past.**avéndo tessúto,*

having woven.

PARTICIPLE.

*Present.**tess-énte,*

weaving.

Past.

tess-úto (tés-to), *tess-úta* (tés-ta), }
tess-úti (tés-ti), *tess-úte* (tés-te), } WOVEN.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

téss-o, &c. I weave ; or do weave ; or
 [am weaving ; &c.

Imperfect.

tess-éva or *tess-éa*, &c. I wove ; or did weave ; or
 [was weaving.

Perfect-definite.

<i>tess-éi</i> ,	I wove ; or did weave ;
<i>tess-ésti</i> ,	thou wovest ; &c.
<i>tess-è</i> (tess-éó),	he, she, or it wove ; &c.
<i>tess-émmo</i> ,	we wove ; &c.
<i>tess-éste</i> ,	you wove ; &c.
<i>tess-érono</i> (tess-éro),	they wove ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

ò tessúto, &c. I have woven, &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

ébbi tessúto, &c. I had woven ; &c.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva tessúto, &c. I had woven ; &c.

ANALOGY.

*Future-indefinite.**tess-erò, &c.*I shall *or* will weave ; &c.*Future-definite.**avrò tessúto, &c.*I shall *or* will have woven ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

*Present.**tess-eréi (tess-eríá), &c.* I should, would, *or* could
[weave ; *or* might weave ; &c.*Past.**avréi tessúto, &c.*I should, would, *or* could have
[woven ; *or* might have wov-
[en ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

téss-i, &c.

weave thou ; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

*Present.**téss-a, &c.*that I weave ; *or* may weave ; &c.*Imperfect.**tess-éssi, &c.*if I wove ; *or* should weave ;
[&c.*Perfect.**ábbia tessúto, &c.*that I have woven ; *or* may
[have woven ; &c.

Plusperfect.

avéssi tessúto, &c.

if I had woven ; &c.

Verbs ending in *cére, scére*, in the *past-participle* take an *i* between the *c* and the vowel *u* ; as, *piacére*, to please ; *piaciúto*, pleased ; *páscere*, to feed ; *pasciúto*, fed.

Regular verbs of the second conjugation, that in the perfect-definite have the termination éi only.

<i>abbáttere,</i>	to beat down ;
<i>abáttersi,</i>	to meet with ;
<i>accédere,</i>	to approach ;
<i>adémpiere,</i>	to fulfil ;
<i>annéttere,</i>	to annex ;
<i>cédere,</i>	to yield ;
<i>cérnere,</i>	to sift ;
<i>combáttere,</i>	to combat ;
<i>compétere,</i>	to rival ;
<i>cómpiere,</i>	to accomplish ;
<i>concédere,</i>	to grant ;
<i>concernere,</i>	to concern ;
<i>connéttere,</i>	to connect ;
<i>contéssere,</i>	to interlace ;
<i>concupíscere,</i>	to covet ;
<i>dibáttere,</i>	to debate ;
<i>discérnere,</i>	to discern ;
<i>discéndere,</i>	to rip ;
<i>distéssere,</i>	to unweave ;
<i>émpiere,</i>	to fill up ;
<i>esigere,</i>	to exact ;
<i>esimere,</i>	to exempt ;
<i>féndere,</i>	to split ;
<i>férvere,</i>	to be fervent ;

<i>fiédere,</i>	to wound ;
<i>fóndere,</i>	to melt ;
<i>incómbere,</i>	to be incumbent ;
<i>intercédere,</i>	to intercede ;
<i>intéssere,</i>	to twine ;
<i>méscere,</i>	to mix ;
<i>miétere,</i>	to mow ;
<i>páscere,</i>	to feed ;
<i>péntere,</i>	to repent ;
<i>precédere,</i>	to precede ;
<i>prescéndere,</i>	to cut off ;
<i>procédere,</i>	to proceed ;
<i>rabbáttersi,</i>	to meet again ;
<i>récere,</i>	to vomit ;
<i>rescéndere,</i>	to rescind ;
<i>retrocédere,</i>	to go back ;
<i>ribáttere,</i>	to beat back again ;
<i>ricómpiere,</i>	to accomplish again ;
<i>riémpiere,</i>	to fill up again ;
<i>rilúcere,</i>	to shine ;
<i>ripáscere,</i>	to feed again ;
<i>ripétere,</i>	to repeat ;
<i>rifléttere,</i>	to reflect ;
<i>ritéssere,</i>	to weave again ;
<i>scérnere,</i>	to discern ;
<i>scéndere,</i>	to sever ;
<i>sconnéttere,</i>	to disconnect ;
<i>sérpere,</i>	to creep along ;
<i>sólvare,</i>	to solve ;
<i>strabáttere,</i>	to vex ;
<i>strépere,</i>	to bustle ;
<i>succédere,</i>	to succeed ;
<i>succómbere,</i>	to sink under ;
<i>súggere,</i>	to suck ;
<i>tépere,</i>	to be lukewarm ;
<i>téssere,</i>	to weave ;
<i>tóndere,</i>	to shear ;
<i>tórperere,</i>	to grow stiff ;
<i>tralúcere,</i>	to shine through.

The verbs *annettere, connettere, sconnettere* in the *past participle*, make *annesso, annexed*; *connesso, connected*; *sconnesso, disconnected*. *Esigere* makes *esatto, exacted*; *esimere, esento, exempted*; *rescindere, rescisso, cleft*; *riflettere, riflesso, reflected*; *scindere, scisso, severed*; and *solvere, soluto, solved*. The *past participles* of *fervere, fèdere, sérpere, strépere, tépere, tórpere*, are not in use. *Súggere* in its *past participle* borrows the participle *succhiato, sucked*, from the verb *succhiare, to suck*.

Some of these verbs, besides the regular, have also in some tenses an irregular formation; their different forms will be given with the *irregular verbs*.

Third Conjugation.

Of the verbs of this conjugation, some, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o*; some end in *isco*; and some have both of these terminations.

Variation of the verb *sentire*.

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, end in *o* only.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

sent-ire, to hear.

Past.

avére sent-ito, to have heard.

ANALOGY.

Future.

*avére a sentire, or
éssere per sentire,*

to have to hear, or
to be about to hear.

GERUND.

Present.

sent-éndo,

hearing,

Past.

avéndo sentíto,

having heard.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

(*sent-énte*),

hearing.

Past.

*sent-íto, sent-íta, }
sent-íti, sent-íte, }*

heard.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

sént-o,

I hear; or do hear; or am
[hearing;

sént-i,

thou hearest; &c.

sént-e,

he, she, or it hears; &c.

sent-idmo,

we hear; &c.

sent-íte,

you hear; &c.

sént-ono,

they hear; &c.

Imperfect.

sent-íva or sent-ía,

I heard; or did hear; or
[was hearing;

<i>sent-ívi,</i>	thou heardst ; &c.
<i>sent-íva</i> or <i>sent-ía,</i>	he, she, or it heard ; &c.
<i>sent-ivámo,</i>	we heard ; &c.
<i>sent-iváte,</i>	you heard ; &c.
<i>sent-ívano</i> or <i>sent-íamo,</i>	they heard ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>sent-í,</i>	I heard ; or did hear ;
<i>sent-ísti,</i>	thou heardst ; &c.
<i>sent-í</i> (<i>sent-ío</i>), ..	he, she, or it heard ; &c.
<i>sent-ímmo,</i>	we heard ; &c.
<i>sent-íste,</i>	you heard ; &c.
<i>sent-írono,</i>	they heard ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

<i>ò sentíto,</i>	I have heard ;
<i>ài sentíto,</i>	thou hast heard ;
<i>à sentíto,</i>	he, she, or it has heard ;
<i>abbíamo sentíto,</i>	we have heard ;
<i>avéte sentíto,</i>	you have heard ;
<i>ànno sentíto,</i>	they have heard.

Pluperfect-definite.

<i>ébbi sentíto,</i>	I had heard ;
<i>avésti sentíto,</i>	thou hadst heard ;
<i>ébbe sentíto,</i>	he, she, or it had heard ;
<i>avémmo sentíto,</i>	we had heard ;
<i>avéste sentíto,</i>	you had heard ;
<i>ébbéro sentíto,</i>	they had heard.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

<i>avéva sentíto,</i>	I had heard ;
<i>avévi sentíto,</i>	thou hadst heard ;
<i>avéva sentíto,</i>	he, she, or it had heard ;
<i>avevámo sentíto,</i>	we had heard ;
<i>aveváte sentíto,</i>	you had heard ;
<i>avévano sentíto,</i>	they had heard.

ANALOGY.

Future-indefinite.

sent-irò,
sent-irái,
sent-irà,

I shall *or* will hear ;
thou shalt *or* wilt hear ;
he, she, *or* it shall *or* will
[hear ;

sent-irémo,
sent-iréte,
sent-iránno,

we shall *or* will hear ;
you shall *or* will hear ;
they shall *or* will hear.

Future-definite.

avrò sentitò,
avrái sentító,
avrà sentító,

I shall *or* will have heard ;
thou shalt *or* wilt have heard ;
he, she, *or* it shall *or* will
[have heard ;

avrémo sentító,
avréte sentító,
avránno sentító,

we shall *or* will have heard ;
you shall *or* will have heard ;
they shall *or* will have heard.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

sent-iréi (sent-iría),
sent-irésti,
sent-irébbe (sent-iría),

I should, would, *or* could
[hear ; *or* might hear.
thou shouldst, wouldst, *or*
[couldst hear ; &c.
he, she, *or* it should, would,
[*or* could hear ; &c.

sent-irémmo,
sent-iréste,
sent-irébbero (sent-iríano),

we should, would, *or* could
[hear ; &c.
you should, would, *or* could
[hear ; &c.
they should, would, *or* could
[hear ; &c.

Past.

avrei sentito,

avresti sentito,

avrebbe sentito,

avremmo sentito,

avreste sentito,

avrebbero sentito,

{ I should, would, or could
[have heard; or might
[have heard;
thou shouldst, wouldst, or
[couldst have heard; &c.
{ he, she, or it should, would,
[or could have heard;
[&c.
we should, would, or could
[have heard; &c.
you should, would, or could
[have heard; &c.
they should, would, or could
[have heard; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

sént-i,

sént-a,

sent-iámo,

sent-íte,

sént-ano,

hear thou;

let him, her, or it hear;

let us hear;

hear ye;

let them hear.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

sént-a,

sént-a or sént-i,

sént-a,

sent-iámo,

sent-iáte,

sént-ano,

that I hear; or may hear;

that thou hearest; &c.

that he, she, or it hears; &c.

that we hear; &c.

that you hear; &c.

that they hear; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>sent-issi,</i>	if I heard ; <i>or</i> should hear ;
<i>sent-issi,</i>	if thou heardst ; &c.
<i>sent-isse,</i>	if he, she, <i>or</i> it heard ; &c.
<i>sent-issimo,</i>	if we heard ;
<i>sent-iste,</i>	if you heard ; &c.
<i>sent-issero,</i>	if they heard ; &c.

Perfect.

<i>abbia sentito,</i>	that I have heard ; <i>or</i> may [have heard ;
<i>abbi sentito,</i>	that thou hast heard ; &c.
<i>abbia sentito,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it has heard ; [&c.
<i>abbiamo sentito,</i>	that we have heard ; &c.
<i>abbiate sentito,</i>	that you have heard ; &c.
<i>abbiano sentito,</i>	that they have heard ; &c.

Pluperfect.

<i>avéssi sentito,</i>	if I had heard ;
<i>avéssi sentito,</i>	if thou hadst heard ;
<i>avésse sentito,</i>	if he, she, <i>or</i> it had heard ;
<i>avéssimo sentito,</i>	if we had heard ;
<i>avéste sentito,</i>	if you had heard ;
<i>avéssero sentito,</i>	if they had heard.

Variation of the verb *esibire*.

(Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which, in the *present* of the *indicative*, have the termination *isco* only.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**esib-ire,*

to offer.

Past.

avére esibíto, to have offered.

Future.

*avére ad esibíre, or
éssere per esibíre,* to have to offer, or
to be about to offer.

GERUND.

Present.

esib-éndo, offering.

Past.

avéndo esibíto, having offered.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

esib-énte, offering.

Past.

*esib-íto, esib-íta, }
esib-íti, esib-íte, }* offered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>esib-íseo,</i>	I offer ; or do offer ; or am [offering ;
<i>esib-ísci,</i>	thou offerest ; &c.
<i>esib-ísce,</i>	he, she, or it offers ; &c.
<i>esib-íamo,</i>	we offer ; &c.
<i>esib-íte,</i>	you offer ; &c.
<i>esib-íscono,</i>	they offer ; &c.

Imperfect.

esib-tva or *esib-ta*, &c. I offered; or did offer; or
[was offering; &c.

Perfect-definite.

esib-ti, &c. I offered; or did offer; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

ð esibito, &c. I have offered; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

ébbi esibito, &c. I had offered; &c.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva esibito, &c. I had offered; &c.

Future-indefinite.

esib-irò, &c. I shall or will offer; &c.

Future-definite.

avrò esibito, &c. I shall or will have offered;
[&c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

esib-iréi (*esib-iría*), &c. I should, would, or could of-
[fer; or might offer; &c.

Past.

avréi esibito, &c. { I should, would, or could
[have offered; or might
[have offered; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>esib-isci,</i>	offer thou ;
<i>esib-isca,</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it offer ;
<i>esib-iámo,</i>	let us offer ;
<i>esib-íte,</i>	offer ye ;
<i>esib-íscono,</i>	let them offer.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>esib-isca,</i>	that I offer ; <i>or</i> may offer ;
<i>esib-isca</i> <i>or</i> <i>esib-íschi,</i>	that thou offerest ; &c.
<i>esib-isca,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it offers ; &c.
<i>esib-iámo,</i>	that we offer ; &c.
<i>esib-íte,</i>	that you offer ; &c.
<i>esib-íscano,</i>	that they offer ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>esib-íssi, &c.</i>	If I offered ; <i>or</i> should offer ; [&c.]
---------------------------	--

Perfect.

<i>ábbia esibíto, &c.</i>	that I have offered ; <i>or</i> may have offered ; &c.
-------------------------------	---

Pluperfect.

<i>avéssi esibíto, &c.</i>	If I had offered ; &c.
--------------------------------	------------------------

Variation of the verb *abborrire*.

Paradigm of those verbs of the third conjugation, which
in the *present* of the *indicative* end both in *o* and *isco*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>abborr-íre,</i>	to abhor.
--------------------	-----------

Past.

avére abborrito, to have abhorred.

Future.

*avére ad abborrire, or
éssere per abborrire,* to have to abhor, or
to be about to abhor.

GERUND.

Present.

abborr-éndo, abhorring.

Past.

avéndo abborrito, having abhorred.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

abborr-énte, abhorring.

Past.

*abborr-íto, abborr-íta, }
abborr-íti, abborr-íte, }* abhorred.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

abbórr-o or abborr-ísco, I abhor; or do abhor; or
[am abhorring;
abbórr-i or abborr-ísci, thou abhorrest; &c.
abbórr-e or abborr-ísce, he, she, or it abhors; &c.
abborr-íamo, we abhor; &c.
abborr-íte, you abhor; &c.
abbórr-ono or abborr-ísco- they abhor; &c.
[no,

Imperfect.

abborr-íva or *abborr-ta*, &c. I abhorred ; or did abhor ;
[or was abhorring ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

abborr-tí, &c. I abhorred ; or did abhor ;
[&c.

Perfect-indefinite.

ò abborrito, &c. I have abhorred ; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

ébbi abborrito, &c. I had abhorred ; &c.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva abborrito, &c. I had abhorred ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

abborr-irò, &c. I shall or will abhor ; &c.

Future-definite.

avrò abborrito, &c. I shall or will have abhor-
[red ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

abborr-iréi (*abborr-iría*), &c. { I should, would, or could
abhor ; or might abhor ;
[&c.

Past.

avréi abborrito, &c. { I should, would, or could
have abhorred ; or might
[have abhorred ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>abbórr-i</i> or <i>abborr-ísci</i> ,	abhor thou ;
<i>abbórr-a</i> or <i>abborr-ísca</i> ,	let him, her, or it abhor ;
<i>abbórr-iámo</i> ,	let us abhor ;
<i>abbórr-íte</i> ,	abhor ye ;
<i>abbórr-ano</i> or <i>abborr-íscano</i> ,	let them abhor.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>abbórr-a</i> or <i>abborr-ísca</i> ,	that I abhor ; or may abhor ;
<i>abbórr-a</i> or <i>abbórr-i</i> , or <i>ab-</i>	} that thou abhorrest ; &c.
[<i>borr-ísca</i> or <i>abborr-ísci</i> ,	
<i>abbórr-a</i> or <i>abborr-ísca</i> ,	that he, she, or it abhors ; &c.
<i>abbórr-iámo</i> ,	that we abhor ; &c.
<i>abbórr-iáte</i> ,	that you abhor ; &c.
<i>abbórr-ano</i> or <i>abborr-íscano</i> ,	that they abhor ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>abbórr-íssi</i> , &c.	if I abhorred ; or should ab- [hor ; &c.
--------------------------	---

Perfect.

<i>ábbia abbórríto</i> , &c.	that I have abhorred ; or may [have abhorred ; &c.
------------------------------	---

Pluperfect.

<i>avéssi abbórríto</i> , &c.	if I had abhorred ; &c.'
-------------------------------	--------------------------

Regular verbs of the third conjugation, that in the present of the indicative have the termination o only.

<i>addormire,</i>	to make sleep ;
<i>assentire,</i>	to assent ;
<i>consentire,</i>	to consent ;
<i>diservire,</i>	to serve ill ;
<i>dissentire,</i>	to dissent ;
<i>dormire,</i>	to sleep ;
<i>fuggire,</i>	to flee ;
<i>indormire,</i>	to make sleep ;
<i>partire,</i>	to depart ;
<i>pentire,</i>	to repent ;
<i>rifuggire,</i>	to flee to a place of refuge ;
<i>ripartire,</i>	to depart again ;
<i>risentire,</i>	to awake ;
<i>sconsentire</i>	to be of another opinion ;
<i>seguire,</i>	to follow ;
<i>sentire,</i>	to hear ;
<i>servire,</i>	to serve ;
<i>sfuggire,</i>	to avoid ;
<i>sortire,</i>	to go out ;
<i>vestire,</i>	to clothe.

Regular verbs of the third conjugation, that in the present of the indicative end in isco only.

<i>abbellire,</i>	to embellish ;
<i>abbonire,</i>	to improve ;
<i>abbrividire,</i>	to shiver ;
<i>abbronzire,</i>	to tan ;
<i>abbrostire,</i>	} to toast ;
<i>abbrostokire,</i>	
<i>abbrustire,</i>	
<i>abbrustolire,</i>	
<i>abbruttire,</i>	
<i>abolire,</i>	to grow ugly ;
<i>abolire,</i>	to abolish ;
<i>abortire,</i>	to miscarry ;
<i>accalorire,</i>	to warm ;
<i>accanire,</i>	to stir up to anger ;

<i>accolorire,</i>	to colour ;
<i>accudire,</i>	to assist ;
<i>acetire,</i>	to grow sour ;
<i>addolcire,</i>	to sweeten ;
<i>adempire,</i>	to accomplish ;
<i>aderire,</i>	to adhere ;
<i>affievolire,</i>	to weaken ;
<i>affortire,</i>	to strengthen ;
<i>affrakire,</i>	to weaken ;
<i>aggentilire,</i>	to become <i>or</i> make gentle ;
<i>aggrandire,</i>	to enlarge ;
<i>agguerrire,</i>	to train up in war ;
<i>agire,</i>	to act ;
<i>alleggerire,</i>	to ease ;
<i>allentire,</i>	to soften ;
<i>allestire,</i>	to get ready ;
<i>amarire,</i>	to imbitter ;
<i>ambire,</i>	to aspire with ambition ;
<i>ammanire,</i>	to prepare ;
<i>ammansire,</i>	to tame ;
<i>ammattire,</i>	to go distracted ;
<i>ammollire,</i>	to soften ;
<i>ammonire,</i>	to admonish ;
<i>ammorbidire,</i>	to soften ;
<i>ammortire,</i>	to quench ;
<i>ammutire,</i>	} to grow dumb ;
<i>ammutokire,</i>	
<i>anneghittire,</i>	to grow lazy ;
<i>annerire,</i>	to blacken ;
<i>annichilire,</i>	to annihilate ;
<i>annobilire,</i>	to ennoble ;
<i>apparire,</i>	to appear before ;
<i>appassire,</i>	to fade ;
<i>appetire,</i>	to desire ;
<i>appiccinnire,</i>	to diminish ;
<i>appigrire,</i>	to make lazy ;
<i>ardire,</i>	to dare ;
<i>arricchire,</i>	to enrich ;
<i>arrossire,</i>	to blush ;
<i>arrostitire,</i>	to roast ;

<i>arrozire,</i>	to make rough ;
<i>arrugginire,</i>	to grow rusty ;
<i>arruvidire,</i>	to grow rough ;
<i>assaltire,</i>	to attack ;
<i>assertire,</i>	to affirm ;
<i>assopire,</i>	to fall asleep ;
<i>assordire,</i>	to deafen ;
<i>assortire,</i>	to match ;
<i>assoggettire,</i>	to bring into subjection ;
<i>atterrire,</i>	to frighten ;
<i>attribuire,</i>	to attribute ;
<i>attristire,</i>	to grow worse and worse ;
<i>attutire,</i>	to quench ;
<i>avvilire,</i>	to debase ;
<i>avvizzire,</i>	to fade away ;
<i>balbutire,</i>	to stammer ;
<i>bandire,</i>	to banish ;
<i>bianchire,</i>	to whiten ;
<i>blandire,</i>	to flatter ;
<i>brandire,</i>	to brandish ;
<i>brunire,</i>	to burnish ;
<i>condire,</i>	to preserve (as in con- [serves ;)
<i>capire,</i>	to understand ;
<i>chiarire,</i>	to grow clear ;
<i>circuire,</i>	to environ,
<i>colorire,</i>	to colour ;
<i>colpire,</i>	to strike ;
<i>comparire,</i>	to appear before ;
<i>compartire,</i>	to grant ;
<i>compatire,</i>	to compassionate ;
<i>compire,</i>	to fulfil ;
<i>concepire,</i>	to conceive ;
<i>condire,</i>	to season ;
<i>conferire,</i>	to bestow ;
<i>costruire,</i>	to build ;
<i>contribuire,</i>	to contribute ;
<i>contrire,</i>	to be contrite ;
<i>constituire,</i>	to constitute ;
<i>costruire,</i>	to construct ;
<i>custodire,</i>	to guard ;

<i>deferire,</i>	to defer ;
<i>definire,</i>	to define ;
<i>demolire,</i>	to demolish ;
<i>dichiarire,</i>	to declare ;
<i>differire,</i>	to differ ;
<i>diffinire,</i>	to define ;
<i>digerire,</i>	to digest ;
<i>diminuire,</i>	to diminish ;
<i>disasprire,</i>	to mitigate ;
<i>disepellire,</i>	to unbury ;
<i>disfavorire,</i>	to oppose ;
<i>disfinire,</i>	to expound ;
<i>disfornire,</i>	to unfurnish ;
<i>disghiottire,</i>	to disgorge ;
<i>disgradire,</i>	to despise ;
<i>disimpedire,</i>	to clear the way for ;
<i>disparire,</i>	to disappear ;
<i>dispartire,</i>	to share ;
<i>disruvidire,</i>	to polish ;
<i>distribuire,</i>	to distribute ;
<i>disubbidire,</i>	to disobey ;
<i>disvigore,</i>	to weaken ;
<i>disunire,</i>	to disunite ;
<i>erudire,</i>	to instruct ;
<i>esaudire,</i>	to hear favorably ;
<i>esaurire,</i>	to exhaust ;
<i>esibire,</i>	to offer or present ;
<i>esinanire,</i>	to annihilate ;
<i>espedire,</i>	to despatch ;
<i>fallire,</i>	to fail ;
<i>fastidire,</i>	to molest ;
<i>favorire,</i>	to favour ;
<i>finire,</i>	to finish ;
<i>fiore,</i>	to flourish ;
<i>fluire,</i>	to flow ;
<i>fornire,</i>	to furnish ;
<i>garantire,</i>	to warrant ;
<i>garrire,</i>	to chide ;
<i>gemire,</i>	to groan ;
<i>gentilire,</i>	to ennoble ;
<i>gestire,</i>	to make gestures ;

<i>ghermire,</i>	to gripe ;
<i>giotre,</i>	to enjoy ;
<i>gradire,</i>	to like ;
<i>grancire,</i>	to hook ;
<i>granire,</i>	to go to seed ;
<i>gremire,</i>	to snatch ;
<i>grugnire,</i>	to grunt ;
<i>guatre,</i>	to wail ;
<i>gualcire,</i>	to touch often ;
<i>guarire,</i>	to cure ;
<i>guarnire,</i>	to furnish ;
<i>illaidire,</i>	to grow ugly ;
<i>illanguidire,</i>	to languish ;
<i>illiquidire,</i>	to turn liquid ;
<i>imbaldanzire,</i>	} to grow bold ;
<i>imbaldire,</i>	
<i>imbalsimire,</i>	to become balsam ;
<i>imbandire,</i>	to serve up a dinner ;
<i>imbarberire,</i>	to grow cruel ;
<i>imbarbogire,</i>	to dote through old age ;
<i>imbastardire,</i>	to degenerate ;
<i>imbastire,</i>	to baste ;
<i>imbellire,</i>	to embellish ;
<i>imbestialire,</i>	to grow brutal ;
<i>imbianchire,</i>	to whiten ;
<i>imbiondire,</i>	to make <i>or</i> grow fair ;
<i>imbizzarrire,</i>	to fall into a violent passion ;
<i>imbolsire,</i>	to grow pury ;
<i>imbonire,</i>	to grow better ;
<i>imbottire,</i>	to quilt ;
<i>imbozzacchire,</i>	to grow worse and worse ;
<i>imbriccontire,</i>	to grow knavish ;
<i>imbrunire,</i>	to grow brown <i>or</i> dark ;
<i>imbruschire,</i>	to grow tart ;
<i>imbruttire,</i>	to grow ugly ;
<i>immagrire,</i>	to grow lean ;
<i>immalincontire,</i>	to grow melancholy ;
<i>immalsanire,</i>	to grow unhealthy ;
<i>immaltavagire,</i>	to grow wicked ;
<i>immarcire,</i>	to rot ;

<i>immattire,</i>	to become foolish ;
<i>impadronire,</i>	to make one's self master of ;
<i>impallidire,</i>	to turn pale ;
<i>impaurire,</i>	to affright ;
<i>impazientire,</i>	to grow impatient ;
<i>impedire,</i>	to hinder ;
<i>impervertire,</i>	to become perverse ;
<i>impiantire,</i>	to pave ;
<i>impiccolire,</i>	to lessen ;
<i>impidocchire,</i>	to grow lousy ;
<i>impigrire,</i>	to grow lazy ;
<i>impoltronire,</i>	to grow rotten ;
<i>imporrire,</i>	to imposthume ;
<i>impostemire,</i>	to importune ;
<i>importunire,</i>	to grow poor ;
<i>impooverire,</i>	to prosper ;
<i>improsperire,</i>	to quilt ;
<i>impuntire,</i>	to become putrid ;
<i>imputridire,</i>	to stink ;
<i>impuzzolire,</i>	
<i>inacerbire,</i>	to grow sour ;
<i>inacetire,</i>	
<i>inacidire,</i>	
<i>inacutire,</i>	to make sharp, <i>or</i> sharpen ;
<i>inagrire,</i>	to grow sour ;
<i>invalidire,</i>	to become dry ;
<i>inanimire,</i>	to animate ;
<i>inavidire,</i>	to grow dry ;
<i>inasinire,</i>	to become stupid as an ass ;
<i>inasprire,</i>	to exasperate ;
<i>inavarire,</i>	to become avaricious ;
<i>incagnire,</i>	to become enraged ;
<i>incallire,</i>	to grow hard ;
<i>incalvire,</i>	to grow bald ;
<i>incancherire,</i>	to fester ;
<i>incanutire,</i>	to turn grey ;
<i>incaparbire,</i>	to be obstinate ;
<i>incapocchire,</i>	to become stupid ;
<i>incapontre,</i>	to grow obstinate ;
<i>incapricciare,</i>	to fall in love ;

<i>incarnire,</i>	to grow into the flesh ;
<i>incarognire,</i>	to become carrion ;
<i>incatarrire,</i>	to catch cold ;
<i>incatorzolare,</i>	to blast ;
<i>incattivire,</i>	to grow wicked ;
<i>incenerire,</i>	to burn to ashes ;
<i>incerconire,</i>	to turn sour ;
<i>inciprignire,</i>	to grow angry ;
<i>inciviltire,</i>	to grow polite ;
<i>incodardire,</i>	to grow faint-hearted ;
<i>incollerire,</i> }	to fall in a passion ;
<i>incollorire,</i> }	
<i>incoragire,</i>	to encourage ;
<i>incrudedire,</i>	to grow cruel ;
<i>incrudire,</i>	to irritate ;
<i>indebolire,</i>	to weaken ;
<i>indociltire,</i>	to become indocile ;
<i>indolcire,</i>	to grow sweet ;
<i>indolentire,</i> }	to grow numb ;
<i>indolenzire,</i> }	
<i>indurire,</i>	to grow hard ;
<i>inerire,</i>	to inhere ;
<i>infarcire,</i>	to stuff ;
<i>infastidire,</i>	to trouble ;
<i>infellontire,</i>	to become wicked ;
<i>infemminire,</i>	to grow effeminate ;
<i>inferire,</i>	to infer ;
<i>inferocire,</i>	to grow fierce ;
<i>inferoorire,</i>	to inflame with fervor ;
<i>infiacchire,</i>	to grow weak ;
<i>infiavolare,</i>	to become feeble ;
<i>infiangardire,</i>	to grow lazy ;
<i>infistolire,</i>	to turn to a fistula ;
<i>influire,</i>	to influence ;
<i>infolire,</i>	to grow mad ;
<i>infortire,</i>	to strengthen ;
<i>infracidire,</i>	to rot ;
<i>infragilire,</i> }	to grow weak ;
<i>infrakire,</i> }	
<i>infrigidire,</i>	to become cold ;

<i>ingagliardire,</i>	to grow brisk and strong ;
<i>ingelosire,</i>	to grow jealous ;
<i>ingentilire,</i>	to grow delicate ;
<i>ingerirsi,</i>	to meddle ;
<i>ingiallire,</i>	to grow yellow ;
<i>ingiovanire,</i>	to grow young again ;
<i>ingobbire,</i>	to grow crooked ;
<i>ingrandire,</i>	to grow large ;
<i>inlividire,</i>	to grow livid ;
<i>innacerbire,</i>	to grow acid ;
<i>innagrestire,</i>	to grow sour ;
<i>innanimire,</i>	to encourage ;
<i>inaridire,</i>	to grow dry ;
<i>innasprire,</i>	to exasperate ; [any thing ;
<i>innuzzolare,</i>	to awake an eagerness for
<i>inorgogliare,</i>	to make or grow proud ;
<i>inorridire,</i>	to shiver with horror ;
<i>inquerire,</i>	to inquire ;
<i>inquisire,</i>	to impeach ;
<i>inretire,</i>	to catch with a net ;
<i>inricchire,</i>	to enrich ;
<i>inrigidire,</i>	to grow rigid ;
<i>inrugginare,</i>	to rust ;
<i>insalvaticchire,</i>	to grow savage ;
<i>insanire,</i>	to grow mad ;
<i>inschiavire,</i>	to enslave ;
<i>inserire,</i>	to insert ;
<i>insignire,</i>	to decorate ; [thing ;
<i>insignorire,</i>	to make one master of any
<i>insipidire,</i>	to grow insipid ;
<i>insolentire,</i>	to grow insolent ;
<i>insollire,</i>	to grow soft ;
<i>insordire,</i>	to deafen ;
<i>insospettire,</i>	to grow suspicious ;
<i>insozzire,</i>	to soil ;
<i>insterilire,</i>	to become sterile ;
<i>instituire,</i>	to institute ;
<i>instolidire,</i>	to grow stupid ;
<i>instruire,</i>	to instruct ;
<i>instupidire,</i>	to fill with wonder ;

<i>insuperbire,</i>	to grow proud ;
<i>intenebrire,</i>	to grow dark ;
<i>intenerire,</i>	to make tender ;
<i>intermentire,</i>	to grow stiff or numb ;
<i>intiepidire,</i>	to cool or grow lukewarm ;
<i>intignoscire,</i>	to make or grow senary ;
<i>intimidire,</i>	}
<i>intimorire,</i>	
<i>intirannire,</i>	to become a tyrant ;
<i>intirizzare,</i>	to grow stiff with cold ;
<i>intisichire,</i>	to grow consumptive ;
<i>intorbidire,</i>	to grow thick or muddy ;
<i>intormentire,</i>	to grow stiff or numb ;
<i>intorpidire,</i>	to grow stupid ;
<i>intristire,</i>	to grow wicked ;
<i>inumidire,</i>	to grow damp ;
<i>invaghire,</i>	to inspire with love ;
<i>invanire,</i>	to vanish ;
<i>inveire,</i>	to inveigh ;
<i>invelenire,</i>	to become irritated ;
<i>inverminire,</i>	to breed worms ;
<i>invigarire,</i>	to grow vigorous ;
<i>invilire,</i>	to dishearten ;
<i>invincidire,</i>	to grow flaccid ;
<i>inviperire,</i>	to become enraged ;
<i>inviscidire,</i>	to grow viscid ;
<i>invizzire,</i>	to wither ;
<i>involpire,</i>	to grow crafty ;
<i>inzotichire,</i>	to grow clownish ;
<i>irretire,</i>	to catch with a net ;
<i>irricchire,</i>	to enrich ;
<i>irrigidire,</i>	to grow rigid ;
<i>irritrosire,</i>	}
<i>irrotrosire,</i>	
<i>irruginare,</i>	to rust ;
<i>ispartire,</i>	to divide ;
<i>isterilire,</i>	to become sterile ;
<i>istituire,</i>	to institute ;
<i>istolidire,</i>	to grow stupid ;
<i>istruire,</i>	to instruct ;

<i>lambire,</i>	to lick ;
<i>largire,</i>	to give liberally ;
<i>lentire,</i>	to allay ;
<i>marcire,</i>	to putrefy ;
<i>mucidire,</i>	to grow musty ;
<i>mugire,</i>	to bellow ;
<i>munire,</i>	to fortify ;
<i>obbedire,</i>	to obey ;
<i>oltire,</i>	to be fragrant ;
<i>ordire,</i>	to strain the warp ;
<i>ostruire,</i>	to obstruct ;
<i>partire,</i>	to divide ;
<i>partorire,</i>	to bring forth ;
<i>patire,</i>	to suffer ;
<i>pattuire,</i>	to bargain ;
<i>percepire,</i>	to perceive ;
<i>piatire,</i>	to plead ;
<i>polire,</i>	to polish <i>or</i> clean ;
<i>poltrire,</i>	to grow lazy ;
<i>preferire,</i>	to prefer ;
<i>presagire,</i>	to presage ;
<i>preterire,</i>	to omit <i>or</i> pass over ;
<i>proferire,</i>	to utter ;
<i>profferire,</i>	to proceed ;
<i>progredivere,</i>	to prohibit ;
<i>prohibere,</i>	to polish <i>or</i> clean ;
<i>puire,</i>	to punish ;
<i>puntire,</i>	to embellish ;
<i>rabbellire,</i>	to pacify ;
<i>rabbontire,</i>	to sweeten ;
<i>raddolcire,</i>	to make genteel ;
<i>raggentilire,</i>	to mollify ;
<i>rammollire,</i>	to make soft ;
<i>rammorbidire,</i>	to become rancid ;
<i>rancidire,</i>	to ravish ;
<i>rapire,</i>	to cool ;
<i>rattiepidire,</i>	to dishearten ;
<i>ravvire,</i>	to grow flaccid ;
<i>ravvincidire,</i>	to rebuke ;
<i>redarguire,</i>	

<i>restituire,</i>	to restore ;
<i>retribuire,</i>	to recompense ;
<i>riabbellire,</i>	to embellish ;
<i>riagire,</i>	to react ;
<i>riapparire,</i>	to reappear ;
<i>riarricchire,</i>	to enrich again ;
<i>ribadire,</i>	to rivet ;
<i>ribandire,</i>	to recall from banishment
<i>richiarire,</i>	to clear up ;
<i>ricolorire,</i>	to colour again ;
<i>riconcepire,</i>	to conceive again ;
<i>ricondere,</i>	to season ;
<i>ricostituire,</i>	to replace ;
<i>riferire,</i>	to refer ;
<i>ri fiorire,</i>	to blossom again ;
<i>rimbambire,</i>	to grow childish ;
<i>rinfronzire,</i>	to bring forth new leaves ;
<i>ringentire,</i>	to ennoble ;
<i>ringioire,</i>	to rejoice ;
<i>ringiovanire,</i>	} to grow young again ;
<i>ringiovenire,</i>	
<i>ringioviare,</i>	to become jovial ;
<i>ringrandire,</i>	to increase ;
<i>rinsavire,</i>	to grow wise again ;
<i>rinserenire,</i>	to clear up ;
<i>rinsignorire,</i>	to become master again ;
<i>rintenerire,</i>	to move again to pity ;
<i>rintiepidire,</i>	to grow cool or lukewarm ;
<i>rinvigore,</i>	to gather strength again ;
<i>rinvilire,</i>	to debase ;
<i>ripartire,</i>	to part ;
<i>riputare,</i>	to furbish ;
<i>risarcire,</i>	to mend ;
<i>risbaldire,</i>	to make joyful ; [hawking ;
<i>risquittire,</i>	to repair the feathers (in
<i>ristecchire,</i>	to dry up ;
<i>ritrostire,</i>	to become froward ;
<i>riunire,</i>	to reunite, to assemble ;
<i>riverire,</i>	to reverse ;
<i>rugire,</i>	to roar ;

<i>saporire,</i>	to savour ;
<i>sbaldanzire,</i>	to despond ;
<i>sbalordire,</i>	to be amazed ;
<i>sbandire,</i>	to banish ;
<i>sbigottire,</i>	to be dismayed ;
<i>sbizzarrire,</i>	to gratify caprice ;
<i>scalfire,</i>	to scarify ;
<i>scarnire,</i>	to grow lean ;
<i>scaturire,</i>	to spring ;
<i>schiarire,</i>	to clear ;
<i>schiazzire,</i>	to yelp ;
<i>schienire,</i>	to avoid ;
<i>sciapidire,</i>	} to grow insipid ;
<i>sciapire,</i>	
<i>scipidire,</i>	
<i>scipire,</i>	
<i>scolorire,</i>	
<i>scolpire,</i>	to fade ;
<i>scompartire,</i>	to engrave ;
<i>scompartire,</i>	to lose value by comparison ;
<i>semenzire,</i>	to share ;
<i>seppellire,</i>	to go to seed ;
<i>sfavorire,</i>	to bury ;
<i>sfuire,</i>	to disfavour ;
<i>sfornire,</i>	to faint away ;
<i>sgarire,</i>	to unfurnish ;
<i>sgermire,</i>	to beat in a contest ;
<i>sgomentire,</i>	to let loose ;
<i>sgradire,</i>	to discourage ;
<i>smagrire,</i>	to displease ;
<i>smaltire,</i>	to grow lean ;
<i>smarrire,</i>	to digest ;
<i>sminuire,</i>	to lose or miss ;
<i>smuovere,</i>	to diminish ; [office ;
<i>sopire,</i>	to reinstate in a charge or
<i>sortire,</i>	to quench ;
<i>sostituire,</i>	to cast or draw lots ;
<i>sparire,</i>	to substitute ;
<i>spartire,</i>	to disappear ;
<i>spaurire,</i>	to separate ;
	to frighten ;

<i>spedire,</i>	to despatch ;
<i>spervertire,</i>	to pervert ;
<i>spessire,</i>	to thicken ;
<i>squittire,</i>	to yelp ;
<i>stabilire,</i>	to establish ;
<i>strugginare,</i>	to free from rust ;
<i>starnutire,</i>	to sneeze ;
<i>statuire,</i>	to resolve ;
<i>stecchire,</i>	to become dry ;
<i>sterilitire,</i>	to grow barren ;
<i>stizzire,</i>	to make angry ;
<i>stolidire,</i>	to grow stupid ;
<i>stordire,</i>	to stun ;
<i>stormire,</i>	to bustle ;
<i>stramortire,</i>	to swoon ;
<i>stremenzire,</i>	to reduce <i>or</i> weaken ;
<i>stupidire,</i>	to amaze ;
<i>stupire,</i>	to wonder ;
<i>svanire,</i>	to vanish ;
<i>svelentire,</i>	to appease ;
<i>svilire,</i>	to abase ;
<i>suggestire,</i>	to suggest ;
<i>supplire,</i>	to supply ;
<i>tradire,</i>	to betray ;
<i>traferire,</i>	to wound ;
<i>tramortire,</i>	to faint away ;
<i>trasferire,</i>	to transfer ;
<i>trasgredire,</i>	to transgress ;
<i>trasparire,</i>	to shine through ;
<i>trasricchire,</i>	to grow very rich ;
<i>ubbidire,</i>	to obey ;
<i>unire,</i>	to unite <i>or</i> join ;
<i>usucapire,</i>	to hold by prescription ;
<i>vagire,</i>	to cry like an infant.

The verb *ostruire* in the *past participle* makes *ostrutto*, obstructed. The verbs *construire* and *costruire*, *instruire* and *istruire*, make *costruito* and *costrutto*, or *costruito* and *costrutto*, constructed; *istruito* and *istruito*, or *istruito* and *istruito*, instructed. And *apparire*, *comparire*, *trasparire*, *riapparire*, in the *past participle* make *apparito* and *apparso*, appeared; *comparito* and *comparsa*, appeared; *trasparsito* and *trasparsa*, shone through; *riapparito* and *riapparsa*, reappeared.

Verbs of the third conjugation, that in the present of the indicative end both in o and isco.

<i>aggradire,</i>	to please ;
<i>applaudire,</i>	to applaud ;
<i>assaporire,</i>	to taste ;
<i>assorbire,</i>	to absorb ;
<i>avvertire,</i>	to warn ;
<i>benedire,</i>	to bless ;
<i>bolire,</i>	to boil ;
<i>conseguire,</i>	to obtain ;
<i>convertire,</i>	to convert ;
<i>eseguire,</i>	to execute ;
<i>disinghiottire,</i>	to disgorge ;
<i>divertire,</i>	to divert or amuse ;
<i>ferire,</i>	to wound ;
<i>forbire,</i>	to furbish ;
<i>impazzire,</i>	to grow mad ;
<i>impetrare,</i>	to petrify ;
<i>indurire,</i>	to harden ;
<i>inghiottire,</i>	to swallow ;
<i>inverdire,</i>	} to grow green ;
<i>invertire,</i>	
<i>investire,</i>	to invest ;
<i>languire,</i>	to languish ;
<i>maledire,</i>	to curse ;
<i>mentire,</i>	to lie ;
<i>nudrire,</i>	} to nourish ;
<i>nutrire,</i>	

<i>offerire,</i>	}	to offer ;
<i>offrire,</i>		
<i>perire,</i>	}	to perish ;
<i>perseguire,</i>		
<i>pervertire</i>		to persecute ;
<i>proseguire,</i>	}	to pervert ;
<i>putire,</i>		
<i>rinverdire,</i>		to prosecute ;
<i>rinverzire,</i>	}	to stink ;
<i>riinvestire,</i>		
<i>rivestire,</i>		to grow green again ;
<i>schermire,</i>		to invest ;
<i>sohernire,</i>	}	to dress again ;
<i>sofferire,</i>		
<i>soffrire,</i>		to fence ;
<i>sorbire,</i>		to laugh to scorn ;
<i>sovertire,</i>	}	to suffer ;
<i>sussequire,</i>		
<i>tossire,</i>		to absorb ;
<i>tranghiottire,</i>		to subvert or overturn ;
<i>travestire,</i>		to follow immediately ;
		to cough ;
		to swallow up ;
		to disguise.

In the verbs *aggradire*, *assaporire*, *ferire*, *impetrare*, *languire*, *perire*, and *putire*, the termination in *e* is poetical.

The verbs *benedire* and *maledire*, in the past participle make *benedétto*, blessed ; *maledétto*, cursed. *Offerire* and *offrire*, *sofferire* and *soffrire*, make *offérto*, offered ; *sofférto*, suffered.

The verbs *apparire*, *comparire*, *trasparire*, *riapparire*, in the preceding list, beside their regular, have also in some tenses an irregular formation ; which will be given with the *irregular verbs*.

There are some verbs of the third conjugation that belong also to the second ; having two terminations in the *infinitive*, one in *ire*, the other in *ere* ; as,

appetire, *appétere*, to desire ;
inghiottire, *inghiótttere*, to swallow ; &c.

some that belong also to the first conjugation ; having the two terminations *ire* and *äre* ; as,

impazzire, impazzäre, to grow mad ;
incoraggiare, incoraggiäre, to encourage ; &c.

and some others that belong to all three of the conjugations ; as,

muggire, muggere, muggiäre, to bellow ;
olire, olere, olezzäre, to be fragrant ; &c.

These verbs are differently varied according to the conjugation to which their terminations respectively belong.

Variation of Passive Verbs.

Passive verbs are formed by joining the verb *essere*, to be, to the *past participle* of active verbs.

Passive verbs then, through all their tenses, are varied with the auxiliary verb *essere*.

Variation of the verb *essere amato*.

(Paradigm of the passive verbs.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

essere { *amato, -a,* }
 { *amati, -e,* } to be loved.

Past.

essere { *státo amáto, státa amáta,* } to have been loved.
 { *státi amáti, státe amáte,* }

Future.

avére ad essere, or essere per essere { *amáto, -a,* } to have to be loved,
 { *amáti, -e,* } or to be about to be
 loved.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

esséndo { *amáto, -a,* } being loved.
 { *amáti, -e,* }

Past.

esséndo { *státo amáto, státa amáta,* } having been loved.
 { *státi amáti, státe amáte,* }

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>sóno amáto, -a,</i>	I am loved ;
<i>séi amáto, -a,</i>	thou art loved ;
<i>è amáto, -a,</i>	he, she, or it is loved ;
<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	we are loved ;
<i>siéte amáti, -e,</i>	you are loved ;
<i>sóno amáti, -e,</i>	they are loved.

Imperfect.

<i>éra amáto, -a,</i>	I was loved ;
<i>éri amáto, -a,</i>	thou wast loved ;
<i>éra amáto, -a,</i>	he, she, or it was loved ;

eravamo amáti, -e,
eraváte amáti, -e,
erano amáti, -e,

we were loved ;
 you were loved ;
 they were loved.

Perfect-definite.

fui amáto, -a,
fósti amáto, -a,
fu amáto, -a,
fúmmo amáti, -e,
fóste amáti, -e,
fúrono amáti, -e,

I was loved ;
 thou wast loved ;
 he, she, or it was loved
 we were loved ;
 you were loved ;
 they were loved.

Perfect-indefinite.

sóno státo amáto, státa
 [*amáta,*
séi státo amáto, státa
 [*amáta,*
è státo amáto, státa amáta,
siámo státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*
siéte státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*
sóno státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*

I have been loved ;
 thou hast been loved ;
 he, she, or it has been loved ;
 we have been loved ;
 you have been loved ;
 they have been loved.

Pluperfect-definite.

fui státo amáto, státa
 [*amáta,*
fósti státo amáto, státa
 [*amáta,*
fu státo amáto, státa
 [*amáta,*
fúmmo státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*
fóste státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*
fúrono státi amáti, státe
 [*amáte,*

I had been loved ;
 thou hadst been loved ;
 he, she, or it had been loved ;
 we had been loved ;
 you had been loved ;
 they had been loved.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

<i>era státo amáto,</i>	<i>státa</i>	I had been loved ;
<i>éri státo amáto,</i>	<i>[amáta,</i> <i>státa</i>	thou hadst been loved ;
<i>éra státo amáto,</i>	<i>[amáta,</i> <i>státa</i>	he, she, or it had been loved ;
<i>eravámo státi amáti,</i>	<i>státe</i>	we had been loved ;
<i>eraváte státi amáti,</i>	<i>[amáte,</i> <i>státe</i>	you had been loved ;
<i>éranó státi amáti,</i>	<i>[amáte,</i> <i>státe</i>	they had been loved.

Future-indefinite.

<i>sarò amáto, -a,</i>	I shall or will be loved ;
<i>sarái amáto, -a,</i>	thou shalt or wilt be loved ;
<i>sarà amáto, -a,</i>	he, she, or it shall or will be [loved ;
<i>sarémo amáti, -e,</i>	we shall or will be loved ;
<i>saréte amáti, -e,</i>	you shall or will be loved ;
<i>saránno amáti, -e,</i>	they shall or will be loved.

Future-definite.

<i>sarò státo amáto,</i>	<i>státa</i>	I shall or will have been
	<i>[amáta,</i>	[loved ;
<i>sarái státo amáto,</i>	<i>státa</i>	thou shalt or wilt have been
	<i>[amáta,</i>	[loved ;
<i>sarà státo amáto,</i>	<i>státa</i>	he, she, or it shall or will
	<i>[amáta,</i>	[have been loved ;

<i>sarémo státi amáti, státo</i>	we shall or will have been	[loved ;
[<i>amáte,</i>		
<i>saréte státi amáti, státo</i>	you shall or will have been	[loved ;
[<i>amáte,</i>		
<i>saránna státi amáti, státo</i>	they shall or will have been	[loved.
[<i>amáte,</i>		

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>saréi amáto, -a,</i>	I should, would, or could be	[loved ; or might be loved ;
<i>sarésti amáto, -a,</i>	thou shouldst, wouldst, or	[couldst be loved ; &c.
<i>sarébbe amáto, -a,</i>	he, she, or it should, would,	[or could be loved ; &c.
<i>sarémmo amáti, -e,</i>	we should, would, or could	[be loved ; &c.
<i>saréste amáti, -e,</i>	you should, would, or could	[be loved ; &c.
<i>sarébbéro amáti, -e,</i>	they should, would, or could	[be loved ; &c.

Past.

<i>saréi státo amáto, státa</i>	I should, would, or could	[have been loved, or might
[<i>amáta,</i>		[have been loved ; &c.
<i>sarésti státo amáto, státa</i>	thou shouldst, wouldst, or	[couldst have been loved ;
[<i>amáta,</i>		[&c.
<i>sarébbe státo amáto, státa</i>	he, she, or it should, would, or	could have been loved ; &c.
[<i>amáta,</i>		
<i>sarémmo státi amáti, státo</i>	we should, would, or could	[have been loved ; &c.
[<i>amáte,</i>		
<i>saréste státi amáti, státo</i>	you should, would, or could	[have been loved ; &c.
[<i>amáte,</i>		
<i>sarébbéro státi amáti, státo</i>	they should, would, or could	[have been loved ; &c.
[<i>amáte,</i>		

IMPERATIVE.

<i>sii amáto, -a,</i>	be thou loved ;
<i>sia amáto, -a,</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it be loved ;
<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	let us be loved ;
<i>siáte amáti, -e,</i>	be ye loved ;
<i>siano amáti, -e,</i>	let them be loved.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>sia amáto, -a,</i>	that I be loved ; <i>or</i> may be [loved ;
<i>sii amáto, -a,</i>	that thou be loved ; &c.
<i>sia amáto, -a,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it be loved ; [&c.
<i>siámo amáti, -e,</i>	that we be loved ; &c.
<i>siáte amáti, -e,</i>	that you be loved ; &c.
<i>siano amáti, -e,</i>	that they be loved ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>fóssi amáto, -a,</i>	if I were loved ; <i>or</i> should be [loved ;
<i>fóssi amáto, -a,</i>	if thou wert loved ; &c.
<i>fósse amáto, -a,</i>	if he, she, <i>or</i> it were loved ; [&c.
<i>fóssimo amáti, -e,</i>	if we were loved ; &c.
<i>fóste amáti, -e,</i>	if you were loved ; &c.
<i>fóssero amáti, -e,</i>	if they were loved ; &c.

Perfect.

<i>sia státo amáto, státa</i>	that I have been loved ; <i>or</i> [amáta, [may have been loved ;
<i>sii státo amáto, státa</i>	that thou hast been loved ; [amáta, [&c.
<i>sia státo amáto, státa</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it has been [amáta, [loved ; &c.

<i>siámo státi amáti, státe</i>	that we have been loved ; &c.
<i>siáte státi amáti, státe</i>	that you have been loved ;
<i>siáno státi amáti, státe</i>	that they have been loved ;

[*amáte,*
[*amáte,* [&c.
[*amáte,* [&c.

Pluperfect.

<i>fóssi státo amáto, státa</i>	if I had been loved ;
<i>fóssi státo amáto, státa</i>	if thou hadst been loved ;
<i>fósse státo amáto, státa</i>	if he, she, or it had been
	amáta, [loved ;
<i>fóssimo státi amáti, státe</i>	if we had been loved ;
<i>fóste státi amáti, státe</i>	if you had been loved ;
<i>fóssero státi amáti, státe</i>	if they had been loved.
	[<i>amáte,</i>

Variation of Neuter Verbs.

Neuter verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, to be, according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the verb partíre.

(Paradigm of the neuter verbs.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

partíre, to depart.

Past.

éssere partíto, to have departed.

Future.

*avére a partíre, or
éssere per partíre,* } to have to depart, *or*
to be about to depart.

GERUND.

Present.

parténdo, departing.

Past.

esséndo partíto, having departed.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

parténte, departing.

Past.

partíto, partíta, } departed.
partíti, partíte, }

INDICATIVE.

Present.

párto, &c. I depart; *or* do depart; *or*
[am departing; &c.]

Imperfect.

partíva, &c. I departed; *or* did depart; *or*
[was departing; &c.]

Perfect-definite.

partíi, &c. I departed; *or* did depart;
[&c.]

Perfect-indefinite.

sóno partíto, &c. I have departed; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

.

.

ANALOGY.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

éra partíto, &c. I had departed ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

partirò, &c. I shall or will depart ; &c.

Future-definite.

sarò partíto, &c. I shall or will have departed ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

partiréi, &c. I should, would, or could
[depart ; or might de-
[part ; &c.

Past.

saréi partíto, &c. I should, would, or could
[have departed ; or might
[have departed ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

párti, &c. depart thou ; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

párti, &c. that I depart ; or may de-
[part ; &c.

Imperfect.

partissi, &c. if I departed ; or should de-
[part ; &c.

Perfect.

sia partito, &c. that I have departed ; or
[may have departed ; &c.

Plusperfect.

fossi partito, &c. if I had departed ; &c.

There are some neuter verbs which are occasionally varied with the auxiliary *avére* ; as, *duráre*, to last ; *è duráto*, or *à duráto*, it has lasted ; &c. Others require to be varied with *avére* ; as, *tacére*, to keep silent ; *vívere*, to live ; *è taciúto*, I have kept silent ; *è vivúto*, I have lived ; but in this case they seem to take the nature of an active verb, having the object generally understood, though sometimes expressed ; as,

è taciúto [me], I have kept [myself] silent ;
è vivúto una búna víta, I have lived a good life ; &c.

Variation of Pronominal Verbs.

Pronominal verbs are varied with the auxiliary *éssere*, to be, according to the conjugation to which their terminations belong.

Variation of the verb *pentirsi*.

(Paradigm of the pronominal verbs.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**pentir-si,* to repent one's self.*Past.**ésser-si pentíto,* to have repented one's self.*Future.*

<i>avér-si a pentire,</i> or <i>ésser-si per pentire,</i>	}	to have to repent one's self, or to be about to repent one's [self.
--	---	---

GERUND.

*Present.**penténdo-si,* repenting one's self.*Past.**esséndo-si pentíto,* having repented one's self.

PARTICIPLE.

*Present.**penténte-si,* repenting one's self.

Past.

pentito-si, pentita-si, } [having] repented one's self.
pentiti-si, pentite-si, }

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>mi pento,</i>	I repent myself ;
<i>ti penti,</i>	thou repentest thyself ;
<i>si pente,</i>	he repents himself, she re- [pents herself, or it re- [pents itself ;
<i>ci pentiamo,</i>	we repent ourselves ;
<i>vi pentite,</i>	you repent yourselves ;
<i>si pentono,</i>	they repent themselves.

Imperfect.

mi pentiva, &c. I repented myself ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

mi pentii, &c. I repented myself ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

mi sono pentito, &c. I have repented myself ; &c.

Pluperfect-definite.

.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

mi era pentito, &c. I had repented myself ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

mi pentirò, &c. I shall or will repent myself ;
[&c.

ANALOGY.

Future-definite.

mi sarò pentito, &c. I shall or will 'have repent-
[ed myself ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

mi pentiréi, &c. { I should, would, or could re-
[pent myself, or might re-
[pent myself ; &c.

Past.

mi saréi pentito, &c. { I should, would, or could
[have repented myself, or
[might have repented my-
[self ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

*pénti-ti,
pénta-si,*

repent thyself ;
let him repent himself, her
[repent herself, or it re-
[repent itself ;

*pentiámo-ci,
péntite-vi,
péntan-si,*

let us repent ourselves ;
repent yourselves ;
let them repent themselves.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

mi pénta, &c.

that I repent myself ; or may
[repent myself ; &c.

Imperfect.

mi pentíssi, &c. if I repented myself; or should
repent myself; &c.

Perfect.

mi sia pentíto, &c. that I have repented myself;
[or may have repented
myself; &c.

Pluperfect.

mi fóssi pentíto, &c. if I had repented myself; &c.

A great number of active verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.* either in the objective or in the relation of attribution; and then these verbs are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, to be; as, *lodáre*, to praise; *dáre*, to give; *tacére*, to keep silent:

<i>si è lodáto,</i>	he has praised himself;
<i>si è dáto per vinto,</i>	he has given himself up as [conquered;
<i>si è dáto un cólpo,</i>	he has given [to] himself a [blow;
<i>si è taciúto,</i>	he has kept himself silent.

Usage, however, in some instances allows us also to employ the auxiliary *avére*, to have; but then the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, si, &c.* are always in the relation of attribution; as,

<i>mélo sóno</i> or <i>me^l ò</i>	I have enjoyed it;
<i>télo séi</i> or <i>te^l ài cre-</i>	thou hast believed it;
<i>sel^l è</i> or <i>sel^l à bevúto,</i>	he has drunk it; &c.

Variation of Unipersonal Verbs.

Unipersonal verbs are generally varied with the auxiliary *avére*, to have, according to the conjugation to which they belong.

Variation of the verb pióvere.

(Paradigm of the unipersonal verbs.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

pióvere, to rain.

Past.

avére pióvúto, to have rained.

Future.

avére a pióvere, or } to have to rain, or
éssere per pióvere, } to be about to rain.

GERUND.

Present.

pióvéndo, raining.

Past.

avéndo pióvúto, having rained.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

pióvénte, raining.

Past.

piovùto, rained.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

piove, it rains; it does rain; or it
[is raining.

Imperfect.

piovéva or *piovéa,* it rained; it did rain; or it
[was raining.

Perfect-definite.

piovè, *piovéte,* or *piov-* it rained; or it did rain.
[ve (*pióbbe*),

Perfect-indefinite.

à piovùto, it has rained.

Pluperfect-definite.

èbbe piovùto, it had rained.

Pluperfect-indefinite.

avéva piovùto, it had rained.

Future-indefinite.

pioverà, it shall or will rain.

Future-definite.

avrà piovùto, it shall or will have rained.

ANALOGY.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

pioverebbe, it should, would, or could
[rain ; or might rain.

Past.

avrebbe piovuto, it should, would, or could
[have rained ; or might
[have rained.

IMPERATIVE.

piova, let it rain.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

piova, that it rains ; or may rain.

Imperfect.

piovesse, if it rained ; or should rain.

Perfect.

abbia piovuto, that it has rained ; or may
[have rained.

Pluperfect.

avésse piovuto, if it had rained.

The following are the unipersonal verbs most in use :

<i>balenare</i>	}	to lighten ;
<i>lampeggiare,</i>		to thunder ;
<i>tuonare,</i>		

<i>piovere,</i>	}	to rain ;
<i>diluviare,</i>		to rain very hard, to deluge ;
<i>nevicare,</i>	}	to snow ;
<i>grandinare,</i>		to hail ;
<i>tempestare,</i>	}	
<i>gelare,</i>		to freeze ;
<i>ghiacciare,</i>	}	to thaw ;
<i>dighiacciare,</i>		to grow dark ;
<i>oscurare,</i>		to be hot ;
<i>far caldo,</i>		to be cold ;
<i>far freddo,</i>		to be light ;
<i>far chiaro,</i>		to be dark ;
<i>far buio,</i>		to be windy.
<i>far vento,</i>		

To the above may be added the following verbs, which, though not unipersonal in themselves, are often used unipersonally, and may have the third person plural, as well as singular ; and are varied with the auxiliary *essere*, to be :

<i>accadere,</i>	}	to happen ;
<i>avvenire,</i>		
<i>occorrere,</i>	}	to please ;
<i>aggradare,</i>		to be enough ;
<i>bastare,</i>		to be needful ;
<i>bisognare,</i>		to be important ;
<i>importare,</i>	}	to seem.
<i>parere,</i>		
<i>sembrare,</i>		

Essere, to be, is also used unipersonally both in the singular and plural, when it is joined to the relative particles *ci* or *vi* ; as, *esserci* or *esservi*, to be here, or to be there.

Variation of the verb *essere*, unipersonally used.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

esserci, or *esservi*, to be here, or to be there.

ANALOGY.

Past.

ésserci or *ésservi*, } *státo, státa,*
 } *státi, státe,* } to have been there.

Future.

ésserci or *ésservi per éssere,* } to have to be there, or to be
avérci or *avérvì ad éssere,* } [about to be there.]

GERUND.

Present.

esséndoci or *esséndovi,* there being.

Past.

esséndoci or } *státo, státa,*
esséndovi } *státi, státe,* } there having been.

PARTICIPLE.

.

.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

e' è or *v' è,* here is, or there is ;
ci sóno or *vi sóno,* there are.

Imperfect.

e' éra or *v' éra,* there was ;
e' érano or *v' érano,* there were.

Perfect-definite.

ei fu or *vi fu,* there was ;
ei fúrono or *vi fúrono,* there were.

IMPERATIVE.

ci stia, vi stia, or stiaci, stavi,
ci stiano, vi stiano, or stenci,
 [*stienvi,*] } let there be.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

ci stia or vi stia,
ci stiano, vi stiano, or ci stieno,
 [*vi stieno,*] } that there be ; or may be.

Imperfect.

ci fósse or vi fósse,
ci fóssero or vi fóssero, } if there were ; or should be.

Perfect.

ci stia or vi stia státo, -a, that there has been ;
ci stiano or vi stiano státi, -e, that there have been ; or
 [may have been.

Pluperfect.

ci fósse or vi fósse státo, -a,
ci fóssero or vi fóssero } if there had been.
 [*státi, -e,*]

Very often the verb *avére*, to have, is substituted for the verb *éssere* when unipersonally used, and then it is varied after the same manner ; as, *avérci*, or *avérvi*, to be here, or to be there ; *ci à*, or *vi à*, here is, or there is ; *ci ànno* or *vi ànno*, there are ; &c.

The greater part of the active verbs may become unipersonal, and be varied in the third person both singular and plural by the help of the indefinite pronoun *si*, one, they, people, &c. placed either before or after the verb ; as,

<i>si dice, or dicesi,</i>	one or they say ;
<i>si loda la virtù,</i>	they praise virtue ;
<i>biásimansi i vizj,</i>	people blame vices ; &c.

To express in Italian *here or there is some of it, here or there are some of them*, we join the relative particle *ne*, of it, of them, to *ci* or *vi*, and say, *éssercene* or *ésservene*, *avércene* or *avérvene* ; as, *cen' è* or *ven' è*, *cen' à* or *ven' à*, *here is some of it, or there is some of it* ; *céne sóno* or *véne sóno*, *cen' ànno* or *ven' ànno*, *there are some of them* ; &c.

The verb *avére*, not only may be used with propriety for the verb *éssere*, but is also elegantly used in the singular, although the noun to which it is joined is in the plural ; as, *quante miglia ci à?* *how many miles is it?* *ébbervi mólti uómini*, *there were a great many men there* ; &c.

The English unipersonal verb *it is*, in the following instances and in similar, is expressed in Italian by *fa*, *makes* ; as, *it is hot, fa caldo* ; *it is cold, fa fréddo* ; *it is fine weather, fa bel témpo* ; *it is windy, fa vènto* ; *it is dark, fa oscuro* ; &c.

A SYNOPTICAL TABLE

OF THE

VARIATIONS OF THE REGULAR VERBS,

SHOWING THEIR DIFFERENT TERMINATIONS IN THEIR SIMPLE TENSES.

	First Conjugation.	Second Conjugation.	Third Conjugation.
INFINITIVE.	<i>[am-] áre.</i>	<i>[tem-] ére. [créd-] ere.</i>	<i>[abborr-] íre.</i>
GERUND.	<i>ándo.</i>	<i>éndo.</i>	<i>éndo.</i>
PARTICIPLE.	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \acute{a}to, -a, \\ \acute{a}ti, -e. \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \acute{u}to, -o, \\ \acute{u}ti, -e. \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \acute{í}to, -a, \\ \acute{í}ti, -e. \end{array} \right.$
$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} \textit{Present.} \\ \textit{Present.} \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} o, \\ i, \\ a; \\ \acute{a}mo, \\ \acute{a}te, \\ ano. \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} o, \\ i, \\ e; \\ \acute{a}mo, \\ \acute{á}te, \\ ono. \end{array} \right.$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} o, \\ i, \\ e, \\ \acute{a}mo, \\ \acute{á}te, \\ ono, \\ \acute{í}cono. \end{array} \right.$

ANALOGY.

<p>INDICATIVE.</p>	<p><i>Imperfect.</i></p>	<p> <i>éva,</i> <i>évi,</i> <i>éva;</i> <i>evámo,</i> <i>eváte,</i> <i>évano.</i> </p>	<p> <i>éa,</i> <i>évi,</i> <i>éa;</i> <i>evámo,</i> <i>eváte,</i> <i>évano, évano.</i> </p>	<p> <i>éa,</i> <i>évi,</i> <i>éa,</i> <i>evámo,</i> <i>eváte,</i> <i>évano, évano.</i> </p>
	<p><i>Perfect-definite.</i></p>	<p> <i>éi,</i> <i>éstí,</i> <i>è;</i> <i>émmo,</i> <i>éste,</i> <i>érono, (áro, ár).</i> </p>	<p> <i>éti,</i> <i>éstí,</i> <i>è,</i> <i>émmo,</i> <i>éste,</i> <i>érono, éttero, (éro).</i> </p>	<p> <i>éi,</i> <i>éstí,</i> <i>è,</i> <i>émmo,</i> <i>éste,</i> <i>érono.</i> </p>
	<p><i>Future-indefinite.</i></p>	<p> <i>erò,</i> <i>erái,</i> <i>erá;</i> <i>erémo,</i> <i>eréte,</i> <i>eránsa.</i> </p>	<p> <i>erò,</i> <i>erái,</i> <i>erá;</i> <i>erémo,</i> <i>eréte,</i> <i>eránsa.</i> </p>	<p> <i>erò,</i> <i>erái,</i> <i>erá;</i> <i>erémo,</i> <i>eréte,</i> <i>eránsa.</i> </p>

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

{	eréi,	(eria),	eréi,	(eria),
	erésti,	(erísti),	erésti,	(erísti),
	erébbe,	(erébbe),	erébbe,	(erébbe),
	erémmo,	(erémmo),	erémmo,	(erémmo),
	eréste,	(eréste),	eréste,	(eréste),
	erébbero,	(erébbero),	erébbero,	(erébbero),

[erieno).

irési,	(iria),
irésti,	(irísti),
irébbe,	(irébbe),
irémmo,	(irémmo),
iréste,	(iréste),
irébbero,	(irébbero),

[ano).

IMPERATIVE.

{	a,
	i,
	iámo,
	áte,
	ino.

i,
a,
iámo,
íte,
ano.

ANALOGY.

i,	isci,
a,	isca;
iámo,	iscamo,
íte,	iscamo.
ano,	iscamo.

{	i,
	i,
	i,
	iámo,
	iáte,

ino.

(e),	a,	i,
(e);	a,	i,
(e);	a;	iámo,
(e);	a;	iáte,
(e);	a;	ino.

a,	isca,	iscchi,
a, i;	isca,	iscchi,
a,	isca;	iscchi,
iámo,	iscamo,	iscchamo,
iáte,	iscamate,	iscchamate,
ano,	iscamo,	iscchamo.

Present.

éseri,
éseri,
éser; *éserimo,*
éste, *ésero.*

éseri,
éseri,
éser; *éserimo,*
éste, *ésero.*

{
éseri,
éseri,
éser; *éserimo,*
éste, *ésero.*
}

Imperfect.

CONJUNCTIVE. }
}

Of Irregular Verbs.

In the irregular verbs, the irregularities are chiefly confined to the *present* tense of all the *moods*, the *perfect-definite* of the *indicative*, and the *participle*; but in these tenses some of the persons remain regular. The irregular persons are here marked with an asterisk.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the First Conjugation.

There are but four simple verbs in the first conjugation, which do not follow the paradigm already given; viz. *andáre*, to go; *dáre*, to give; *fáre*, to do or to make; *stáre*, to be, to dwell, to stand, or to stay.

Variation of the verb *andáre*.

In the variation of the irregular verbs, we shall give only the simple tenses, except in the *infinitive*, where the *past tense* is given to show the auxiliary with which the verb is varied.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

andáre, to go.

Past.

éssere andáto, to have gone.

GERUND.

andándo. going.

PARTICIPLE.

andáto, gone.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>vo</i> or * <i>vado</i> ,	I go ; or am going ;
* <i>vai</i> ,	thou goest ; &c.
* <i>va</i> ,	he, she, or it goes ; &c.
<i>andiamo</i> ,	we go ; &c.
<i>andate</i> ,	you go ; &c.
* <i>vanno</i> ,	they go ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>andava</i> , &c.	I went ; or did go ; or was [going ; &c.
---------------------	---

Perfect-definite.

<i>andai</i> , &c.	I went ; or did go ; &c.
--------------------	--------------------------

Future-indefinite.

<i>andrò</i> [by contraction for <i>anderò</i>], &c.	I shall or will go ; &c.
--	--------------------------

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>andrèi</i> [by contraction for <i>anderèi</i>] (<i>an- deria</i> , <i>andria</i>), &c.	I should, would, or could go ; or might go ; &c.
---	---

IMPERATIVE.

* <i>va</i> ,	go thou ;
* <i>vada</i> ,	let him, her, or it go ;
<i>andiamo</i> ,	let us go ;
<i>andate</i> ,	go ye ;
* <i>vadano</i> ,	- let them go.

ANALOGY.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*váda,</i>	that I go ; or may go ;
<i>*váda (vádi),</i>	that thou goest ; &c.
<i>*váda,</i>	that he, she, or it goes ; &c.
<i>andámo,</i>	that we go ; &c.
<i>andiáte,</i>	that you go ; &c.
<i>*vádano,</i>	that they go ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>andássi, &c.</i>	if I went ; or should go ; &c.
-------------------------	--------------------------------

Variation of the verb *dáre,*

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>dáre,</i>	to give.
--------------	----------

Past.

<i>avére dáto,</i>	to have given.
--------------------	----------------

GERUND.

<i>dándo,</i>	giving.
---------------	---------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>dáto,</i>	given.
--------------	--------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>do,</i>	I give ; or am giving ;
<i>*dáí,</i>	thou givest ; &c.
<i>dà,</i>	he, she, or it gives ; &c.
<i>diámo,</i>	we give ; &c.
<i>dáte,</i>	you give ; &c.
<i>*dánno,</i>	they give ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>dáva, &c.</i>	I gave ; or did give ; or was [giving ; &c.]
----------------------	---

Perfect-definite.

<i>*détti, or *diédi (diéi),</i>	I gave ; or did give ;
<i>*déstí,</i>	thou gavest ; &c.
<i>*détte, or *diéde (diéo,</i> [diè),	he, she, or it gave ; &c.
<i>*démmo,</i>	we gave ; &c.
<i>*désté,</i>	you gave ; &c.
<i>*déttero, or *diédero</i> (diérono, diéro, } [diér, déno),	they gave ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

<i>*darò, &c.</i>	I shall, or will give ; &c.
-----------------------	-----------------------------

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>*daréi (daría), &c.</i>	I should, would, or could [give ; or might give ; &c.]
--------------------------------	---

IMPERATIVE.

<i>dà,</i>	give thou ;
* <i>día,</i>	let him, her, or it give ;
<i>diámo,</i>	let us give ;
<i>dáte,</i>	give ye ;
* <i>diano</i> or * <i>dieno,</i>	let them give.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>día,</i>	that I give ; or may give ;
* <i>día</i> or * <i>díi,</i>	that thou givest ; &c.
* <i>día,</i>	that he, she, or it gives ; &
<i>diámo,</i>	that we give ; &c.
<i>diáte,</i>	that you give ; &c.
* <i>diano</i> or * <i>dieno,</i>	that they give ; &c.

Imperfect.

* <i>dessi,</i> &c.	if I gave ; or should give ; [&c.]
---------------------	---------------------------------------

Variation of the verb *fáre*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>fáre,</i>	to do, or to make.
--------------	--------------------

Past.

* <i>avére fátto,</i>	to have done.
-----------------------	---------------

GERUND.

* <i>facéndo,</i>	doing.
-------------------	--------

PARTICIPLE.

**fatto*, done.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>fo</i> (<i>faccio</i>),	I do ; or am doing ;
* <i>fai</i> ,	thou doest ; &c.
<i>fa</i> (<i>face</i>),	he, she, or it does ; &c.
* <i>facciamo</i> ,	we do ; &c.
<i>fate</i> ,	you do ; &c.
* <i>fanno</i> (<i>fán</i>),	they do ; &c.

Imperfect.

**faceva*, or *facea* (*féa*), I did ; or was doing ; &c.
[&c.]

Perfect-definite.

* <i>feci</i> (<i>féi</i>),	I did ;
* <i>facesti</i> (<i>fésti</i>),	thou didst ;
* <i>fece</i> (<i>féo</i> , <i>fe'</i>),	he did ;
* <i>facemmo</i> (<i>fémmo</i>),	we did ;
* <i>faceste</i> (<i>féste</i>),	you did ;
* <i>fecero</i> (<i>fen</i> , <i>fénno</i> ; fer, féro, féro, fé- rono),	they did.

Future-indefinite.

**farò*, &c. I shall or will do ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

farei (*faria*, *fare'*), &c. I should, would, or could do ;
[or might do ; &c.]

IMPERATIVE.

<i>fa,</i>	do thou ;
<i>*fáccia,</i>	let him, her, or it do ;
<i>*facciámo,</i>	let us do ;
<i>fáte,</i>	do ye ;
<i>*fánno,</i>	let them do.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*fáccia,</i>	that I do ; or may do ;
<i>*fáccia,</i>	that thou doest ; &c.
<i>*fáccia,</i>	that he, she, or it does ; &c.
<i>*facciámo,</i>	that we do ; &c.
<i>*facciáte,</i>	that you do ; &c.
<i>*fácciano,</i>	that they do ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>*facéssi (féssi),</i>	if I did ; or should do ;
<i>*facéssi (féssi),</i>	if thou didst ; &c.
<i>*facésse (fésse),</i>	if he, she, or it did ; &c.
<i>*facéssimo,</i>	if we did ; &c.
<i>*facéste (féste),</i>	if you did ; &c.
<i>*facéssero (fésseo,</i> [féssono),	if they did ; &c.

Variation of the verb *stáre*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>stáre,</i>	to stand, to stay, to dwell, or [to be.
---------------	--

Past.

essere státo, to have stood.

GERUND.

stándo, standing.

PARTICIPLE.

státo, stood.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

sto, I stand ; or am standing ; &c.
**stái,* thou standest ; &c.
sta, he, she, or it stands ; &c.

stámo, we stand ; &c.
státe you stand ; &c.
**stánno,* they stand ; &c.

Imperfect.

stáva, &c. I stood ; or was standing ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**stétti (stéi),* I stood ;
**stesti,* thou stoodst ;
**stétte (stè),* he, she, or it stood ;

**stémmo,* we stood ;
**stéste,* you stood ;
**stéttero (stéro, stér,* they stood.
[stiéro, stiér),

Future-indefinite.

**stáro, &c.* I shall, or will stand ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>*staréi, &c.</i>	I should, would, or could stand; or might stand; &c.
-------------------------	--

IMPERATIVE.

<i>sta,</i>	stand thou;
<i>*stáa,</i>	let him, her, or it stand;
<i>stíamo,</i>	let us stand;
<i>státe,</i>	stand ye;
<i>*stíano or *sténo,</i>	let them stand.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*stía,</i>	that I stand; or may stand;
<i>*stía or *stíi,</i>	that thou standest; &c.
<i>*stía,</i>	that he, her, or it stands; &c.
<i>stíamo,</i>	that we stand; &c.
<i>stíate,</i>	that you stand; &c.
<i>stíano or *sténo,</i>	that they stand; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>*stéssi, &c.</i>	if I stood; or should stand; [&c.]
-------------------------	---------------------------------------

It should be observed, that the above irregular verbs, *fáre* excepted, in some of their compounds, become regular; as, *riandáre*, to go back again; *trasandáre*, to go beyond; *sovrasotáre*, to threaten; which are all varied like *amáre*. *Fáre*, in its compounds, always preserves its irregularities.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the Second Conjugation.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ére accented.

There are seventeen verbs in *ére* accented, which are irregular; viz.

<i>cadére,</i>	to fall ;
<i>dissuadére,</i>	to dissuade ;
<i>dolére,</i>	to grieve ;
<i>dovére,</i>	to owe ;
<i>giacére,</i>	to lie down ;
<i>parére,</i>	to seem ;
<i>persuadére,</i>	to persuade ;
<i>piacére,</i>	to please ;
<i>potére,</i>	to be able ;
<i>rimanére,</i>	to remain ;
<i>sapére,</i>	to know ;
<i>sedére,</i>	to sit down ;
<i>tacére,</i>	to silence ;
<i>tenére,</i>	to hold ;
<i>valére,</i>	to be worth ;
<i>vedére,</i>	to see ;
<i>volére,</i>	to will.

Variation of the verb cadére.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

cadére, to fall.

Past.

éssere cadúto, to have fallen.

GERUND.

cadéndo, falling.

PARTICIPLE.

cadúto, fallen.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

cado (*cággio*), I fall ;
cadí, thou fallest ;
cade, he, she, or it falls ;

cadíamo (*caggiámo*), we fall ;
cadéte, you fall ;
cadóno (*cággiono*), they fall.

Imperfect.

cadéva or *cadéa*, &c. I fell ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**cadí*, (*cadéi*, *cadétti*), I fell ;
cadésti, thou fellest ;
 **cadde* (*cadéo*, *cadétte*, he, she, or it fell ;
 [*cadè*),

cadémmo, we fell ;
cadéste, you fell ;

**caddero* (*cadéro*, *ca-*
 [*dér* ; *cadérono*, *ca-*
 [*déttero*), } they fell.

Future-indefinite.

cadero (*cadrò*), &c. I shall, or will fall ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

caderéi (*cadréi*, *cadería*, *cadria*), &c. I should, would, or could fall; [or might fall; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

cádi, &c. fall thou; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

cáda (*cággia*), that I fall; or may fall;
cáda (*cággia*), that thou fallest; &c.
cáda (*cággia*), that he, she, or it falls; &c.
cadiámo (*caggiámo*), that we fall; &c.
cadiáte (*caggiáte*), that you fall; &c.
cádano (*cággiano*), that they fall; &c.

Imperfect.

cadéssi, &c. if I fell; or should fall; &c.

Variation of the verb *dissuadére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

dissuadére, to dissuade.

Past.

**avère dissuáso*, or to have dissuaded; or to be
 **éssere dissuáso*, dissuaded.

GERUND.

dissuadéndo, *dissuading.*

PARTICIPLE.

**dissuáso,* *dissuaded.*

INDICATIVE.

Present.

dissuádo, &c. *I dissuade ; &c.*

Imperfect.

dissuadéva, &c. *I dissuaded ; &c.*

Perfect-definite.

**dissuási,* *I dissuaded ;*
dissuadésti, *thou dissuadest ;*
 **dissuáse,* *he, she, or it dissuaded ;*

dissuadémmo, *we dissuaded ;*
dissuadéste, *you dissuaded ;*
 **dissuásero,* *they dissuaded.*

Future-indefinite.

dissuaderò, &c. *I shall, or will dissuade ; &c.*

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

dissuaderéi (*dissuade-* *I should, would, or could*
 [ría), &c. *[dissuade ; or might dis-*
 [suade ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

dissuádi, &c. dissuade thou ; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

dissuáda, &c. that I dissuade ; or may dis-
[suade ; &c.

Imperfect.

dissuadéssi, &c. if I dissuaded ; or should
[dissuade ; &c.

Variation of the verb *dolére.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.

dolére, to grieve.

Past.

éssere [sì] dolúto, to have grieved.

GERUND.

doléndo, grieving.

PARTICIPLE.

dolúto, grieved.

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>dólgo</i> (<i>dógljo</i>),	I grieve ;
* <i>dúoli</i> ,	thou grieveſt ;
* <i>dúole</i> (<i>dóle</i>),	he, ſhe, or it grieves ;
<i>dogliámo</i> ,	we grieve ;
<i>doléte</i> ,	you grieve ;
<i>dólgano</i> (<i>dógljano</i>),	they grieve.

Imperfect.

doléva or *doléa*, &c. I grieved ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>dólſi</i> ,	I grieved ;
<i>doléſti</i> ,	thou grievedſt ;
* <i>dolſe</i> ,	he, ſhe, or it grieved ;
<i>dolémmo</i> ,	we grieved ;
<i>doléſte</i> ,	you grieved ;
* <i>dólſero</i> ,	they grieved.

Future-indefinite.

dorrò [by contraction I ſhall or will grieve ; &c.
[for *dolerò*], &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

dorréi (*dorría*) [by I ſhould, would, or could
[contraction for *de-* [grieve, or might grieve ;
[*leréi* (*dolería*)], &c. [&c.

IMPERATIVE.

* <i>duóla,</i>	grieve thou ;
* <i>dólga (dóglia),</i>	let him, her, or it grieve ;
<i>dogliámo,</i>	let us grieve ;
<i>doléte,</i>	grieve ye ;
* <i>dólgano (dógliano),</i>	let them grieve.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>dólga (dóglia),</i>	that I grieve ; or may grieve ;
* <i>dólga (dóglia),</i>	that thou grieveest ; &c.
* <i>dólga (dóglia),</i>	that he, she, or it grieves ; &c.
<i>dogliámo,</i>	that we grieve ; &c.
<i>doléte,</i>	that you grieve ; &c.
* <i>dólgano (dógliano),</i>	that they grieve ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>doléssi, &c.</i>	if I grieved ; or should [grieve ; &c.
-------------------------	---

Variation of the verb *dovére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>dovére,</i>	to owe.
----------------	---------

Past.

<i>avére dovúto,</i>	to have owed.
----------------------	---------------

GERUND.

<i>dovéndo,</i>	owing.
-----------------	--------

PARTICIPLE.

dovuto, owed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**dévo* or **débbo* (*dég-* I owe ;
 [gio]),
 **dévi* (*déi*), thou owest ;
 **dève* or **débbe* (*dée*), he, she, or it owes ;

dobbiamo (*debbiamo*, } we owe ;
 deggiamo, *devémo*), }
dovéte, you owe ;
 **dévono* or **débbono* }
 (*déggiono*, *déono*, } they owe.
 dénno), }

Imperfect.

dovéva or *dovéa*, &c. I owed ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

dovéi or *dovétti*, &c. I owed ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

doverò or *dovrò*, &c. I shall or will owe ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

doveréi or *dovréi* (*do-* } I should, would, or could owe ;
 vería or *dovría*), &c. } [or might owe ; &c.]

IMPERATIVE.

.....

.....

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>débba</i> (<i>déggia</i>),	that I owe, or may owe ;
* <i>débba</i> (<i>déggia</i>),	that thou owest ; &c.
* <i>débba</i> (<i>déggia</i>),	that he, she, or it owes ; &c.
* <i>dobbiamo</i> (<i>deggiamo</i>),	that we owe ; &c.
* <i>dobbiate</i> , (<i>deggiate</i>),	that you owe ; &c.
* <i>débbano</i> (<i>déggiano</i>),	that they owe ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>dovessi</i> , &c.	if I owed ; or should owe ; &c.
----------------------	---------------------------------

Variation of the verb *giacere*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>giacere</i> ,	to lie down.
------------------	--------------

Past.

<i>avere</i> or <i>essere</i> <i>giaciuto</i> ,	to have lain down.
---	--------------------

GERUND.

<i>giacendo</i> ,	lying down.
-------------------	-------------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>giaciuto</i> ,	lain down.
-------------------	------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>giaccio,</i> <i>giaci,</i> <i>giace,</i>	I lie down ; thou liest down ; he, she, or it lies down ;
* <i>giacciamo,</i> <i>giacete,</i> * <i>giacciono,</i>	we lie down ; you lie down ; they lie down.

Imperfect.

giacéva or *giacéa*, &c. I lay down ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>giacqui,</i> <i>giacésti,</i> * <i>giacque,</i>	I lay down ; thou layest down ; he, she, or it lay down ;
<i>giacémmo,</i> <i>giacéste,</i> * <i>giacquero,</i>	we lay down ; you lay down ; they lay down.

Future-indefinite.

giacerò, &c. I shall or will lie down ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

giaceréi (*giacería*), &c. } I should, would, or could lie
down ; or might lie down ;
&c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>giáci,</i>	lie thou down ;
* <i>giáccia,</i>	let him, her, or it lie down ;
* <i>giacciámo,</i>	let us lie down ;
<i>giacéte,</i>	lie ye down ;
* <i>giácciano,</i>	let them lie down.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>giáccia,</i>	that I lie down ; or may lie [down ;
* <i>giáccia,</i>	that thou liest down ; &c.
* <i>giáccia,</i>	that he, she, or it lies down ; [&c.
* <i>giacciámo,</i>	that we lie down ; &c.
<i>giaciáte,</i>	that you lie down ; &c.
* <i>giácciano,</i>	that they lie down ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>giacéssi, &c.</i>	if I lay down ; or should [lie down ; &c.
--------------------------	--

Variation of the verb *parére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>parére,</i>	to seem.
----------------	----------

Past.

<i>éssere parúto,</i>	to have seemed.
-----------------------	-----------------

ANALOGY.

GERUND.

paréndo, seeming.

PARTICIPLE.

parúto, seemed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**páio,* I seem ;
pári, thou seemest ;
páre (pár), he seems ;

pariámo, we seem ;
paréte, you seem ;
 **páiono* or *párono,* they seem.

Imperfect.

paréva or *paréa,* &c. I seemed ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**párvi (pársi),* I seemed ;
parésti, thou seemedst ;
 **párve (párse),* he, she, or it seemed ;

parémmo,- we seemed ;
paréste, you seemed ;
 **párvero (pársero),* they seemed.

Future-indefinite.

parrò [by contraction I shall or will seem ; &c.
 [for *parerò*], &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

parréi (*parría*), [by I should, would, or could
contraction for *pa-* seem ; or might seem ;
reréi (*parería*), &c. &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>pári,</i>	seem thou ;
* <i>páia,</i>	let him, her, or it seem ;
<i>pariámo,</i>	let us seem ;
<i>paréte,</i>	seem ye ;
* <i>páiano,</i>	let them seem.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>páia,</i>	that I seem ; or may seem ;
* <i>páia,</i>	that thou seemest ; &c.
* <i>páia,</i>	that he, she, or it seems ; &c.
<i>pariámo,</i>	that we seem ; &c.
* <i>paiáte,</i>	that you seem ; &c.
* <i>páiano,</i>	that they seem ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>paréssi,</i> &c.	if I seemed ; or should seem ; [&c.]
---------------------	---

Variation of the verb *persuadére.*

[See *dissuadére*, p. 213.]

Variation of the verb *piacére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

piacére, to please.

Past.

éssere piaciúto, to be pleased.

GERUND, &c.

[See *giacére*, p. 219.]

IMPERATIVE.

piáci, please thou ;
**piáccia,* let him, her, or it please ;

**piacciámo,* let us please ;
**piacciáte,* please ye ;
**piácciano,* let them please.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

**piáccia,* that I please ; or may please ;
**piáccia,* that thou pleasest ; &c.
**piáccia,* that he, she, or it pleases ; &c.

**piacciámo,* that we please ; &c.
**piacciáte,* that you please ; &c.
**piácciano,* that they please ; &c.

Variation of the verb *potére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

potére, to be able.

Past.

avére, or *éssere potúto*, to have been able.

GERUND.

poténdo, being able.

PARTICIPLE.

potúto, been able.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>póssó</i> ,	I am able ;
* <i>puó</i> (<i>puó'</i>),	thou art able ;
* <i>può</i> (<i>puóte</i> , <i>póte</i>),	he, she, or it is able ;
* <i>possíamo</i> (<i>potémo</i>),	we are able ;
<i>potéte</i> ,	you are able ;
* <i>póssono</i> (<i>pónno</i> , <i>pón</i>),	they are able.

Imperfect.

potéva or *potéa*, &c. I was able ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

potéi, &c. I was able ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

potrò [by contraction I shall *or* will be able ; &c.
[for *poterò*], &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

potréi (*potría*) [by
contraction for *po-
teréi* (*potería*)] (*po-
ría*), &c. } I should, would, *or* could be
able ; *or* might be able ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.¹

**póssa,* be thou able ;
**póssa,* let him, her, *or* it be able ;

**possíamo,* let us be able ;
**possíate,* be ye able ;
**póssano,* let them be able.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

**póssa, &c.* that I be able ; *or* may be
[able ; &c.

Imperfect.

potéssi, &c. if I was able ; *or* should be
[able ; &c.

Variation of the verb *rimanére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

rimanére, to remain.

Past.

**éssere rimásto,* to have remained.

GERUND.

rimanéndo, remaining.

PARTICIPLE.

**rimásto (rimáso),* remained.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**rimángo, (rimángo),* I remain ;
rimáni, thou remainest ;
rimáne, he, she, or it remains ;

rimaniámo, we remain ;
rimanéte, you remain ;
rimángo, they remain.

Imperfect.

rimanéva or *rimanéa,* I remained ; &c.
 &c.

Perfect-definite.

**rimási,*
rimanésti,
**rimáse,* I remained ;
 thou remainedst ;
 he, she, or it remained ;

rimanémmo,
rimanéste,
**rimásero,* we remained ;
 you remained ;
 they remained.

Futuro-indefinite.

rimarrò [by contraction for *rimanerò*], } I shall or will remain ; &c.
&c. }

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

rimarréi (*rimarría*) } I should, would, or could
by contraction for } remain ; or might re-
rimaneréi (*rimane-* } main ; &c.
ría), &c. }

IMPERATIVE.

rimáni,
**rimánnga,* remain thou ;
 let him, her, or it remain ;

rimaniámo,
rimanéte,
**rimángano,* let us remain ;
 remain ye ;
 let them remain.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*rimánga</i> (<i>rimánga</i>),	that I remain ; <i>or</i> may remain ;
<i>*rimánga</i> (<i>rimánga</i>),	that thou remainest ; &c.
<i>*rimánga</i> ,	that he, she, <i>or</i> it remains ; &c.
<i>rimaniámo</i> ,	that we remain ; &c.
<i>rimaniáte</i> ,	that you remain ; &c.
<i>*rimángano</i> ,	that they remain ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>rimanéssi</i> , &c.	if I remained ; <i>or</i> should re- [main ; &c.
------------------------	---

Variation of the verb *sapére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>sapére</i> ,	to know.
-----------------	----------

Past.

<i>avére sapúto</i> ,	to have known.
-----------------------	----------------

GERUND.

<i>sapéndo</i> ,	knowing.
------------------	----------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>sapúto</i> ,	known.
-----------------	--------

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>so</i> ,	I know ;
* <i>sái</i> ,	thou knowest ;
* <i>sa</i> (<i>sápe</i>),	he, she, or it knows ;
<i>sappiámo</i> ,	we know ;
<i>sapéte</i> ,	you know ;
* <i>sánno</i> ,	they know.

Imperfect.

sapéva or *sapéa*, &c. I knew ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>séppi</i> ,	I knew ;
<i>sapésti</i> ,	thou knewest ;
* <i>séppe</i> ,	he, she, or it knew ;
<i>sapémmo</i> ,	we knew ;
<i>sapéste</i> ,	you knew ;
* <i>séppero</i> ,	they knew.

Future-indefinite.

saprò [by contraction I shall or will know ; &c.
[for *saperò*], &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

saprèi (*sapría*) [by contraction I should, would, or could
traction for *saperèi* (*sapería*)], &c. [know ; or might know ;
&c.]

IMPERATIVE.

<i>*sáppi,</i>	know thou ;
<i>*sáppia,</i>	let him, her, or it know ;
<i>*sappiámo,</i>	let us know ;
<i>*sappiáte,</i>	know ye ;
<i>*sáppiamo,</i>	let them know.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*sáppia, &c.</i>	that I know ; or may know ; [&c.
-------------------------	-------------------------------------

Imperfect.

<i>sapéssi, &c.</i>	if I knew ; or should know ; [&c.
-------------------------	--------------------------------------

Variation of the verb *sedére.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>sedére,</i>	to sit.
----------------	---------

Past.

<i>avére or éssersi sedúto,</i>	to have sat.
---------------------------------	--------------

GERUND.

<i>sedéndo (seggéndo),</i>	sitting.
----------------------------	----------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>sedúto,</i>	seated.
----------------	---------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**siédo* or **ségga*, I sit ;
 **siédi*, thou sittest ;
 **siéde*, he, she, or it sits ;

sedíamo or **seggiámo*, we sit ;
sedéte, you sit ;
 **siédono* or **séggono*, they sit.

Imperfect.

sedéva or *sedéa*, &c. I sat ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

sedéi or *sedétti*, &c. I sat ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

sederò (*sedrò*), &c. I shall or will sit ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

sederéi (*sedréri*, *sede-
[ría)*, &c. I should, would, or could sit ;
 [or might sit ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

**siédi*, sit thou ;
 **siéda* or **ségga*, let him, her, or it sit ;

sedíamo (*seggiámo*), let us sit ;
sedéte, sit ye ;
 **siédano* or **séggano*, let them sit.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*siéda</i> or <i>*ségga</i> (<i>sé-gia</i>),	that I sit ; <i>or</i> may sit ;
<i>*siéda</i> or <i>*ségga</i> (<i>sé-gia or séggi</i>),	that thou sittest ; &c.
<i>*siéda</i> or <i>*ségga</i> ,	that he, she, <i>or</i> it sits ; &c.
<i>sediámo</i> or <i>*seggiámo</i> ,	that we sit ; &c.
<i>sediáte</i> (<i>seggiáte</i>),	that you sit ; &c.
<i>*siédano</i> or <i>*séggano</i> (<i>séggiáno</i>),	that they sit ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>sedéssi</i> , &c.	if I sat ; <i>or</i> should sit ; &c.
----------------------	---------------------------------------

Variation of the verb *tacére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>tacére</i> ,	to be silent.
-----------------	---------------

Past.

<i>anáere</i> or <i>éssersi taciúto</i> ,	to have been silent.
---	----------------------

GERUND.

<i>tacéndo</i> ,	being silent.
------------------	---------------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>taciúto</i> ,	been silent.
------------------	--------------

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

tácio (tácio), I am silent ;
táci, thou art silent ;
táce, he, she, or it is silent ;

taciámo, we are silent ;
tacéte, you are silent ;
táciono (táciono), they are silent.

Imperfect.

tacéva or *tacéa*, &c. I was silent ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**táqui*, I was silent ;
tacésti, thou wast silent ;
 **táque*, he, she, or it was silent ;

tacémmo, we were silent ;
tacéste, you were silent ;
 **tacquero*, they were silent.

Future-indefinite.

tacerò, &c. I shall or will be silent ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

taceréi (tacería), &c. { I should, would, or could be
 silent ; or might be si-
 lent ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>táci,</i>	be thou silent ;
<i>tácia</i> (<i>táccia</i>),	let him, her, or it be silent ;
<i>taciámo,</i>	let us be silent ;
<i>tacéte,</i>	be ye silent ;
<i>táciámo,</i> (<i>tácciamo</i>),	let them be silent.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>tácia</i> (<i>táccia</i>), &c.	that I be silent ; or may be [silent ; &c.
-------------------------------------	---

Imperfect.

<i>tacéssi,</i> &c.	if I were silent ; or should [be silent ; &c.
---------------------	--

Variation of the verb *tenére.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>tenére,</i>	to hold.
----------------	----------

Past.

<i>avére</i> or <i>éssersi tenúto,</i>	to have holden.
--	-----------------

GERUND.

<i>tenéndo,</i>	holding.
-----------------	----------

PARTICIPLES.

<i>tenúto,</i>	holden.
----------------	---------

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

*tengo,	I hold ;
*tiéni,	thou holdest ;
*tiéne,	he, she, or it holds ;
teníamos,	we hold ;
tenéte,	you hold ;
*tengono,	they hold.

Imperfect.

tenéva or tenéa, &c. I held ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

*ténni,	I held ;
tenésti,	thou heldest ;
*ténne,	he, she, or it held ;
tenémmo,	we held ;
tenéste,	you held ;
*ténnero,	they held.

Future-indefinite.

terrò [by contraction } I shall or will hold ; &c.
for tenerò], &c. }

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

terréi (terría) [by con- } I should, would, or could
traction for tene- } hold ; or might hold ;
réi (tenería)], &c. } &c.

VERB.**207****IMPERATIVE.**

<i>*tiéni,</i>	hold thou ;
<i>*ténga (téгна),</i>	let him, her, or it hold ;
<i>teniámo,</i>	let us hold ;
<i>tenéte,</i>	hold ye ;
<i>*téngano,</i>	let them hold.

CONJUNCTIVE.*Present.*

<i>*ténga,</i>	that I hold ; or may hold ;
<i>*ténga,</i>	that thou holdest ; &c.
<i>*ténga,</i>	that he, she, or it holds ; &c.
<i>teniámo,</i>	that we hold ; &c.
<i>teniáte,</i>	that you hold ; &c.
<i>*téngano,</i>	that they hold ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>tenéssi, &c.</i>	if I held ; or should hold ; &c.
-------------------------	----------------------------------

Variation of the verb *valére.***INFINITIVE.***Present.*

<i>valére,</i>	to be worth.
----------------	--------------

Past.

<i>avére or éssere valúto,</i>	to have been worth.
--------------------------------	---------------------

ANALOGY.

GERUND.

Present.

valéndo, being worth.

Past.

valúto (válido), been worth.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**válgo (váglio),* I am worth ;
váli, thou art worth ;
vále (val), he, she, or it is worth ;

valámo, we are worth ;
valéte, you are worth ;
**válgono or *vagliano,* they are worth.

Imperfect.

valéva or valéa, &c. I was worth ; &c.

Perfect-indefinite.

**válisí,* I was worth ;
valésti, thou wast worth ;
**válse,* he, she, or it was worth ;

valémmo, we were worth ;
valéste, you were worth ;
**válsero,* they were worth.

Future-indefinite.

varrò [by contraction I shall or will be worth ;
 for *valerò*], &c. [&c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

varréi (*varría*) [by I should, would, or could be contraction for *va-* worth; or might be *leréi* (*valería*)], &c. \ worth; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

váli, be thou worth ;
**válga,* let him, her, or it be worth ;

valiámo, let us be worth ;
valéte, be ye worth ;
**válgano* or **vágliano,* let them be worth.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

**válga* or **vágliá,* that I be worth ; or might
 [be worth ;
**válga* or **vágliá,* that thou be worth ; &c.
**válga* or **vágliá,* that he, she, or it be worth ;
 [&c.

valiámo, that we be worth ; &c.
valiáte, that you be worth ; &c.
**válgano* or **vágliano,* that they be worth ; &c.

Imperfect.

valéssi, &c. if I were worth ; or should
 [be worth ; &c.

Variation of the verb *vedere*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

vedere, to see.

Past.

avere veduto, to have seen.

GERUND.

vedendo or **veggendo*, seeing.

PARTICIPLE.

Present.

**veggente*, seeing.

Past.

veduto (visto), seen.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

vedo, **veggo* or **veggió*, I see ;
vedi (ve'), thou seest ;
vede, he, she, or it sees ;

vediamo or **veggiamo*, we see ;
vedete, you see ;
vedono, **veggono*, or
 [**veggiono*, they see.

Imperfect.

vedéva or *vedéa*, &c. I saw ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*vîdi,</i>	I saw ;
<i>vedésti,</i>	thou sawest ;
<i>*vîde,</i>	hē, she, or it saw ;
<i>vedémmo,</i>	we saw ;
<i>vedéste,</i>	you saw ;
<i>*vîdero (vîder),</i>	they saw.

Future-indefinite.

vedrò [by contraction for *vederò*], &c. I shall or will see ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

vedréi (vedría) [by contraction for *vederéi (vedería)*], &c. I should, would, or could see ; or might see ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

védi (ve'), see thou ;
*véda, *végga, or *vég-* let him, her, or it see ;
[gia,

vedhámo or **uggiámo,* let us see ;
vedéte, see ye ;
*védano, *véggano, or* let them see.
*[*véggiano,*

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>véda, *végga, or *vég-</i>	that I see ; or may see ;
<i>[gia,</i>	
<i>véda, *végga, or *vég-</i>	that thou seest ; &c.
<i>[gia,</i>	
<i>véda, *végga, or *vég-</i>	that he, she, or it sees ; &c.
<i>[gia,</i>	
<i>vedíamo or *veggiá-</i>	that we see ; &c.
<i>[mo,</i>	
<i>vedíate or *veggiáte,</i>	that you see ; &c.
<i>védano, *véggano, or</i>	that they see ; &c.
<i>[*veggiáno,</i>	

Imperfect.

<i>vedéssi, &c.</i>	if I saw ; or should see ; &c.
-------------------------	--------------------------------

Variation of the verb *volére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>volére,</i>	to will ; or to be willing.
----------------	-----------------------------

Past.

<i>avére volúto,</i>	to have been willing.
----------------------	-----------------------

GERUND.

<i>voléndo,</i>	being willing.
-----------------	----------------

PARTICIPLE.

<i>volúto,</i>	been willing.
----------------	---------------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>vógljo</i> or * <i>vo'</i> ,	I am willing ;
* <i>vuóti</i> (<i>vuóli, vuo'</i>),	thou art willing ;
* <i>vuóle,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it is willing ;
* <i>vogliámo,</i>	we are willing ;
<i>voléte,</i>	you are willing ;
* <i>vógliono,</i>	they are willing.

Imperfect.

<i>voléva</i> or <i>voléa,</i> &c.	I was willing ; &c.
------------------------------------	---------------------

Perfect-definite.

* <i>vólli,</i>	I was willing ;
<i>volésti,</i>	thou wast willing ;
* <i>vólle,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it was willing ;
<i>volémmo,</i>	we were willing ;
<i>voléste,</i>	you were willing ;
* <i>vóllero,</i>	they were willing,

Future-indefinite.

<i>vorrò,</i> &c.	I shall <i>or</i> will be willing, &c.
-------------------	---

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>vorréi</i> (<i>vorría</i>), &c.	I should, would, <i>or</i> could be willing ; <i>or</i> might be wil- ling ; &c.
--------------------------------------	--

IMPERATIVE.

* <i>vóglí,</i>	be thou willing ;
* <i>vóglia,</i>	let him, her, or it be willing ;
* <i>vogliámo,</i>	let us be willing ;
* <i>vogliáte,</i>	be ye willing ;
* <i>vógliano,</i>	let them be willing.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>vóglia, &c.</i>	that I be willing ; or may be [willing ; &c.]
--------------------------	--

Imperfect.

<i>voléssi, &c.</i>	if I were willing ; or should [be willing ; &c.]
-------------------------	---

All these verbs in their compounds preserve always their irregularities.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs in ere, unaccented.

All the verbs which in the *infinitive* mood end in *ere*, unaccented, are generally irregular in the *perfect-definite* of the *indicative*, and in the *participle*. The *perfect-definite* always ends in *ssi* or *si* ; and the *participle* in *tto* or *to*, or in *ssó* or *so* ; as, *scrív-ere*, to write ; *scrí-ssi*, I wrote ; *scrí-tto*, written ; *vínc-ere*, to conquer ; *vín-si*, I conquered ; *vín-to*, conquered :

discút-ere, to discuss ; *discú-ssi*, I discussed ; *discú-ssó*, discussed :

mórd-ere, to bite ; *mór-si*, I bit ; *mór-so*, bitten.

The verbs ending in *ere*, unaccented, in which *ere* is preceded by a vowel, in the *perfect-definite* change *ere* into *ssi*, and in the *participle* into *tto* ; as *trá-ere*, to draw ; *trá-ssi*, I drew ; *trá-tto*, drawn.

The verbs ending in *ere* preceded by the consonant *c*, *gg*, or *v*, or, what is the same, ending in *cere*, *ggere*, or *vere* ; as, *cuó-cere*, to cook ; *lé-ggere*, to read ; *scrí-vere*, to write ; in the *perfect* change those terminations into *ssi*, and in the *participle* into *tto*.

Those ending in *mere*, *tere*, or *ttere* from the *perfect* in *ssi*, and the *participle* in *ssó*.

But if the consonants *c*, *t*, *v* are preceded by one of the consonants *l*, *n*, *r*, the verbs, in the *perfect*, change *cere*, *tere*, *vere* into *si*, and in the *participle*, into *to* or *so*, and retain the preceding consonant.

Those in *gere* form the *perfect* in *ssi*, and the *participle* in *tto* ; but if the *g* is preceded by another consonant, they form the *perfect* in *si*, and the *participle* in *to* or *so*.

Verbs in *bere*, *guere*, or *lere*, change these terminations always into *si* for the *perfect*, and into *to* for the *participle*. And those in *dere* or *rere*, in the *participle* change them always into *so*.

Verbs in *giere* form the *perfect* in *lsi*, and the *participle* in *lto*. And all those in *gnere* form the *perfect* in *nsi*, and the *participle* in *nto*.

Verbs in *nere* form the *participle* in *sto*.

All the verbs in *ere* unaccented may thus be arranged in sixteen classes according to their terminations ; viz.

<i>bere</i> ; as,	}	<i>assór-bere</i> , to absorb ; <i>assór-si</i> , I absorbed ; <i>assór-to</i> , absorbed :
		<i>cuó-cere</i> , to cook ; <i>có-ssi</i> , I cooked ; <i>có-tto</i> , cooked :
<i>cere</i> ;	}	<i>vín-cere</i> , to conquer ; <i>vín-si</i> , I conquered ; <i>vín-to</i> , conquered :

dere ; as, *úr-dere*, to burn ; *úr-si*, I burnt ; *úr-so*, burnt :

ere ; { *trá-ere*, to draw ; *trá-ssi*, I drew ; *trá-tto*,
drawn :

gere ; { *dirí-gere*, to direct ; *diré-ssi*, I directed ; *diré-
tto*, directed :
giún-gere, to arrive ; *giún-si*, I arrived ; *giún-
to*, arrived :
mér-gere, to dive ; *mér-si*, I dived ; *mér-so*,
dived :

ggere ; *lé-ggere*, to read ; *lé-ssi*, I read ; *lé-tto*, read :

gliere ; { *có-gliere*, to gather ; *có-lsi*, I gathered ; *có-lto*,
gathered :

gnere ; { *spé-gnere*, to extinguish ; *spé-nsi*, I extinguish-
ed ; *spé-nto*, extinguished :

guere ; { *distín-guere*, to distinguish ; *distín-si*, I distin-
guished ; *distín-to*, distinguished :

lere ; { *svél-lere*, to root up ; *svél-si*, I rooted up ; *svél-
to*, rooted up :

mere ; { *esprí-mere*, to express ; *espré-ssi*, I expressed ;
espré-sso, expressed :

nerere ; *pó-nerere*, to put ; *pó-si*, I put ; *pó-sto*, put :

rere ; *cór-rere*, to run ; *cór-si*, I run ; *cór-so*, run :

tere ; { *discú-tere*, to discuss ; *discú-ssi*, I discussed ;
discú-sso, discussed :
rivér-tere, to return ; *revér-si*, I returned ; *ri-
vér-so*, returned :

ttere ; { *conné-ttere*, to connect ; *conné-ssi*, I connect-
ed ; *conné-sso*, connected :

vere ; { *scrí-vere*, to write ; *scrí-ssi*, I wrote ; *scrí-tto*,
written :
vól-vere, to turn ; *vól-si*, I turned ; *vól-to*,
turned.

Variation of the verb *assórbere*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *bere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**assórbere*, to absorb.*Past.***avére* or *éssere assórto*, to have or to be absorbed.

GERUND.

assorbéndo, absorbing.

PARTICIPLE.

**assórto*, absorbed.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**assórbo*, &c. I absorb; &c.*Imperfect.**assorbéva* or *assorbéa*, &c. I absorbed; &c.*Perfect-definite.*

**assorsi*, I absorbed;
assorbésti, thou absorbedst;
**assórse*, he, she, or it absorbed;

assorbémmo, we absorbed;
assorbéste, you absorbed;
**assórsero*, they absorbed.

ANALOGY.

Future-indefinite.[See *crédere*, p. 141.]Variation of the verb *cuócere*.(First paradigm of the verbs ending in *cere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**cuócere*, to cook.*Past.***avére cótto*, to have cooked.

GERUND.

cocéndo, cooking.

PARTICIPLE.

**cótto*, cooked.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**cuóco*, &c. I cook ; &c.*Imperfect.**cocéva* or *cocéa*, &c. I cooked ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>cóssi,</i>	I cooked ;
<i>cocésti,</i>	thou cookedst ;
* <i>cósse,</i>	he, she, or it cooked ;
<i>cocémmo,</i>	we cooked ;
<i>cocéste,</i>	you cooked ;
* <i>cóssero,</i>	they cooked.

Future-indefinite.

<i>cocerò, &c.</i>	I shall or will cook ; &c.
------------------------	----------------------------

CONDITIONAL, &c.

All verbs ending in *cere* preceded by an *u* (*úcere*), as *condúcere*, to conduct, and its compounds, in the *infinitive* mood are contracted into *úrre* ; *condúrre*, to conduct ; &c. They are also contracted in the *future-indefinite*, and in the *present* of the *conditional* ; as *condurrò*, I shall or will conduct ; *condurréi* (*condurría*), I should, would, or could conduct ; &c. And they form the *participle* in *óto* ; as *condóto*, conducted ; &c.

Variation of the verb *víncere*.

(Second paradigm of the verbs ending in *cere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>víncere,</i>	to conquer.
-----------------	-------------

Past.

* <i>avére vinto,</i>	to have conquered.
-----------------------	--------------------

ANALOGY.

GERUND.

vincendo, conquering.

PARTICIPLĒ.

**vinto,* conquered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

vinco, &c. I conquer ; &c.

Imperfect.

vincēva or vincēa, &c. I conquered ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>vinsi,</i>	I conquered ;
<i>vincēsti,</i>	thou conqueredst ;
* <i>vinse,</i>	he, she, or it conquered ;
<i>vincēmmo,</i>	we conquered ;
<i>vincēste,</i>	you conquered ;
* <i>vinsero,</i>	they conquered.

*Future-indefinite, &c.*Variation of the verb *ardere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *dere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

ardere, to burn.

Past.

**avēre ūrso,* to have burnt.

GERUND.

ardēndo, burning.

PARTICIPLE.

**ārso,* burnt.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

ārdo, &c. I burn ; &c.

Imperfect.

ardēva or ardēa, &c. I burnt ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*ārsi,</i>	I burnt ;
<i>ardēsti,</i>	thou burntst ;
<i>*ārse,</i>	he, she, or it burnt ;
<i>ardēmmo,</i>	we burnt ;
<i>ardēste,</i>	you burnt ;
<i>*ārsero,</i>	they burnt.

Future-indefinite, &c.

The verb *chiedere*, to ask, and its compounds, in the *participle* make *chièsto*, asked; &c. And in the *present* of the *indicative*, of the *imperative*, and of the *conjunctive* moods, they may have also the irregular forms *chièggio*, I ask; *chièggia*, let him ask; *chièggia*, that I ask, or may ask; &c.

The verb *rispondere*, to answer, and its compounds, in the *participle* make *rispòsto*, answered; &c. And *ascóndere*, to conceal, and its compounds, make *ascósto* and *ascóso*, concealed; &c.

The verb *fóndere*, to melt, and its compounds, form the *perfect* in *úsi*; as *fúsi*, I melted; and the *participle* in *úso*; as *fúso*, melted; &c.

Variation of the verb *tráere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

tráere, to draw.

Past.

**avère trátto*, to have drawn.

GERUND.

tráendo, drawing.

PARTICIPLE.

**trátto*, drawn.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>tráo</i> or <i>*trággo</i> ,	I draw ;
<i>trái</i> ,	thou drawest ;
<i>tráe</i> ,	he, she, or it draws ;
<i>traiámo</i> or <i>*traggiámo</i> ,	we draw ;
<i>traéte</i> ,	you draw ;
<i>*trággono</i> ,	they draw.

Imperfect.

<i>traéva</i> or <i>traéa</i> , &c.	I drew ; &c.
-------------------------------------	--------------

Perfect-definite.

<i>*trássi</i> ,	I drew ;
<i>traésti</i> ,	thou drewest ;
<i>*trásse</i> ,	he, she, or it drew ;
<i>traémmo</i> ,	we drew ;
<i>traéste</i> ,	you drew ;
<i>*trássero</i> ,	they drew.

Future-indefinite, &c.

All verbs ending in *ere* preceded by a vowel, as *trá-ere*, &c. are generally syncopated in the *infinitive* mood, and make *trárre*, to draw ; &c. And they consequently are syncopated in the *future-indefinite*, and in the *present* of the *conditional* ; as, *tarrò*, I shall or will draw ; *tarréi* (*tarría*), I should, would, or could draw ; &c.

Variation of the verb *dirigere*.(First paradigm of the verbs ending in *gere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**dirigere,* to direct.*Past.***avere dirétto,* to have directed.

GERUND.

dirigéndo, directing.

PARTICIPLE.

**dirétto,* directed.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**dirigo, &c.* I direct ; &c.*Imperfect.**dirigéva or dirigéa, &c.* I directed ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*diréssi,</i>	I directed ;
<i>dirigésti,</i>	thou directedst ;
<i>*dirésse,</i>	he, she, or it directed ;
<i>dirigémmo,</i>	we directed ;
<i>dirigéste,</i>	you directed ;
<i>*diréssero,</i>	they directed.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Variation of the verb *giungere*.

(Second paradigm of the verbs ending in *gere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>giungere,</i>	to arrive.
------------------	------------

Past.

<i>*essere giunto,</i>	to have arrived.
------------------------	------------------

GERUND.

<i>giungénto,</i>	arriving.
-------------------	-----------

PARTICIPLE.

**giúnto,* arrived.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

giúngo, &c. I arrive ; &c.

Imperfect.

giungéva or giungéa, &c. I arrived ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**giúnsi,* I arrived ;
giungésti, thou arrivedst ;
**giúnse,* he, she, or it arrived ;

giungémmo, we arrived ;
giungéste, you arrived ;
**giúnsero,* they arrived.

Future-indefinite, &c.

The verb *stríngere*, to bind ; and its compounds, in the *participle* make *strétto*, bound ; &c.

All verbs ending in *gere* preceded by an *n* (*ngere*), may also end in *gnere* ; as *giúngere* or *giúgnere*, to arrive ; *stríngere* or *strígnere*, to bind ; &c.

Variation of the verb *mérgere*.(Third paradigm of the verbs ending in *gere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**mérgere,* to dive.*Past.***avére* or *éssere mérso,* to have dived.

GERUND.

mergéndo, diving.

PARTICIPLE.

**mérso,* dived.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**mérgo, &c.* I dive ; &c.*Imperfect.**mergéva* or *mergéa, &c.* I dived ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**mérsi,*
mergésti,
 **mérse,*

I dived ;
 thou divedst ;
 he, she, or it dived ;

mergémmo,
mergéste,
 **mérsero,*

we dived ;
 you dived ;
 they dived.

*Future-indefinite, &c.*Variation of the verb *leggere*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ggere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**leggere,*

to read.

*Past.***avére létto,*

to have read.

GERUND.

leggéndo,

reading.

PARTICIPLE.

**létto,*

read.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

léggo, &c. I read ; &c.

Imperfect.

leggéva or leggéa, &c. I read ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>léssi,</i>	I read ;
<i>leggésti,</i>	thou readst ;
* <i>lésse,</i>	he, she, or it read ;
<i>leggémmo,</i>	we read ;
<i>leggéste,</i>	you read ;
* <i>léssero,</i>	they read.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Verbs in *ggere* preceded by an *u* (*úggere*), may be syncopated into *úrre* ; as, *distrúggere* or *distrúrre*, to destroy ; &c. And consequently they are syncopated in the *future-indefinite* and in the *present* of the *conditional* ; as, *distrurrò*, I shall or will destroy ; *distrurréi* (*distrurría*), I should, would, or could destroy ; &c.

Variation of the verb *cógliere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gliere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

cógliere, to gather.

Past.

**avére cólto*, to have gathered.

GERUND.

cogliéndo, gathering.

PARTICIPLE.

**cólto*, gathered.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**cólgo* (*cóglio*), I gather;
 cógli, &c. thou gatherest; &c.

Imperfect.

cogliéva or *cogliéa*, &c. I gathered; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**cólsi*, I gathered;
 cogliésti, thou gatheredst;
 **cólse*, he, she, or it gathered;

cogliémmo, we gathered;
 cogliésti, you gathered;
 **cólsero*, they gathered.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Verbs in the *infinitive* ending in *gliere*; as *cógliere*, to gather; *scégliere*, to choose, &c. may be syncopated into *córrre*, to gather; *scérre*, to choose; &c. They are consequently syncopated in the *future-indefinite*, and in the *present* of the *conditional*, making *coglierò* or *corrò*, I shall or will gather; *sceglìerò* or *scerrò*, I shall or will choose; *coglieréi* (*cogliería*), or *corréi* (*corría*), I should, would, or could gather; *sceglìeréi* (*sceglìería*), or *scerréi* (*scerría*), I should, would, or could choose; &c.

Variation of the verb *spégnere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *gnere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

spégnere, to extinguish.

Past.

**avére spénto*, to have extinguished.

GERUND.

spégnéndo, extinguishing.

PARTICIPLE.

**spénto*, extinguished.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**spéngo* (*spégno*),
spégni, &c.

I extinguish ;
 thou extinguishest ; &c.

Imperfect.

spegnéva or *spegnéa*, &c. I extinguished ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**spénsi*,
spegnésti,
 **spénse*,

I extinguished ;
 thou extinguishedst ;
 he, she, or it extinguished ;

spegnémmo,
spegnéste,
 **spénsero*,

we extinguished ;
 you extinguished ;
 they extinguished.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Verbs ending in *gnere* may end also in *ngere* ; as, *spégnere* or *spéngere*, to extinguish ; *cígnere* or *cíngere*, to gird ; &c.

Variation of the verb *distínguere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *guere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

distínguere,

to distinguish.

Past.

**avére distinto,* to have distinguished.

GERUND.

distinguéndo, distinguishing.

PARTICIPLE.

**distinto,* distinguished.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

distinguo, &c. I distinguish ; &c.

Imperfect.

distinguéva or *distinguéa,* I distinguished, &c.
[&c.]

Perfect-definite.

**distinsi,* I distinguished ;
distinguésti, thou distinguishedst ;
**distinse,* he, she, or it distinguished ;

distinguémmo, we distinguished ;
distinguéste, you distinguished ;
**distinsero,* they distinguished.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Variation of the verb *svéllere*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *lere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**svéllere*, to root up.*Past.***avére svélto*, to have rooted up.

GERUND.

svelléndo, rooting up.

PARTICIPLE.

**svélto*, rooted up.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**svélló (svélgo)*, I root up ;
svélli, &c. thou rootest up ; &c.*Imperfect.**svelléva or svelléa, &c.* I rooted up ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>svélsi,</i>	I rooted up ;
<i>svellésti,</i>	thou rootedst up ;
* <i>svélse,</i>	he, she, or it rooted up ;
<i>svellémmo,</i>	we rooted up ;
<i>svelléste,</i>	you rooted up ;
* <i>svélsero,</i>	they rooted up.

Future-indefinite, &c.

The verb *espéllere*, to expel ; *impéllere*, to impel ; and their compounds, in the *perfect* make *espúlsi*, I expelled ; *impúlsi*, I impelled ; and in the *participle*, *espúlso*, expelled ; *impúlso*, impelled ; &c.

•Variation of the verb *esprimere*.

(Paradigm the verbs ending in *mere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

esprimere, to express.

Past.

**avere espresso,* to have expressed.

GERUND.

esprimendo, expressing.

ANALOGY.

PARTICIPLE.

**espréssso,* expressed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

esprímo, &c. I express ; &c.

Imperfect.

espriméva or espriméa ; &c. I expressed ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**espréssi,* I expressed ;
esprimésti, thou expressedst ;
**espréssse,* he, she, or it expressed ;

esprimémmo, we expressed ;
espriméste, you expressed ;
**espréssero,* they expressed.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Assumere, to assume, and its compounds, in the *perfect* make *assúnsi,* I assumed ; and in the *participle,* *assún-
to,* assumed. And *redímere,* to redeem, makes *redénsi,*
I redeemed ; *redénto,* redeemed.

Variation of the verb *pónere*.

(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *nerē*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

pónere, to put.

Past.

**avére pósto,* to have put.

GERUND.

ponéndo, putting.

PARTICIPLE.

**pósto,* put.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**póngo,* I put ;
póni, &c. thou puttest ; &c.

Imperfect.

ponéva or ponéa, &c. I put ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*pósi,</i>	I put ;
<i>pónesti,</i>	thou puttest ;
<i>*póse,</i>	he, she, or it put ;
<i>ponémmo,</i>	we put ;
<i>ponèste,</i>	you put ;
<i>*póssero,</i>	they put.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Verbs in *nere*, as, *pónere*, to put ; *espónere*, to expose ; &c. in the *infinitive* are generally syncopated into *pórre*, to put ; *espórre*, to expose ; &c. They are also syncopated in the *future* ; as, *porrò*, I shall or will put ; *esporrò*, I shall or will expose ; and in the *conditional* ; as, *porréi* (*porría*), I should, would, or could put ; *esporréi* (*esporría*), I should, would, or could expose ; &c.

Variation of the verb *córrere*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *rere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>córrere,</i>	to run.
-----------------	---------

Past.

<i>*éssere</i> or <i>avére córso,</i>	to have run.
---------------------------------------	--------------

GERUND.

corréndo, running.

PARTICIPLE.

**córso,* run.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

córro, &c. I run ; &c.

Imperfect.

corréva or corréa, &c. I ran ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**córsi,* I ran ;
corrésti, thou rannest ;
 **córse,* he, she, or it ran ;

corrémmo, we ran ;
corréste, you ran ;
 **córsero,* they ran.

Future-indefinite.

correrò, &c. I shall or will run ; &c.

CONDITIONAL, &c.

Variation of the verb *discútere*.(First paradigm of the verbs ending in *tere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**discútere,* to discuss.*Past.***avére discússo,* to have discussed.

GERUND.

discuténdo, discussing.

PARTICIPLE.

**discússo,* discussed.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**discúto, &c.* I discuss; &c.*Imperfect.**discutéva or discutéa, &c.* I discussed; &c.

Perfect-definite.

*discússi, discutésti, *discússe,	I discussed ; thou discussedst ; he, she, or it discussed ;
discutémmo, discutéste, *discússero,	we discussed ; you discussed ; they discussed.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Variation of the verb *rivértere*.

(Second paradigm of the verbs ending in *tere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>rivértere,</i>	to return.
-------------------	------------

Past.

* <i>éssere rivérso,</i>	to have returned.
--------------------------	-------------------

GERUND.

<i>riverténdo,</i>	returning.
--------------------	------------

PARTICIPLE.

* <i>rivérso,</i>	returned.
-------------------	-----------

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**rivéto, &c.*

I return ; &c.

*Imperfect.**rivertéva or rivertéa, &c.*

I returned ; &c.

*Perfect-definite.***rivérsi,
rivertésti,
*rivérse,*I returned ;
thou returnedst ;
he, she, or it returned ;*rivertémmo,
rivertéste,
*rivérséro,*we returned ;
you returned ;
they returned.*Future-indefinite, &c.*Variation of the verb *connéttere*.(Paradigm of the verbs ending in *ttère*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**connéttere,*

to connect.

*Past.***avére connéso,*

to have connected.

GERUND.

connetténdo, connecting.

PARTICIPLE.

**connéssò,* connected.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

connétto, &c. I connect ; &c.

Imperfect.

connettéva or connettéa, I connected ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**connéssi,* I connected ;
connettésti, thou connectedst ;
**connésse,* he, she, or it connected ;

connettémmo, we connected ;
connettéste, you connected ;
**connéssero,* they connected.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Méttère, to put, and its compounds, in the *perfect* make *mísi,* I put ; &c. and in the *participle,* *méssò,* put ; &c.

Variation of the verb *scrivere*.(First paradigm of the verbs ending in *vere*.)

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**scrivere*, to write.*Past.***avere scritto*, to have written.

GERUND.

scrivendo, writing.

PARTICIPLE.

**scritto*, written.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**scrivo*, &c. I write ; &c.*Imperfect.**scriveva* or *scrivea*, &c. I wrote ; &c.*Perfect-definite.*

<i>*scrissi</i> ,	I wrote ;
<i>scrivesti</i> ,	thou wrotest ;
<i>*scrisse</i> ,	he, she, or it wrote ;

scrivémmo,
scrivéste,
**scrissero,*

we wrote ;
 you wrote ;
 they wrote.

Future-indefinite, &c.

Variation of the verb *volvere*.

(Second paradigm of the verbs ending in *vere*.)

INFINITIVE.

Present.

volvere,

to turn.

Past.

**avére or éssere vólto,*

to have turned.

GERUND.

volvendo,

turning.

PARTICIPLE.

**vólto,*

turned.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

vólvo, &c.

I turn ; &c.

Imperfect.

volvéna or *volvéa*, &c. I turned ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*vólsi,</i>	I turned ;
<i>volvésti,</i>	thou turnedst ;
<i>*vólse,</i>	he, she, or it turned ;
<i>volvémmo,</i>	we turned ;
<i>volvéste,</i>	you turned ;
<i>*vólsero,</i>	they turned.

Future-indefinite, &c.

*Variation of other Irregular Verbs in ere unaccented,
not included in any of the preceding classes.*

<i>Conóscere,</i>	to know ;
<i>náscere,</i>	to be born ;
<i>rómpere,</i>	to break.

Variation of the verb conóscere.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>conóscere,</i>	to know.
-------------------	----------

Past.

avére conosciúto, to have known.

GERUND.

conoscéndo, knowing.

PARTICIPLE.

conosciúto, known.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

conósco, &c. I know ; &c.

Imperfect.

conoscéva or conoscéa, &c. I knew ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**conóbbi,* I knew ;
conoscésti, thou knewest ;
**conóbbe,* he, she, or it knew ;

conoscémmo, we knew ;
conoscéste, you knew ;
**conóbbbero,* they knew.

Future-indefinite, &c.

The verb *créscere*, to grow, and its compounds, in the *perfect* take the same termination : *crébbi*, I grew ; &c.

Variation of the verb *nāscere*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

nāscere, to be born.

Past.

**ēssere nāto*, to have been born.

GERUND.

nascēdo, being born.

PARTICIPLE.

**nāto*, been born.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

nāscō, &c. I am born ; &c.

Imperfect.

nascēva or *nascēa*, &c. I was born ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>nācqui</i> ,	I was born ;
<i>nascēsti</i> ,	thou wast born ;
* <i>nācque</i> ,	he, she, or it was born ;
<i>nascēmmo</i> ,	we were born ;
<i>nascēste</i> ,	you were born ;
* <i>nācquero</i> ,	they were born.

Future-indefinite, &c.

The verb *nuocere*, to hurt, and its compounds, follow the same irregularity : *nóccui*, I hurt ; &c.

Variation of the verb *rómpere*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

rómpere, to break.

Past.

**avére rótto*, to have broken.

GERUND.

rompéndo, breaking.

PARTICIPLE.

**rótto*, broken.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

rómpo, &c. I break ; &c.

Imperfect.

rompéva or *rompéa*, &c. I broke ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

**rúppi*,
rompésti,
 **rúppe*,
 I broke ;
 thou brokest ;
 he, she, or it broke ;

rompémmo,
rompéste,
**rúppero,*

we broke ;
 you broke ;
 they broke.

Variation of the Verb bévere or bére, to drink.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

bére (bévere),

to drink.

Past.

avére bevúto,

to have drunk.

GERUND.

bevéndo,

drinking.

PARTICIPLE.

bevúto,

drunk.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

bévo (béo),
bévi (béi),
béve (bée),

I drink ;
 thou drinkest ;
 he, she, or it drinks ;

beviámo,
bevéle (beéte),
bévono (béono),

we drink ;
 you drink ;
 they drink.

Imperfect.

bevéva or *bevéa*, &c. I drank ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

bevéi or *bevétti*, **bévi* I drank ;
 (*bébbi*),
bevésti, thou drankest ;
bevè or *bevétte*, **bévve* he, she, or it drank ;
 (*bébbe*),
bevémmo, we drank ;
bevéste, you drank ;
bevérono or *bevéttero*, **bév-* they drank.
vero (*bébbero*),

Future-indefinite.

berò (*beverò*, *bevrò*), I shall or will drink ;
berái (*beverái*), thou shalt or wilt drink ;
berà (*beverà*, *bevrà*), he, she, or it shall or will
 drink ;
berémo (*beverémo*, *bevré-* we shall or will drink ;
mo),
beréte (*beveréte*), you shall or will drink ;
beránno (*beveránno*), they shall or will drink.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

beréi (*beveréi*, *bevería*, *be-* I should, would, or could
 [*ría*], [drink ; or might drink ;
berésti (*beverésti*), thou shouldst, wouldst, or
 [couldst drink ; &c.
berébbe (*beverébbe*, *bevería*, he, she, or it should, would,
 [*bería*], [or could drink ; &c.

<i>berémmo</i> (<i>beverémmo</i>),	we should, would, <i>or</i> could [drink ; &c.
<i>beréste</i> (<i>beveréste</i>),	you should, would, <i>or</i> could [drink ; &c.
<i>berébbero</i> (<i>beveriano</i> , <i>be-</i> [<i>riano</i>]),	they should, would, <i>or</i> could [drink ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>bévi</i> (<i>béi</i>),	drink thou ;
<i>béva</i> (<i>béa</i>),	let him, her, <i>or</i> it drink ;
<i>beviámo</i> ,	let us drink ;
<i>bevéte</i> (<i>beéte</i>),	drink ye ;
<i>bévano</i> (<i>béano</i>),	let them drink.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>béva</i> (<i>béa</i>),	that I drink ; <i>or</i> may drink ;
<i>bévi</i> (<i>béi</i>),	that thou drinkest ; &c.
<i>béva</i> (<i>béa</i>),	that he, she, <i>or</i> it drinks ; &c.
<i>beviámo</i> ,	that we drink ; &c.
<i>beviáte</i> ,	that you drink ; &c.
<i>bévano</i> (<i>béano</i>),	that they drink ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>bevéssi</i> ,	if I drank, <i>or</i> should drink ;
<i>bevéssi</i> ,	if thou drankest ; &c.
<i>bevésse</i> ,	if he, she, <i>or</i> it drank ; &c.
<i>bevéssimo</i> ,	if we drank ; &c.
<i>bevéste</i> ,	if you drank ; &c.
<i>bevéssero</i> (<i>beéssero</i> , <i>beéss-</i> [<i>no</i>]),	if they drank ; &c.

All these verbs in their compounds preserve the same irregularities, with the exception of a few, which in some tenses become regular, or have also a regular formation, which will be noticed in the *Table of the Irregular Verbs*.

Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation.

The following are the Irregular verbs of the third conjugation; viz.

<i>cucíre,</i>	to sew ;
<i>díre,</i>	to say ;
<i>moríre,</i>	to die ;
<i>salíre,</i>	to ascend ;
<i>seguíre,</i>	to follow ;
<i>udíre,</i>	to hear ;
<i>uscíre,</i>	to go out ;
<i>veníre,</i>	to come.

Variation of the verb cucíre.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>cucíre,</i>	to sew.
----------------	---------

Past.

<i>avére cucíto,</i>	to have sown.
----------------------	---------------

ANALOGY.

GERUND.

cucéndo,

sewing.

PARTICIPLE.

cucíto,

SOWN.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.***cúcio,*

I sew ;

cúci,

thou sewest ;

cúce,

he, she, or it sews ;

cuciámo,

we sew ;

cucíte,

you sew ;

**cúciono,*

they sew.

*Imperfect.**cueiva or cucía, &c.*

I sewed ; &c.

Perfect-definite, &c.[See *sentíre*, p. 149.]

IMPERATIVE.

cúci,

sew thou ;

**cúcia,*

let him, her, or it sew ;

cuciámo,

let us sew ;

cucíte,

sew ye ;

**cúciano,*

let them sew.

CONJUNCTIVE.

*Present.***cúcia,*

that I sew ; or may sew ;

**cúcia,*

that thou sewest ; &c.

**cúcia,*

that he, she, or it sews ; &c.

cuciámo,
cuciáte,
**cúciano,*

that we sew ; &c.
that you sew ; &c.
that they sew ; &c.

Imperfect:

cucíssi, &c.

if I sewed ; or should sew ;
[&c.]

Variation of the verb *dire*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

dire (dicere),

to say.

Past.

**avére dëtto,*

to have said.

GERUND.

dicéndo,

saying.

PARTICIPLE.

**dëtto,*

said.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

díco,
*díci or *dì,*
díce,}

I say ;
thou sayest ;
he, she, or it says ;

diciámo,
**díte,*
dícono,

we say ;
you say ;
they say.

Imperfect.

dicéva or *dicéa*, &c. I said ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>*dissi,</i>	I said ;
<i>dicésti,</i>	thou saidest ;
<i>*disse,</i>	he, she, or it said ;
<i>dicémmo,</i>	we said ;
<i>dicéste,</i>	you said ;
<i>*dissero,</i>	they said.

Future-indefinite.

dirò [by contraction for *dicero*], &c. I shall or will say ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

diréi (*diría*) [by contraction for *diceréi* (*dicería*)] ; &c. I should, would, or could [say ; or might say ; &c.]

IMPERATIVE.

<i>*di,</i>	say thou ;
<i>dica,</i>	let him, her, or it say ;
<i>dicíamo,</i>	let us say ;
<i>*dite,</i>	say ye ;
<i>dicano,</i>	let them say.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

dica, &c. I say ; or may say ; &c.

Imperfect.

dicéssi, &c.

I said ; or should say ; &c.

Variation of the verb *morire*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

morire,

to die.

Past.

**éssere móрто,*

to be dead.

GERUND.

moréndo,

dying.

PARTICIPLE.

**mórто,*

dead.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**muóro or *muóio,*

I die ;

**muóri,*

thou diest ;

**muóre (muór),*

he, she, or it dies ;

moriámo,

we die ;

moríte,

you die ;

**muórono or *muóiono,*

they die.

Imperfect.

moríva or *moría*, &c. I died ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

morí, &c. I died ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

morirò or *morrà*, &c. I shall or will die ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

moriréi or *morréi* (*moriría* I should, would, or could
[or *morría*], &c. [die ; or might die ; &c.]

IMPERATIVE.

**muóri*, die thou ;
**muóra* or **muóia* (*móra* let him, her, or it die ;
 [or *móia*],
moríamo, let us die ;
moríte, die ye ;
**muórano* or **muoiáno*, let them die.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

**muóra* or *muóia*, that I die ; or may die ;
**muóra* or **muóia* (*móra* that thou diest ; &c.
 [or *móia*, *móri*],
**muóra* or **muóia*, that he, she, or it dies ; &c.
moríamo, that we die ; &c.
moríate that you die ; &c.
**muórano* or **muóiano*, that they die ; &c.

Imperfect.

morissi, &c.

if I died ; or should die ; &c.

Variation of the verb *salire*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

salire,

to ascend.

Past.

avere or essere salito,

to have ascended.

GERUND.

salendo,

ascending.

PARTICIPLE.

salito,

ascended.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**salgo or salisco,*

I ascend ;

salii or salisci,

thou ascendest ;

sale or salisce,

he, she, or it ascends ;

*saliamo or *sagliamo,*

we ascend ;

salite,

you ascend ;

**salgono, or saliscono (sá-
[gliono),*

they ascend.

Imperfect.

saliva or salia, &c.

I ascended ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

<i>sakî (sálsi),</i>	I ascended ;
<i>sakîsti,</i>	thou ascendedst ;
<i>sakî (sálse, salío),</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it ascended ;
<i>sakîmmo,</i>	we ascended ;
<i>sakîste,</i>	you ascended ;
<i>sakîrono (sálsero, salíro, sa-</i> [lir],	they ascended.

Future-indefinite, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>sáli or sakisci,</i>	ascend thou ;
<i>*sálga or sakisca (ságlia),</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it ascend ;
<i>saliámo or *sagliámo,</i>	let us ascend ;
<i>sakíte,</i>	ascend ye ;
<i>*sálgano or sakiscano,</i>	let them ascend.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*sálga or sakisca (ságlia),</i>	that I ascend ; <i>or</i> may as- [cend ;
<i>*sálga or sakisca,</i>	that thou ascendest ; &c.
<i>*sálgano or sakisca,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it ascends ; [&c.
<i>saliámo or *sagliámo,</i>	that we ascend ; &c.
<i>saliáte or *sagliáte,</i>	that you ascend ; &c.
<i>*sálgano or sakiscano,</i>	that they ascend ; &c.

Imperfect.

<i>sakíssi, &c.</i>	if I ascend ; <i>or</i> should as- [cend ; &c.
-------------------------	---

Variation of the verb *seguire*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

seguire, to follow.

Past.

avere or *essere seguito*, to have or to be followed.

GERUND.

seguendo, following.

PARTICIPLE.

seguito, followed.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

<i>séguo</i> or <i>*siéguo</i> ,	I follow ;
<i>ségui</i> or <i>*siégui</i> ,	thou followest ;
<i>ségue</i> or <i>*siégue</i> ,	he, she, or it follows ;
<i>seguíamo</i> ,	we follow ;
<i>seguíte</i> ,	you follow ;
<i>séguono</i> or <i>*siéguono</i> ,	they follow.

Imperfect, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

<i>ségui</i> or <i>*siégui</i> ,	follow thou ;
<i>ségua</i> , or <i>*siégua</i> ,	let him, her, or it follow ;
<i>seguíamo</i> ,	let us follow ;
<i>seguíte</i> ,	follow ye ;
<i>séguano</i> or <i>*siéguano</i> .	let them follow.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>ségua</i> or <i>*siégua</i> ,	that I follow ; or may fol- [low ;
<i>ségua</i> or <i>*siégua</i> (<i>ségui</i> or [<i>siégui</i>),	that thou followest ; &c. that he, she, or it follows ;
<i>ségua</i> or <i>*siégua</i> ,	[&c.
<i>seguíamo</i> ,	that we follow ; &c.
<i>seguíate</i> ,	that you follow ; &c.
<i>séguano</i> or <i>*siéguano</i> ,	that they follow ; &c.

*Imperfect, &c.*Variation of the verb *udíre*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

udíre, to hear.

Past.

avére udíto, to have heard.

GERUND.

udéndo, hearing.

PARTICIPLE.

udíto, heard.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>ódo,</i>	I hear ;
* <i>ódi,</i>	thou hearest ;
* <i>óde,</i>	he, she, <i>or</i> it hears ;
<i>udiámo,</i>	we hear ;
<i>udíte,</i>	you hear ;
* <i>ódono,</i>	they hear.

Imperfect, &c.

Future-indefinite,

<i>udirò or udrò, &c.</i>	I shall <i>or</i> will hear ; &c.
-------------------------------	-----------------------------------

CONDITIONAL, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

* <i>ódi,</i>	hear thou ;
* <i>óda,</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it hear ;
<i>udiámo,</i>	let us hear ;
<i>udíte,</i>	hear ye ;
* <i>ódano,</i>	let them hear.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>óda,</i>	that I hear ; <i>or</i> may hear ;
* <i>óda (ódi),</i>	that thou hearest ; &c. [<i>&c.</i>]
* <i>óda,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it hears ; &c.
<i>udiámo,</i>	that we hear ; &c.
<i>udíte,</i>	that you hear ; &c.
* <i>ódano,</i>	that they hear ; &c.

Imperfect, &c.

Variation of the verb *uscíre*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

uscíre, to go out.

Past.

éssere uscíto, to have gone out.

GERUND.

uscéndo, going out.

PARTICIPLE.

uscíto, gone out.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**éscó,* I go out ;
 **ésci,* thou goest out ;
 **éscé,* he, she, or it goes out ;

uscíamo, we go out ;
uscíte, you go out ;
 **éscóno,* they go out.

Imperfect, &c.

IMPERATIVE.

* <i>ésci,</i>	go thou out ;
* <i>ésca,</i>	let him, her <i>or</i> it go out ;
<i>usciamo,</i>	let us go out ;
<i>uscíte,</i>	go ye out ;
* <i>éscano,</i>	let them go out.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

* <i>ésca,</i>	that I go out ; <i>or</i> may go [out ;
* <i>ésca,</i>	that thou goest out ; &c.
* <i>ésca,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it goes out ; [&c.
<i>usciamo,</i>	that we go out ; &c.
<i>uscíte,</i>	that you go out ; &c.
* <i>éscano.</i>	that they go out ; &c.

Imperfect, &c.

Variation of the verb *venire*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

<i>venire,</i>	to come.
----------------	----------

Past.

* <i>essere venúto,</i>	to have come.
-------------------------	---------------

GERUND.

<i>venéndo,</i>	coming.
-----------------	---------

PARTICIPLE.

**venúto*, come.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

* <i>véngo</i> (<i>végno</i>),	I come ;
* <i>viéni</i> ,	thou comest ;
* <i>viéne</i> ,	he, she, <i>or</i> it comes ;
<i>veniámo</i> (<i>vegnámo</i>),	we come ;
<i>veníte</i> ,	you come ;
* <i>véngono</i> (<i>végnono</i>),	they come.

Imperfect.

veníva *or* *venía*, &c. I came ; &c.

Perfect-definite.

* <i>vénni</i> ,	I came ;
<i>venísti</i> ,	thou camest ;
* <i>vénne</i> ,	he, she, <i>or</i> it came ;
<i>venímmo</i> ,	we came ;
<i>veníste</i> ,	you came ;
* <i>vénnero</i> (<i>veníro</i>),	they came.

Future-indefinite.

verrà [by contraction for *veníro*], &c. I shall *or* will come ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

Present.

<i>verréi</i> (<i>verría</i>) [by contraction for <i>venírei</i> (<i>veníria</i>)], &c.	I should, would, <i>or</i> could come ; <i>or</i> might come ; &c.
---	--

IMPERATIVE.

<i>*viéni,</i>	come thou ;
<i>*vénga,</i>	let him, her, <i>or</i> it come ;
<i>veniámo,</i>	let us come ;
<i>veníte,</i>	come ye ;
<i>*véngano,</i>	let them come.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

<i>*vénga,</i>	that I come ; <i>or</i> may come ;
<i>*vénga,</i>	that thou comest ; &c.
<i>*vénga,</i>	that he, she, <i>or</i> it comes ;
	[&c.]
<i>veniámo,</i>	that we come ; &c.
<i>veníate,</i>	that you come ; &c.
<i>*véngano,</i>	that they come ; &c.

Imperfect, &c.

The verb *bollire*, to boil, in the first person plural of the *present* of the *indicative* and of the *imperative*, and in the first and second persons plural of the *present* of the *conjunctive*, changes *ll* into *gl*, to distinguish these persons from the corresponding ones of the verb *bolláre*, to seal ; thus, *bogliámo*, we boil ; *bolliámo*, we seal : *bogliámo*, let us boil ; *bolliámo*, let us seal : *bogliámo*, that we boil ; *bolliámo*, that we seal : *bogliáte*, that you boil ; *bolliáte*, that you seal.

Of Defective Verbs.

[These verbs are used only in the tenses and persons, which are here given.]

Variation of the verb *calére*.

INFINITIVE.

Present.

calére, to care for.

Past.

éssere calúto, to have cared for.

GERUND.

caléndo, caring for.

PARTICIPLE.

calúto, cared for.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
<i>calé,</i>	he, she, or it cares for ;
.....

Imperfect.

<i>caléva or caléa,</i>	I cared for ;
.....
<i>calévano or caléano,</i>	they cared for.

Perfect-definite.

.....
* <i>cálse,</i>	he, she, or it cared for ;
.....

IMPERATIVE.

.....
* <i>cáglia,</i>	let him, her, or it care for ;
.....

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

.....
* <i>cáglia,</i>	that he, she, or it cares for ;
.....	[or may care for ;
.....

Imperfect.

.....
<i>calésse,</i>	if I cared for ; or should care
.....	[for ;
.....

Variation of the verb *colére.*

INFINITIVE.

(<i>colére</i>),]	to adore.
---------------------	-----------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

(<i>cólo</i>),	I adore ;
.....
(<i>cóle</i>),	he, she, or it adores ;
.....

Variation of the verb *pavére*.

INFINITIVE.

(pavére),

to fear.

INDICATIVE.

Present......
(páve),
..........
he, she, or it fears ;
.....Variation of the verb *silére*.

INFINITIVE.

(silére),

to be or to keep silent ;

INDICATIVE.

Present......
(sile),
..........
he, she, or it is or keeps si-
[lent ;
.....Variation of the verb *solére*.

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**solére*,

to be wont.

Past.

**éssere sólito*, to have been wont.

GERUND.

soléndo, being wont.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

**sóglío*, I am wont ;
 **suóli*, thou art wont ;
 **suóle* (*sóle*), he, she, or it is wont ;

**sogliámo* (*solémo*), we are wont ;
soléte, you are wont ;
 **sógliono*, they are wont.

Imperfect.

soléva or *soléa*, &c. I was wont ; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

**sóglia*, &c. that I am wont ; or may be
 [wont ; &c.

Imperfect.

soléssi, &c. if I were wont ; or should
 [be wont ; &c.

Variation of the verb *stupére*.

INFINITIVE.

(stupére), to be astonished.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
 (stúpe),

.....
 he, she, or it is astonished ;

Variation of the verb *álgere*.

INFINITIVE.

(álgere), to be chill.

INDICATIVE.

Perfect-definite.

(*álsi),
 (algésti),
 (*álse),

I was chill ;
 thou wast chill ;
 he, she, or it was chill ;

(algémmo),
 (algéste),
 (*álsero),

we were chill ;
 you were chill ;
 they were chill.

Variation of the verb *ángere*.

INFINITIVE.

(ángere), to afflict.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
(ánge),	he, she, or it afflicts ;
.....

Variation of the verb *arrógere*.

INFINITIVE.

<i>arrógere,</i>	to add.
------------------	---------

GERUND.

<i>arrogéndo,</i>	adding.
-------------------	---------

PARTICIPLE.

* <i>arróto</i> or <i>arróso,</i>	added.
-----------------------------------	--------

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
<i>arróge,</i>	he, she, or it adds ;
.....

Perfect-definite.

* <i>arrósi,</i>	I added ;
<i>arrogésti,</i>	thou addedst ;
* <i>arróse,</i>	he, she, or it added ;
<i>arrogémmo,</i>	we added ;
<i>arrogéste,</i>	you added ;
* <i>arrósero,</i>	they added.

Variation of the verb *cápere*.

INFINITIVE.

(*cápere*), to comprehend.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
 (*cápe*), he, she, or it comprehends ;

Imperfect.

.....
 (*capéva*), he, she, or it comprehended ;

Variation of the verb *chérere*.

INFINITIVE.

(*chérere*), to demand.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

(*chéro*), I demand ;

 (*chére*), he, she, or it demands ;

Variation of the verb *convéllere*.

INFINITIVE.

convéllere, to convulse.

GERUND.

convelléndo,

convulsing.

PARTICIPLE.

* *convúlso,*

convulsed.

INDICATIVE.

Present......
convélla,.....
he, she; or it convulses;.....
convéllono,.....
they convulse.*Imperfect.*.....
convelléva or *convelléa,*.....
he, she, or it convulsed;.....
convellévano or *convelléano,* they convulsed.*Future-indefinite.*.....
convellerà,.....
he, she, or it shall or will
[convulse;.....
convelleránno,.....
they shall or will convulse.

CONDITIONAL.

.....
convellérebbe,.....
he, she, or it should, would,
or could convulse; or
might convulse;.....
convellerébbero,.....
they should, would, or could
convulse; &c.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Imperfect.

.....
convellésse,

.....
 if he, she, or it convulsed or
 [should convulse ;

.....
convelléssero,

.....
 if they convulsed ; &c.

Variation of the verb *lécere* and *licere*, or *lecére* and *licére*.

INFINITIVE.

(*lécere* or *licere*),

to be lawful.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
lécce or *licce,*

.....
 it is lawful ;

Variation of the verb *mólcere*.

INFINITIVE.

(*mólcere*),

to assuage.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
(mólci),
(mólce),

.....
 thou assuagest ;
 he, she, or it assuages ;

Imperfect.

(*molcéva,*)
(*molcevi,*)
(*molcéva,*)
.....

I assuaged ;
thou assuagedst ;
he, she, or it assuaged ;
.....

Variation of the verb *riédere.*

INFINITIVE.

riédere,

to return.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

riédo,
riédi,
riéde,
.....
riédono,

I return ;
thou returnest ;
he, she, or it returns ;
.....
they return.

Imperfect.

riedéva or *riedéa,*
riedévi,
riedéva or *riedéa,*
.....
riedévano or *riedéano,*

I returned ;
thou returnedst ;
he, she, or it returned ;
.....
they returned.

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

riéda,

riéda,
riéda,

.....
riédano,

that I return ; or may re-
[turn ;
that thou returnest ; &c.
that he, she, or it returns ;
[&c.

.....
that they return ; &c.

Variation of the verb *sérpere*.

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**(sérpere),*

to creep.

GERUND.

(sérpendo),

creeping.

INDICATIVE.

*Present.**(sérpo),*
(sérpi),
*(sérpe),*I creep ;
thou creepest ;
he, she, *or* it creeps ;.....
(sérpono),.....
they creep.*Imperfect.**(sérpéva),*
(sérpévi),
*(sérpéva),*I crept ;
thou crept ;
he, she, *or* it crept ;.....
(sérpévano),.....
they crept.

CONJUNCTIVE.

*Present.**(sérpa),*
(sérpa),
*(sérpa),*that I creep ; *or* may creep ;
that thou creepest ; &c.
that he, she, *or* it creeps ; &c......
(sérpano),.....
that they creep ; &c.

Variation of the verb *úrgerē.*

INFINITIVE.

úrgerē, to urge.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
úrge, he, she, or it urges ;

Imperfect.

.....
urgéva or *urgéa,* he, she, or it urged ;

.....
urgévano or *urgéano,* they urged.

Variation of the verb *tángere.*

INFINITIVE.

(*tángere*), to touch.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
 (*tánge*), he, she, or it touches ;

Variation of the verb *vígere.*

INFINITIVE.

(*vígere*), to be vigorous.

ANALOGY.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
 (víge),

.....
 he, she, or it is vigorous ;

Variation of the verb *gíre*.

INFINITIVE.

*Present.**gíre,*

to go.

*Past.**éssere gíto,*

to have gone.

PARTICIPLE.

gíto,

gone.

INDICATIVE.

Present.

.....
gíamo,
gíte,

.....
 we go ;
 you go ;

*Imperfect.**gíva or gía, &c.*

I went ; &c.

*Perfect-definite.**gíi, &c.*

I went ; &c.

Future-indefinite.

girò, &c.

I shall or will go ; &c.

CONDITIONAL.

giréi (giría), &c.

I should, would, or could go ;
[or might go ; &c.

IMPERATIVE.

.....

.....

*giámo,
gíte,*

let us go ;
go ye ;

.....

.....

CONJUNCTIVE.

Present.

.....

.....

*giámo,
gíte,*

that we go ; or may go ;
that you go ; &c.

.....

.....

Imperfect.

gíssi, &c.

if I went ; or should go ;
[&c.

Variation of the verb *íre.*

INFINITIVE.

Present.

íre,

to go.

ANALOGY.

*Past.**essere ito,*

to have gone.

PARTICIPLE.

ito,

gone.

INDICATIVE.

Present..
ite,
.
you go ;
.*Imperfect.**iva,*
.
iva,
.
*ivano,*I went ;
.
he, she, or it went ;
.
we went.*Perfect-definite.*.
isti,
.
(*iro, ir*),.
thou wentest ;
.
they went.*Future-indefinite.*.
irémo,
iréte,
iránno,.
we shall or will go ;
you shall or will go ;
they shall or will go.

CONDITIONAL.

..... (<i>iriano</i>), they should, would, or could [go ; or might go.
-----------------------------	---

IMPERATIVE.

..... <i>tte</i> , go ye ;
-----------------------	---------------------------

Variation of the verb *olire*.

INFINITIVE.

<i>olire</i> ,	to smell.
----------------	-----------

INDICATIVE.

Imperfect.

<i>oliva</i> ,	I smelled ;
<i>olivi</i> ,	thou smelledst ;
<i>oliva</i> ,	he, she, or it smelled ;
.....
<i>olivano</i> ,	they smelled.

General Observations on the Conjugations of Italian Verbs, and the Formation of their Tenses.

In all verbs there are four tenses, as well as the *gerund*, which are always regular, and have the same terminations in all the conjugations.. These are the following :

The *imperfect* of the *indicative*—*va, vi, va ; vámo, váte, vano.*

The *future-indefinite*—*rò, rái, rà ; rémo, réte, ránno.*

The *present of the conditional*—*réi, résti, rébbe ; rémo, réste, rébbero.*

The *imperfect of the conjunctive*—*ssi, ssi, sse ; ssimo, ste, ssero.*

The *gerund*—*ndo.*

Except the three first persons, and the last, of the *imperfect of the indicative* of the auxiliary verb *essere*, which makes *éra, éri, éra ; érano ;* and not *eráva, erávi, &c.*

If the verbs end in the *infinitive* in *áre*, the *imperfect of the indicative* will always end in *áva, ávi, áva ; avámo, aváte, avano ;* as, *amáva, amávi, &c.* And the *imperfect of the conjunctive* will always end in *ássi, ássi, ásse ; ássimo, áste, ássero ;* as, *amássi, &c.*

If the *infinitive* ends in *ére* or *ere*, the *imperfect of the indicative* will end in *éva, évi, éva ; &c. ;* as, *teméva* or *credéva ; &c.* And the *imperfect of the conjunctive* will end in *éssi, &c. ;* as, *teméssi* or *credéssi ; &c.*

And if the *infinitive* ends in *íre*, the former *imperfect* will end in *íva ;* as, *sentíva ; &c. ;* and the latter in *íssi ;* as, *sentíssi ; &c.*

The *future-indefinite* in verbs in *áre, ére* or *ere*, always ends in *erò, erái, erà ; erémo, eréte, eránno ;* as, *amerò, temerái* or *crederei, tesserà, &c. ;* and in verbs in *íre*, it ends in *irò, irái, irà, &c. ;* as, *sentirò, sentirái, &c.*

The *present of the conditional* in verbs in *áre, ére* or *ere*, always ends in *eréi, erésti, erébbe ; erémmo, eréste, erébbero ;* as, *ameréi, temerésti* or *credereésti, tessereébbe, &c. ;* and in verbs in *íre*, it ends in *iréi, irésti, irébbe, &c. ;* as, *sentiréi, sentirésti, &c.*

The *gerund* of all verbs in *áre* ends in *ándo ;* as, *amándo ;* and that of all verbs in *ére* or *ere, íre*, ends in *éndo ;* as, *teméndo* or *credéndo, senténdo.*

The *imperfect of the indicative* of the verb *fare*, is formed from its ancient Latin *infinitive, fácere*, syncopated into *fáre*, and ends in *éva ; &c.* as, *facéva ; &c.* The *imperfect of the conjunctive* ends in *éssi ; &c.* as, *facéssi, &c.* And the *future-indefinite*, and the *present of the conditional*, end in *arò* and *aréi ;* as, *farò, faréi ; &c.*

Dàre and *stàre* also form the *future* in *arò* and the *conditional* in *aréi*; as, *darò, starò; daréi, staréi*: and in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive* make *déssi, stéssi*.

Many verbs ending in *ere*, derived from the Latin, are syncopated in the *infinitive*, and then their *future* and *conditional* are so likewise; thus, *addúrre* from *adducere*, *tórre* from *togliere*, &c. make *addurrò, torrò; addurréi, torréi*, &c.

Some verbs ending in *lere*, *nere*, *nire*, though not syncopated in the *infinitive*; as, *volére, lenére, venire*; are so in the *future*, and in the *conditional*; as, *vorrò, terrò, verrò; vorréi, terréi, verréi*.

All the irregularities of verbs, therefore, are confined to the *present* and *perfect-definite* of the *indicative*, the *imperative*, the *present* of the *conjunctive*, and the *participle*. In these tenses, however, the irregularities do not extend to all the persons.

In the *present* of the *indicative*, the first and second persons plural are always regular, and end in *iámo* and *áte* in the first conjugation; as, *amiámo, amiáte*; in *iámo* and *éte* in the second; as, *temiámo* or *crediámo*, *teméte* or *credéte*; and in *iámo* and *íte* in the third; as, *sentiámo, sentíte*.

In the *perfect-definite*, there are also three persons, which are always regular; the second singular, ending in *sti*, and the first and second plural, ending in *mmo*, and in *ste*. If the verb ends in *áre* in the *infinitive*, these persons will end in *ásti, ámmo, áste*; as, *amásti, amámmo, amáste*: if the verb ends in *ére* or *ere*, they will end in *ésti, émmo, éste*; as, *temésti, credémmo, tesséste*: and if the verb ends in *íre* they will end in *ísti, ímmo, íste*; as, *sentísti, sentímmo, sentíste*.

The auxiliary verb *éssere*, in the *perfect* makes *fósti, fúmmo, fóste*. The verbs *dàre, fáre, stàre*, make *désti, facésti, stésti*; &c. *Dìre*, syncopated from *dicere*, makes *dicésti*, &c.

The first and second persons plural of the *imperative* are always regular, and the same as the first and second plural of the *present* of the *indicative*; as, *amiámo, temiámo* or *crediámo*, *sentiámo*; *amáte, teméte* or *credéte, sentíte*.

The two auxiliary verbs, in the second person plural of the *imperative*, make *abbiate, siáte*.

The first person plural of the *present* of the *conjunctive* is also always regular and the same as the first plural of the *present* of the *indicative*; as, *amiámo*, *temiámo* or *crediámo*, *sentiámo*.

The *participle* of all verbs in *áre* is regular, and always ends in *áto*; as, *amáto*.

Fáre in the *participle* takes another *t*, and makes *fátto*.

The *participle* of verbs in *ére* or *ere* may end in *úto*, and *tto*, *sso*, or *to*, *so*; as, *temúto*, *credúto*, and *létto*, *mósso*, or *giúnto*, *árso*.

Verbs in *íre* form their *participles* in *ítto*; as, *sentítto*; with the exception of a few, as will be found in the *Table of the Irregular Verbs*.

The first three persons of the *present* of the *indicative* are generally formed by dropping the last syllable (*re*) of the *infinitive*, and changing the last vowel into *o*, *i*, *a*, for the verbs of the first conjugation; and into *o*, *i*, *e*, for the verbs of the second and third; as, [*amá-re*] *ámo*, *ámi*, *áma*; [*temé-re* or *créde-re*] *témo*, *témi*, *téme*, or *crédo*, *crédi*, *créde*; [*sentí-re*] *sénto*, *sénti*, *sénte*. The third person plural is formed by adding *no* to the third person singular of verbs of the first conjugation, and by adding *no* to the first person of verbs of the second and third; as, [*áma*] *ámano*; [*témo* or *crédo*] *témono* or *crédono*; [*sénto*] *séntono*.

The first person singular of the *perfect-definite* of all verbs is generally formed by changing the syllable *re* of the *infinitive* into *i*; as, [*amáre*] *amáí*, [*temére* or *créde-re*] *teméí* or *credéí*, [*sentíre*] *sentíí*. And by changing *ái* into *ò*, in verbs of the first conjugation, and dropping the final *i* of the first person, in those of the second and third, is formed the third person singular; as, [*amáí*] *amò*; [*teméí* or *credéí*] *temè* or *credè*; [*sentíí*] *sentì*. The third person plural of verbs in *áre* is formed from the first singular, by dropping *i* and adding *rono*; and of verbs in *ére* or *ere*, *íre*, from the third person singular, by adding *rono*; as, [*amáí*] *amárono*; [*temè* or *credè*] *temèrono* or *credèrono*; [*sentì*] *sentírono*.

The second person singular of the *imperative* of verbs of the first conjugation is formed from the *infinitive* by dropping *re*; as, [amá-re] áma; and the third person singular is formed from the second by changing *a* into *i*; as, [áma] ámi. The second person singular of verbs of the second conjugation is formed from the *infinitive*, by dropping *re* and changing *e* into *i*; as, [temé-re or créde-re] témi or crédi; and the third by changing *i* into *a*; as, [témi or crédi] téma or créda. And the second person singular of verbs of the third conjugation is formed from the *infinitive*, by dropping *re*; as, [sentire] sénti; and the third by changing *i* into *a*; as [sénti] sénta. The third person plural in all verbs is formed by adding *no* to the third person singular; as, [ámi] ámino; [téma or créda] témano or crédano; [sénta] séntano.

The present of the *conjunctive* of the regular verbs in *áre* forms its three persons in the singular, from the *infinitive* by dropping *re*, and changing *a* into *i*; as, [amá-re] ámi, ámi, ámi. And the present of the *conjunctive* of all verbs in *éere* or *ere*, *íre* is formed from the *infinitive* by dropping *re*, and changing *e, i*, into *a*; as, [temé-re or créde-re] téma or créda, téma or créda, téma or créda; [sentí-re] sénta, sénta, sénta. The third person plural of all verbs is formed by adding *no* to the singular; as, [ámi] ámino; [téma or créda] témano or crédano; [sénta] séntano.

Some verbs in *dere* change *d* into *gg* in some tenses; as, *vedere*, *chiedere*; *véggo*, *chiégga*, &c.

Many verbs in *nére* and *níre* take *g* in some persons and tenses; as, *rimanére*, *veníre*; *rimángo*, *vengano*.

Some verbs in *rére*, *ríre* frequently change the *r* into *i*; as, *parére*, *moríre*; *paío*, *moíano*.

Several verbs ending in *gliere* very often transpose the *l* before the *g*, in some tenses and persons; as, *cógliere*, *sciógliere*; *cólgo*, *sciólga*.

Many verbs ending in *ígere*, *ímere*, in their irregular tenses change the *i* into *e*; as, *diligere*, *imprimere*; *diléssi*, *impréso*.

All verbs ending in *úocere*, *úotere*, *úovere*, in all their irregular tenses and in some of the regular also, lose the *u*; as, *cuócere*, *scuóttere*, *muóvere*; *cóssi*, *scóssso*, *movéndo*.

A
GENERAL ALPHABETICAL TABLE

OF THE
IRREGULAR VERBS,

WITH

REFERENCES TO THEIR PARADIGMS.

[This Table contains all the *irregular verbs* of the three conjugations, and those *regular verbs*, which in some senses have also an *irregular formation*. It contains likewise the *unpersonal* and all the *defective verbs*. Such verbs as are both *regular* and *irregular* are here marked with an obelisk (†). The forms enclosed in brackets () belong to the particular verbs to which they are annexed, in addition to the forms given under their Paradigms.]

ABBREVIATIONS : cond. *conditional* : fut. *future-indefinite* : ind. *indicative* : inf. *infinitive* : part. *past-participle* : pres. *present* : perf. *perfect-definite* : var. *varied* : p. *page*.

- Accadére*, to happen ; a unipersonal verb. See *cadére* [and *pióvere*.
Accéndere, to light. See *árdere*. Perf. *accéni*, I lit ;
 part. *accéso*, lit. [Perf. (accénsi), I lit ; part. (accén-
Archúdere, to enclose. See *chúdere*. [so), lit.]
Accignere or } to prepare one's self. See *cígnere*.
Accingere, }
Accógnere or *accórrere*, to receive. See *cógnere*.
Accógnere [si.] to perceive. See *mérgere*. Part. *accórrito*,
Accórrere, to receive. See *accógnere*. [perceived.]
Accórrere, to run. See *córrere*.
Accrésere, to increase. See *crésere*.
Addiménere, to happen ; a unipersonal verb. See *veníre*
 [and *pióvere*.
Adducere or } to allege. See *cubere*. Perf. *addúsi*, I
Adútere, } alleged ; part. *addóito*, alleged.
Affigere, to affix. See *figgere*. Part. *affisso*, affixed.
Affigere, to afflict. See *leggere*.
Affrangere, to enfeeble. See *frángere*.
Aggiacere, to be adjacent. See *giacere*.
Aggiugnere or } to add. See *giugnere*.
Aggiugnere, }
Aggyadare, } to please ; used as a unipersonal verb. See
 [and *pióvere*.
 (A'lgere), to be chill ; a defective verb ; var. p. 302.
Alludere, to allude. See *árdere*.
Ammettere, to admit. See *méttere*.
 (Ancidere), to kill. See *árdere*.
Andare, to go ; var. p. 202.
- (A'ngere), to grieve ; a defective verb ; var. p. 302.
 †Annettere, to annex. See *connéttere*.
 Antepónere or } to prefer. See *pónere*.
 Antepórre, }
 (Antiducere) or } to foretell. See *dáre*.
 Antidúre, }
 Antivedere, to foresee. See *vedere*.
 †Apparire, to appear. See *esibire*, p. 154. Also, inf.
 (apparere) ; perf. *appárriti* (appárriti), I appeared ; part.
 Appartenére, to belong. See *tenere*. [appárrito, appeared.
 Appéndere, to hang. See *árdere*. Perf. *appéssi*, I hung ;
 [part. *appéso*, hung.
 Appónere or } to impute. See *pónere*.
 Appórre, }
 Appréndere, to learn. See *préndere*.
 †Aprire, to open. See *senúre*, p. 149. Also, perf. *apér-*
 [si, I opened ; part. *apértito*, opened.
Ardere, to burn ; var. p. 250.
 †Arréndere, to surrender. See *réndere*.
 Arridére, to smile. See *ridere*.
 Arrógere, to add ; a defective verb ; var. p. 303.
 Ascéndere, to ascend. See *scéndere*.
 Ascólere, to breakfast. See *vólere*.
 †Ascóndere, to conceal. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also, perf.
 ascósi, I concealed ; part. (ascóso or ascósto), concealed.
 Ascrívere, to ascribe. See *scrivere*.
 Aspérgere, to sprinkle. See *mérgere*.
 Assalire, to assault. See *salire*.
 Assidere [si,] to sit down. See *árdere*.

- †*Assistère*, to assist. See *crédère*, p. 141. Part. *assistito*, [assisted].
 †*Assolvere*, to absolve. See *solvere*. Also, perf. *assólvi*, [I absolved; part. (*assólto*), absolved].
Assorbere, to absorb; var. p. 247.
Assumere, to assume. See *esprimere*. Perf. *assúnvi*, I [assumed; part. *assúnito*, assumed].
Asténere, to abstain. See *tenère*.
A térgere, to cleanse a wound. See *térgere*.
Astrarre or } to abstract. See *trádere*.
Astrágnere or }
Astrágnere, to compel. See *strágnere*.
Atténdere, to wait. See *téndere*.
Atténere, to hold to. See *tenère*.
Attígnere or } to draw. See *ígnere*.
Attígnere, }
Attórcere, to twist. See *tórcere*.
Attráere or } to attract. See *tráere*.
Attráere, }
Avéllere, to root up. See *stéllere*.
Avère, to have; auxiliary verb; var. p. 114.
Avèrtiere, to turn away. See *rivèrtiere*.
Avvédere, to perceive. See *vedère*.
Avvenire, to happen. } See *venère*. The former
Avvenire [vi,] to meet with. } is a unipersonal verb.
Avvucérè, to tie. See *vincère*.
Avvólgnere or } to wrap. See *vólgnere*.
Avvólgnere, }
- Collidere*, to bruise. See *lédere*.
Comméltère, to command. See *méltère*.
Commúnere, to move. See *munère*.
 †*Comparire*, to appear before. See *apparire*.
Compiacère, to comply. See *piacère*.
Compiágnere or } to lament. See *piágnere*.
Compiágnere, }
Compónere or } to compose. See *pónere*.
Compórrere, }
Compréndere, to comprehend. See *préndere*.
Comprímere, to compress. See *esprimere*.
Comproméltère, to compromise. See *proméltère*.
Compugnere or } to grieve. See *prúgnere*.
Compúgnere, }
 †*Concédere*, to grant. See *cédere*.
 †*Concéptere*, to conceive. See *esbítere*, p. 154. Also,
 inf. (*concéptere*); part. *concéptito* (*concéltito*), conceived.
Conclúdere or } to conclude. See *chlúdere*.
Conclúdere, }
Concórriere, to concur. See *córrere*.
Concúócere, to concoct. See *cuócere*.
Concútere, to shake. See *discútere*.
Condescéndere, to condescend. See *discéndere*.
Condólere, to complain. See *dólere*.
Conducere or } to conduct. See *cúccere*. Perf. *condúsvi*,
Conducere } I conducted; part. *condúbito* [(*condú-*
Conducere,]
Confáre, to become. See *fáre*. [to], conducted.
Confíggere, to nail. See *figgere*. Part. *confúto*, nail-
Confúndere, to confound. See *sfúndere*. [ed.

† *Balenàre*, to lighten; a unipersonal verb. See *piòvere*.
 † *Bastàre*, to be enough; used as a unipersonal verb.
 [See *piòvere*.]
 † *Benedicere* or } to bless. See *abborrire*, p. 157. Part.
 † *Benedire*, } *benedétto*, blessed. Also, perf. *bene-*
 † *Bèvere* or *bère*, to drink; var. p. 280. [*dàss*, I blessed.
Benvolère, to love. See *volère*.
 † *Bere*, to drink. See *bèvere*.
 † *Bisognàre*, to be needful; used as a unipersonal verb.
Caulère, to fall; var. p. 211.
Calère, to care for; a defective verb; var. p. 298,
 (Càpere), to comprehend; a defective verb; var. p. 304.
 † *Cèdere*, to submit. See *crèdere*, p. 141. Also, perf. *cés-*
 [si, I submitted; part. *césso*, submitted.
 (Chérene), to demand; a defective verb; var. p. 304.
Chiedere, to ask. See *ardere*. Pres. ind. *chiéto*, *chiég-*
 [go, or *chiéggio*, I ask. Part. *chiésto*, asked.
Chiudere, to shut. See *ardere*.
Cignere or } to gird. See *spègnere* or *giungere*.
Cingere, }
Circoncidere, to circumcise. See *ardere*.
Circoncignere or } to surround. See *càgnere*.
Circoncingere, }
Circonfèllere, to circumflect. See *connèllere*.
Circonfulgere, to shine round. See *rifulgere*.
Circonscrivere, to limit. See *scrivere*.
Circonvenire, to circumvent. See *venire*.
Cogliere or *còrrere*, to gather; var. p. 259.
 (Colère), to adore; a defective verb; var. p. 299.

Congrignere or } to join together. See *grignere*.
Congringere, }
 † *Connèllere*, to connect; var. p. 272. Also, perf. *con-*
 † *Connèllere*, } *netlé*, I connected; part. *connèlluto*, connected.
Conòcere, to know; var. p. 276.
Conquidère, to afflict. See *ardere*.
Conscrivere or *coscrivere*, to enlist. See *scrivere*.
Consequere, to obtain. See *seguire*.
 † *Constatère*, to consist. See *crèdere*, p. 141. Part. *con-*
 † *Constatère*, } *sistùto*, consisted.
Constrignere or *costrignere*, to constrain. See *strignere*.
 † *Construire* or *costruire*, to build. See *edère*, p. 154.
 [Also, part. *constrùto* or *costrùto*, built.
Consumere, to consume. See *esprimere*. Perf. *consum-*
 † *Consumere*, } *si*, I consumed; part. *consumùto*, consumed.
Contèndere, to quarrel. See *tèndere*.
Contenère, to contain. See *tenère*.
Contorcere, to twist. See *torcere*.
Contradìcere, }
Contradire or } to contradict. See *dìre*.
Contradire, }
Contraffàre, to counterfeit. See *fàre*.
Contrappònere or } to oppose. See *pònere*.
Contrappònere, }
Contràdere or } to contract. See *tràdere*.
Contràrre, }
Contrascrivere, to counter-write. See *scrivere*.
 † *Contrastàre*, in the signification of to contrast, is regular,

and it is varied like *amára*, p. 124. But in the signification of *to stand against*, it is irregular, and is varied like *stára*, which see.

Contrórtéere, to controvert. See *rivértéere*.
Contélléere, to convulse; a defective verb; var. p. 304.
Contentéere, to agree. See *venéere*.
Convérteere or } to convert. See *rivértéere*. Also, perf.
 † *Convérteere*, } *convertí*, I converted; part. *convertído*,
Convínctéere, to convict. See *stáncere*. [converted.
Convívéere, to live together. See *vívéere*.
Contólléere or } to wallow. See *vólgere*.
Convívéere, }
 † *Copríere*, to cover. See *sentéere*, p. 149.* Also, perf. co-
 [pérsi, I covered; part. *copéerto*, covered.
Córréere, to gather. See *cógléere*.
Corrégere, to correct. See *réggere*.
Córréere, to run; var. p. 268.
Corrípóndere, to correspond. See *rispóndere*.
Corródere, to corrode. See *ródere*.
Corrómpere, to deprave. See *rómperere*.
Coscrívéere, to enlist. See *conservéere*.
Cospérgere, to strew. See *mérgere*.
Costríngere or } to constrain. See *constríngere*.
 † *Costrívare*, } to build. See *constrívare*.
Créscere, to grow. See *conséscere*.
Crocífíggere, to crucify. See *fíggere*. Part. *crocífíssó*,
Cuóere, to sew; var. p. 283. [crucified.
Cuócere, to cook; var. p. 248. Also, inf. *cócere*.

Dúggere, to love. See *diréggere*.
 † *Diluvítere*, to deluge; a unipersonal verb. See
 [píótere.
Dimérgere, to drown. See *demérgere*.
Díméllere, to discontinue. See *méllere*.
Dipíngere, to paint. See *píngere*.
Dipónere or } to depose. See *pónere*.
 † *Dipórréere*, }
Díre, to say. See (*dícere*).
Diréggere, to direct; var. p. 264.
Dirómperere, to break. See *rómperere*.
 † *Discéndere*, to descend. See *scéndere*.
Dischítúdere, to disclose. See *schítúdere*.
Disciógléere or } to ñtie. See *sciógléere*.
 † *Disciórréere*, }
Disconvenéere, to misbecome. See *convenéere*.
 † *Discopríere*, to discover. See *copríere*.
Discórrere, to discourse. See *córrere*.
Discútere, to discuss; var. p. 270.
Disdícere or } to deny. See *díre*.
 † *Disdítte*, }
Disfáre, to undo. See *fáre*.
Disjúngere or } to disjoin. See *gíúngere*.
 † *Disjúngere*, }
Disméllere, to dismiss. See *méllere*.
Disparéere, to disappear. See *esbítere*, p. 164. Also,
 [part. *disparéere*, disappeared.
 † *Dispérdere*, to disperse. See *pérdere*.
Dispérgere, to scatter. See *mérgere*.
Displacéere, to displease. See *placéere*.

- Dâre*, to give; var. p. 204.
Decadère, to decay. See *cadère*.
Decidère, to decide. See *ardère*.
Decomponère or } to decompose. See *componère*.
Decomporre, }
Decorrère, to pass away. See *corrère*.
Decrêcère, to decrease. See *crêcère*.
Declêcère or } to deduce. See *subcêcère*. Part. *dedûto*,
Declêrère, } [deduced].
Delûdère, to delude. See *ardère*.
Demêrgère or *dimêrgère*, to drown. See *mêrgère*.
Depônère or } to depose. See *ponère*.
Deporre, }
Deprimère, to depress. See *esprimère*.
Derûdère, to deride. See *ridère*.
Descrivère, to describe. See *scrivère*. [desisted].
† *Desistère*, to desist. See *crêdère*, p. 141. Part. *desistûto*,
Destinère, to infer. See *esprimère*. Perf. *destinsi*, [in-
 [ferred; part. *desunato*, inferred].
Dêtérgère, to scour. See *térgère*.
Detrâcère or } to detract. See *trâcère*.
Detrârère, }
Devôlgerè, or } to devolve. See *vôlgerè*.
Devôlcère, }
 (Dîcère) or *ârtè*, to say; var. p. 285.
† *Difêndère*, to defend. See *fêndère*.
Difûndère, to diffuse. See *fôndère*.
† *Dighiaciârè*, to thaw; a unipersonal verb. See *ghiac-
 [ciârè and piôvère*.
- Dispônère* or } to dispose. See *ponère*.
Dispôrère, }
† *Dissolvère*, to dissolve. See *solvère*. Part. *dissolûto*,
 [dissolved].
† *Disuâdère*, to dissuade; var. p. 213. Also, see *te-
 Distêndère*, to extend. See *stêndère*. [mérè, p. 135].
Distinguerè, to distinguish; var. p. 262.
Distôgîcère or *distôrère*, to divert from. See *tôgîcère*.
Distôrçère, to twist. See *tôrçère*.
Distôrre, to divert from. See *distôgîcère*.
Distrâcère or } to distract. See *trâcère*.
Distrârère, }
Distrûggère or } to destroy. See *strûggère*.
Distrârère, }
Divêllère, to pull up. See *svêllère*.
Divôlgerè or } to unfold. See *vôlgerè*.
Divôlcère, }
Dilençère, to detain. See *tençère*.
Divedère, to see. See *vedère*.
Dirêllère, to root out. See *svêllère*.
Divenîrè, to become. See *venîrè*.
† *Dividère*, to divide. See *crêdère*, p. 141, Also, perf.
 [divîsi, I divided; part. *dîcêto*, divided].
Divôlgerè or } to roll together. See *vôlgerè*.
Divôlcère, }
Dolêrè, to grieve; var. p. 216.
Dovêrè, to owe; var. p. 217.
Effôndère, to effuse. See *fôndère*.
Elêggère, to elect. See *leggère*.

- Ekläre*, to elide. See *lédere*. Part. *eise*.
Ekläre, to elude. See *árdere*.
Emérgere, to emerge. See *mérgere*.
Emúgnere or } to diminish. See *múgnere*.
Emúngere, }
Equivalère, to be equivalent. See *valère*.
Ergere, to raise. See *mérgere*.
Ergere, to erect. See *dirigere*.
Erómpere, to burst out. See *rómperere*.
 †*Esaurère*, to exhaust. See *estóire*, p. 154. Also, part.
 [*esáuisto*, exhausted.]
Estúdere, to exclude. See *chiúdere*.
 †*Estigere*, to exact. See *tésere*, p. 144. Part. *esálto*,
 [*exacted*.]
 †*Estimere*, to exempt. See *tésere*, p. 144. Part. *esénla-*
 [*to*, exempted.]
 †*Estátere*, to exist. See *crédere*, p. 141. Part. *estúto*,
 [*existed*.]
Expéllere, to expel. See *snéllere*. Perf. *espúlsis*, I ex-
 [*pelled*; part. *espúlsio*, expelled.]
Expónere or } to expose. See *pónere*.
Expórrere, }
Expórrere, to express; var. p. 265.
Esere, to be; auxiliary verb; var. p. 119.
Esténdere, to extend. See *sténdere*.
Estíngnere, to extinguish. See *distíngnere*.
Estórcere, to extort. See *tórcere*.
Estrácre or } to extract. See *trácre*.
Estrárrere, }
- Impónere* or } to impose. See *pónere*.
Impórrere, }
 †*Impórrere*, to be important; used as a unipersonal
 [*verb*. See *pióvere*.
Impréndere, to undertake. See *préndere*.
Imprimere, to print. See *esprimere*.
Inchiúdere or *inchiúdere*, to include. See *chiúdere*.
Incidere, to grave. See *árdere*.
Incígnere or } to be pregnant. See *cígnere*.
Incígnerere, }
Inciúdere, to include. See *inchiúdere*.
Incórrere, to incur. See *córrere*.
Incrésere, to be sorry; a unipersonal verb. See *pióvere*.
Inducere or } to induce. See *cuóvere*. Perf. *indúsi*, I
 induced; part. *indóto*, induced.
Indúrrere, }
Infígere or } to infl. See *figere*.
Infígnerere, }
Infígnerere or } to feign. See *fignerere*.
Infígnerere, }
Infígnerere, to bend. See *conéllere*.
Infígnerere, to inflict. See *léggerere*.
Infúndere, to infuse. See *fundere*.
Infraiméllere, to intermeddle. See *framiméllere*.
Infrángerere, to break. See *frángerere*.
Ingrúgnere or } to charge. See *grúgnere*.
Ingrúgnere, }
Inscríbere or *scríbere*, to inscribe. See *scríbere*.
 †*Insístere*, to insist. See *crédere*, p. 141. Part. *insísti-*
Insúrgere, to rise against. See *súrgere*. [to, insisted.]

- F** *f* *f* *f* } to do; var. p. 206.
F *f* *f* } to cleave. See *léssere*, p. 144. Also, perf. *f* *f* *f*, I cleft; part. *fésso*, cleft.
 † *Féndere*, to cleave. See *léssere*, p. 144. Also, perf. *f* *f* *f*, I cleft; part. *fésso*, cleft.
F *f* *f* } to fix. See *mérgere* or *léggere*. Perf. *f* *f* *f*
F *f* *f*, or *f* *f* *f*, I fixed; part. *f* *f* *f* or *f* *f* *f*, *f* *f* *f*,
F *f* *f* or } to feign. See *spégnere* or *giungere*. [fixed.
F *f* *f*, }
 † *Fondere*, to melt. See *léssere*, p. 144. Also, perf. *f* *f* *f*, I melted; part. *f* *f* *f*, melted.
 † *Framméllere*, to put between. See *méllere*.
 † *Frangere*, to break. See *giungere*.
F *f* *f* or } to interpose. See *pónere*.
F *f* *f*, }
F *f* *f*, to fry. See *léggere*. Part. *f* *f* *f*, fried.
 † *Gelare*, to freeze; a unipersonal verb. See *póvere*.
G *g* *g*, to kneel down. See *connéllere*.
 † *Genufféllere*, to kneel down. See *connéllere*.
 † *Ghiacciare*, to freeze; a unipersonal verb. See *póvere*.
G *g*, to go; a defective verb; var. p. 219.
G *g* *g* or } to arrive; var. p. 255.
G *g* *g*, }
 † *Grandinare*, to hail; a unipersonal verb. See *póvere*.
I *i* *i*, to delude. See *clúdere*.
 † *Imb* *re* or } to imbibe. See *dévere*.
 † *Imbévere*, }
I *i* *i*, to immerse. See *mérgere*.
I *i* *i*, to impel. See *avéllere*. Perf. *imp* *u* *l*, I impelled; part. *imp* *u* *l*, impelled.
- † *Instruire* or *istruire*, to instruct. See *estóre*, p. 154.
 Also, perf. *instruissi*, I instructed; *instruito*, instructed.
Inténdere, to understand. See *léndere*.
 † *Intercédere*, to intercede. See *cédere*.
I *i* *i* or } to prohibit. See *dire*.
Interdicere, }
Interdine, }
Interméllere, to interpose. See *méllere*.
Interpónere or } to interpose. See *pónere*.
Interpórre, }
Interrómperre, to interrupt. See *rómperre*.
Interténere or *intrattenére*, to detain. See *trattenére*.
Intervenére, to be present. See *venére*.
Intingere or } to dip. See *ingere*.
Intingere, }
Intrapréndere, to undertake. See *préndere*.
Intrattenére, to detain. See *interténere*.
Intrédere, to temper. See *árdere*.
Intródúcere or } to introduce. Perf. *in* *tr* *o*.
Intródúcere, } *tródússi*, I introduced; part. *intródú-*
Intrúdere, to intrude. See *árdere*. [to, introduced.
Invadere, to invade. See *árdere*.
Invalére, to prevail against. See *valére*. Part. *in* *tr* *o*, [prevailed against.
- Intólgere* or } to wrap up. See *élgere*.
Intólgere, }
Ire, to go; a defective verb; var. p. 311.
Irrúdere, to deride. See *ridere*.
Iscribere, to inscribe. See *inscribere*.
Istruire, to instruct. See *instruire*.

- † *Lampeggiare*, to lighten; a unipersonal verb. See *Lédere*, to offend. See *ardere*.
Létere and *licere* or } to be lawful; a unipersonal verb;
Létere and *licere*, } var. p. 306.
Léggere, to read; var. p. 258.
Lícere or *licére*, to be lawful. See *lécere* or *lecere*.
† *Lúcere*, to shine. See *crédere*. Also, perf. *lúsi*, I [shined].
- † *Maledicere* or } to curse. See *abborere*, p. 157. Part.
† *Maledire*, } *maledéitto*, cursed. Also, perf. *male-*
Malfare, to do wrong. See *färe*. [*ássi*, I cursed.
Manomèllere, to manumit. See *mèllere*.
Mantenere, to maintain. See *tenere*.
† *Mèggere*, to dive; var. p. 257.
† *Méscere*, to mix. See *léssere*, p. 144. Also, part. *mí-*
Mèllere, to put. See *connèllere*. Perf. *mísi*, I put;
[*sto*, mixed.
[part. *méso*, put.
(*Mólcere*), to assuage; a defective verb; var. p. 306.
† *Mórdere*, to bite. See *ardere*.
† *Mórre*, to die; var. p. 287.
† *Múgnere* or } to milk. See *úgnere*.
† *Múngere*, }
† *Muovere*, to move. See *scrivere*. Perf. *móssi*, I mov-
[ed; part. *móso*, moved. Also, inf. *móvere*.
† *Násere*, to be born; var. p. 278.
† *Nascóndere*, to conceal. See *ascóndere*.
† *Negligere*, to neglect. See *dirigere*.
† *Neviccare*, to snow; a unipersonal verb. See *pióvere*.
- † *Persuadere*, to persuade. See *dissuadere*.
† *Pervenire*, to reach. See *venire*.
† *Perrétere* or } to prevent. See *rivertere*. Part. *per-*
† *Perertere*, } *résso* or *perrévito*, perverted.
† *Piacere*, to please; var. p. 224.
† *Piágnere* or } to weep. See *spégnere* or *gíngere*.
† *Piágnere*, }
† *Pígnere* or } to paint. See *spégnere* or *gíngere*.
† *Pígnere*, }
† *Pígnere*, to rain; a unipersonal verb; var. p. 190.
† *Pónere* or *pórrere*, to put; var. p. 267.
† *Pógnere*, to offer. See *mégnere*. Part. *pórrto*, offered.
† *Pórrere*, to put. See *pónere*.
† *Pospónere* or } to postpone. See *pónere*.
† *Pospórrere*, }
† *Possédere*, to possess. See *sedere*.
† *Polere*, to be able; var. p. 225.
† *Précédere*, to shorten. See *ardere*.
† *Précórrere*, to shorten. See *ardere*.
† *Prédicere* or *prédire*, to predict. See *diré*.
† *Prédíggnere*, to like beforehand. See *dirigere*.
† *Prédire*, to predict. See *predicere*.
† *Préfiggere*; to prefix. See *figgere*. Perf. *préfixi*, I pre-
[fixed; part. *préfixo*, prefixed.
† *Prémere*, to press. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also, perf.
[*préssi*], I pressed; (*préso*), pressed.
† *Premèllere*, to premise. See *mèllere*.
† *Préndere*, to take. See *ardere*. Perf. *prési*, I took;
[part. *préso*, taken.

Nócere to hurt. See *náscere*. Also, inf. *nócere*.
Ocurrere, to happen; a unipersonal verb. See *córrere*.
 or *pióvere*. Fut. *occurrá* or *occurrá*, it shall or will
 [happen].
Offéndere, to offend. See *árdere*. Perf. *offénsi*, I of-
 [fended]; part. *offéns*, offended.
 † *Offerre* or } to offer. See *abberráre*, p. 157. Also,
 † *Offrere*, } part. *offrío*, offered.
Oírre, to smell; a defective verb; var. p. 313.
Omíttere, to omit. See *méttere*
Oppónere or } to oppose. See *pónere*. Also, part. *op-*
Oppórrre, } *pósito*, opposed.
Opprímere, to oppress. See *esprímere*.
 † *Ostruíre*, to obstruct. See *esbíre*, p. 154. Also, part.
Ottenére, to obtain. See *ténere*. [*ostrúito*, obstructed.
Parére, to appear; var. p. 221. Also, used as a uniper-
 [sonal verb. See *pióvere*.
 † *Páscere*, to feed. See *lésere*, p. 144. Part. *pascúto*,
 (*Pavére*), to fear; var. p. 300. [fed.
 † *Percepire*, to perceive. See *esbíre*, p. 154. Also,
 [part. *percéito*, perceived.
Percórrere, to run over. See *córrere*.
Percuótere, to strike. See *discútere*. Also, inf. *percótere*.
 † *Pérdere*, to lose. See *crétere*, p. 141. Also, perf.
 [(*périsi*), I lost; part. (*péris*), lost.
Perméttere, to permit. See *méttere*.
Perseguére, to persecute. See *segúre*.
 † *Perstátere*, to persevere. See *crétere*, p. 141. Part.
 [*persisúto*, persevered.

Prepónere or } to prefer. See *pónere*.
Prepórrre, }
Prescégitere or } to prefer. See *scégitere*.
Prescérre, }
Prescrívere, to prescribe. See *scrívere*.
Presedére, to preside. See *sedére*.
 † *Presúmere*, to presume. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also,
 perf. *presunsi*, I presumed; part. *presunúto*, presumed.
Presuppónere or } to presuppose. See *suppónere*.
Presuppórrre, }
Preténdere, to pretend. See *téndere*.
Prevalére, to prevail. See *valére*.
Prevedére, to foresee. See *vedére*.
Preveníre, to prevent. See *veníre*.
 † *Procedére*, to proceed. See *cédere*.
Prodúcere or } to produce. See *cuócere*. Perf. *prodússi*,
Prodúrrre, } I produced; part. *prodúto*, produced.
Profóndere, to dissipate. See *fóndere*.
Profóndere, }
Prométtere, to promise. See *méttere*.
Promuóvere, to promote. See *muóvere*.
Propónere or } to propose. See *pónere*.
Propórrre, }
Prorómpere, to break forth. See *rómperre*.
Prosciógitere or } to absolve. See *sciógitere*.
Prosciórrre, }
Proscrívere, to proscribe. See *scrívere*.
Prosequére, to prosecute. See *segúre*.
Prosléndere, to prostrate. See *sléndere*.
Protéggere to protect. See *léggere*.

- Proféndere*, to stretch. See *téndere*.
Protráre or } to protract. See *tráre*.
Provedére, to provide. See *vedére*.
Proveníre, to proceed. See *veníre*.
Púgnere or } to prick. See *úgnere*.
Púngere, }
Putrefáre, to putrefy. See *fare*.
Raccéndere, to kindle. See *accéndere*.
Racchiúdere, to enclose. See *acchiúdere*.
Raccógliere or } to gather. See *accógliere*.
Raccórrere, }
† *Rádáre*, to shave. See *léuere*, p. 144. Also, perf. [*rási*, I shaved; part. *ráso*, shaved.]
Raggiúgnere or } to rejoin. See *aggiúgnere*.
Raggiúgnere, }
Rallénere, to detain. See *attenére*.
Ravvedére [*si*], to reform. See *avvedére*.
Ravvólgnere or } to wrap. See *vólgnere*.
Ramóvverere, }
Recádere, to retrench. See *árdere*.
Redámere, to redeem. See *esprímere*. Perf. *redénsi*, I [redeemed; part. *redénto*, redeemed.]
Réggere, to govern. See *léggere*.
† *Réndere*, to render. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also, perf. [*rési*, I rendered; part. *résó*, rendered.]
Repéllere, to repel. See *spéllere*.
Reprimere, to repress. See *esprimere*.
† *Rescúndere*, to resound. See *scúndere*.
- Riconsentire*, to see one in the law. See *consentire*.
Riconsvertire or } to convert again. See *convertire* or
† *Riconvertire*, } *convertire*.
† *Ricopríre*, to cover again. See *copríre*.
Ricórrere, to gather. See *ricógliere*.
Ricórrere, to have recourse. See *córrere*.
Ricredére, to undeceive one's self. See *crédere*.
Ricrescere, to increase. See *crésceere*.
Ricucúre, to sew again. See *cucre*.
Ricucúere, to cook again. See *cuocere*.
Rídere, to laugh. See *árdere*.
Ridícere or } to repeat. See *díre*.
Rídere, }
Ridúcere or } to reduce. See *cuocere*. Perf. *ridússi*, I
Ridútere, } reduced; part. *ridúto*, reduced.
Ridére, to return; a defective verb; var. p. 307. Also,
Rífare, to do again. See *fare*. [inf. *redíre*.]
† *Rifléttere*, to reflect. See *léttere*, p. 144. Also, part. *rifléssó*, reflected, which is exclusively applied to light,
† *Rifóndere*, to new cast. See *fóndere*. [sound, &c.]
Rifrángere, to reflect. See *frángere*.
Rifríggere, to fry again. See *fríggere*.
† *Rilúggere*, to read again. See *léggere*.
† *Rilúcere*, to shine. See *lúcere*.
Rimanére, to remain; var. p. 227.
Riméttere, to replace. See *méttere*.
Rimóvverere, to cause or feel remorse. See *móvverere*.
Rimúvverere, to remove. See *múvverere*.
† *Rinúscere*, to be born again. See *núscere*.

Rescriere, to answer in writing. See *scriere*.
†Restare, to resist. See *credere*, p. 141. Part. *resistito*,
 [resisted].
Respingere or } to repel. See *spingere*.
Respingere, }
Restringere or } to limit. See *stringere*.
Restringere, }
Riacendere, to rekindle. See *accendere*.
†Riaprire, to re-appear. See *apparire*.
†Riaprire, to re-open. See *aprire*.
Riárdere, to burn again. See *árdere*.
Riassumere, to re-assume. See *assumere*.
Riavére, to have again. See *avére*.
†Ribenedicere or } to bless again. See *benedicere*.
†Ribenedicare, }
†Ribére or } to drink again. See *bévere*.
†Ribévere, }
Ricadére, to fall again. See *cadére*.
Richiédere, to request. See *chiédere*.
Richiudere, to shut again. See *chiudere*.
Ricignere or } to gird. See *cignere*.
Ricingere, }
Ricógliere or *ricórre*, to gather. See *cógliere*.
Ricomponere or } to compose again. See *componere*.
Ricompórre, }
Riconducere or } to bring back. See *condúcere*.
Ricondurre, }
Ricongiugnere or } to rejoin. See *congiugnere*.
Ricongiungere, }
Riconoscere, to know again. See *conoscere*.

Rinchiudere, to inclose. See *chiudere*.
Rincrescere, to be displeased. See *increscere*. Also,
 [used as a unipersonal verb. See *piócere*.
Rinventre, to find out. See *venire*.
Rinvólgeré or } to involve. See *rólgeré*.
Rinvólgeré, }
Ripercuótere, to strike back. See *percuótere*.
Ripérdere, to lose again. See *pérdere*.
Ripiágnere or } to weep again. See *piágnere*.
Ripiágnere, }
Ripónere or } to replace. See *pónere*.
Ripórre, }
†Riprémere, to repress. See *prémere*.
†Ripréndere, to take back. See *préndere*.
Risaltire, to mount again. See *sáltire*.
Risapére, to know by report. See *sapére*.
Rischíudere, to open again. See *schíudere*.
Riscrítere, to write again. See *scrítere*.
Riscuótere, to exact. See *scuótere*.
Risédere, to reside. See *sedére*.
†Risólvere, to resolve. See *sólvere*. Also, perf. *risólto*,
Risórgere, to rise up again. See *sórgere*. [I resolved.
Risospígnere or } to drive back. See *sospígnere*.
Risospíngere, }
Risortire, to remember. See *sorvenire*.
Rispígnere or } to repulse. See *respígnere*.
Rispíngere, }
Rispóndere, to answer. See *árdere*. Part. *rispóto*, an-
Risaltire, to desist. See *stare*. [I answered.]

† *Sembràre*, to appear; used as a unipersonal verb. See [*piòvere*.]
(Sèpere), to creep; a defective verb; var. p. 308.
Sfuggìre to avoid. See *fuggìre*.
(Sillère), to be or to keep silent; a defective verb; var. [p. 300.
Smùgnere or } to dry up. See *mùgnere*.
Smùngere, }
Smùòvere, to move. See *muòvere*.
Socchiùdere, to shut up. See *chiùdere*.
Socòrrere, to succour. See *còrrere*.
Soddisfàre, to satisfy. See *fàre*.
† *Soffèrre* or *soffrìre*, to suffer. See *offerère*.
Soffrìggere, to fry slightly. See *frìggere*.
Soffrìre, to suffer. See *sofferìre*.
Soggiacère, to be subject. See *giacère*.
Soggiùgnere or } to add. See *giùgnere*.
Soggràngere, }
Solère, to be wont; a defective verb; var. p. 300.
† *Sòltere*, to solve. See *tésere*, p. 144. Also, part. so-
 [lúto, solved.
Sommérgere, to submerge. See *mérgere*.
Sommèllere, to submit. See *mèllere*.
Sopprímere, to suppress. See *esprímere*.
Sopraggiùgnere or } to come upon. See *giùgnere*.
Sopraggiàngere, }
Soprapponere or } to put over. See *pónere*.
Soprapprèndere, to surprise. See *préndere*.
Soprascribere, to superscribe. See *scrìvere*.

Risrìgnere or } to restrain. See *strìgnere*.
Risràngere, }
Rilènere, to retain. See *tenère*.
Risùgnere or } to die again. See *ìgnere*.
Risùngere, }
Risògliere or *riòrrere*, to retake. See *isògliere*.
Risòrrere, to twist back. See *tòrrere*.
Risòrrere, to retake. See *riògliere*.
Risràre or } to extract. See *tràre*.
Risràre, }
Rinèdere, to see again. See *vedère*.
Rinèdere, to resell. See *véndere*.
Rinèrrere, to return. See *venìre*.
Risòrrere, to return; var. p. 271.
Risùrrere, to live again. See *vìvere*.
Rivòlgere or } to revolve. See *vòlgere*.
Rivòltere, }
Riuscìre, to succeed. See *uscìre*.
Ròdere, to gnaw. See *árdere*.
Ròmperere, to break; var. p. 279.
Sapère, to ascend; var. p. 289.
Sapère, to know; var. p. 229.
Scandère, to fall due. See *cadère*.
Scéglere or *scèrrere*, to choose. See *cóglere*.
† *Scèndere*, to descend. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also, perf.
 [scéni, I descended; part. scéso, descended.
Scérrere, to choose. See *scéglere*.
Schiùdere, to open. See *chiùdere*.

Scindere, to cleave. See *árdere*. Perf. *scíui*, I cleft; [part. *scíisso* (scíinto), cleft].

Scígnere or } to ungrind. See *cígnere*.
Scígnere, }
Scíogígnere or } to untie. See *cógígnere*.
Scíógnere, }
Scómméttère, to bet. See *comméttère*.
Scómpónere or } to discompose. See *compónere*.
Scómpónere, }
Scóppígnere, to rout. See *confígnere*.
†*Scómméttère*, to disconnect. See *comméttère*.
Scónoścere, to be ungrateful. See *conóścere*.
Scóntórcere, to wrest. See *conórcere*.
Scónténre, to misbecome. See *conténre*.
Scónvólgere or } to confound. See *conólgere*.
Scónvólgere, }
†*Scóppígnere*, to discover. See *copígnere*.
Scórgere, to perceive. See *mérgere*. Part. *scórtio*, per-
 [ceived].
Scórrere, to lay waste. See *córrere*.
Scóscéndere, to break. See *scéndere*. Perf. *scóscén*, I
 [broke; part. *scóscéso*, broken,
Scrígnere, to write; var. p. 274.
Scútrere, to rip. See *cútrere*.
Scúótere, to shake. See *discútrere*. Also, inf. *scótere*.
Sdútrere, to rip. See *cútrere*.
Sedére, to sit down; var. p. 231.
Sedúccere or } to seduce. See *cúccere*. Perf. *sedússi*, I
Sedútrere, } seduced; part. *sedúcto*, seduced.
Segútrere, to follow; var. p. 291.

Sopraságnere, to attack unexpectedly. See *ságnere*.
Soprasedére, to supersede. See *sedére*.
Sopraslágnere, to superintend. See *stágnere*.
Sopravvenígnere, to happen. See *venígnere*.
Sopravvíttere, to survive. See *víttere*.
Soprinténdere, to superintend. See *inténdere*.
Sórgere, to arise. See *mérgere*. Part. *sórtio* (súrto),
 [arisen].

Soppréndere, to take by surprise. See *préndere*.
Sorréggere, to support. See *réggere*.
Sorrídnere, to smile. See *rídnere*.
Sorvenígnere, to come upon. See *venígnere*.
Sóscrígnere, to subscribe. See *scrígnere*.
Sospéndere, to suspend. See *spéndere*.
Sospígnere or } to push. See *spígnere*.
Sospígnere, }
Sosténere, to sustain. See *tenére*.
Sóttinténdere, to understand. See *inténdere*.
Sóttométtère, to submit. See *méttère*.
Sóttopónere or } to submit. See *pónere*.
Sóttopórrere, }
Sóttoscrígnere, to subscribe. See *scrígnere*.
Sóttótrágnere or } to subtract. See *trágnere*.
Sóttótrágnere, }
Sóvvénire, to help. See *venígnere*.
Sóvvértere or } to subvert. See *rivértere*. Also, perf.
 †*Sóvvértígnere*, } [sovvértígnere], I subverted; part. *sovvértígnere*,
 [subverted].
 †*Spándere*, to pour out. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also,

- perf. *spáisi*, I poured out; part. *spáiso* (spáinto), poured
 [out.
Spárgere, to spread. See *mérgere*. Also, part. (spáito),
 † *Spárite*, to disappear. See *apparíre*. [spread.
Spégnere or } to extinguish; var. p. 261.
Spégnere, }
Spégnere, to spend. See *árdere*. Perf. *spéni*, I spent;
 † *Spérdere*, to dissipate. See *pérdere*. [part. *spéso*, spent.
Spíacere, to displease. See *piacere*.
Spígnera or } to push. See *spégnere* or *gúngere*.
Spígnera, }
Spórgere, to stretch out. See *pórgere*.
Spónere or } to expose. See *pónere*.
Spórra, }
 † *Sprémere*, to squeeze. See *prémere*.
Spróméllere, to go back from one's word. See *promét-*
Spróméllere, to leave destitute. See *proméllere*. [tere.
Stáre, to stand; var. p. 208.
Sténdere, to extend. See *téndere*.
Stígnera or } to stain. See *ígnera*.
Stígnera, }
Stiógliere or *stórra*, to divert from. See *tógliere*.
Stórcere, to twist. See *tórcere*.
Stórra, to divert from. See *stiógliere*.
 † *Sirapérdere*, to lose a great deal. See *pérdere*.
Sirapédere, to see much. See *travedere*.
Siravólgere or } to wrest. See *travólgere*.
Siravólgere, }
- Térgere*, to clean. See *mérgere*.
Tígnere or } to dye. See *spégnere* or *gúngere*.
Tígnere, }
Tógliere or *tórra*, to take away. See *cógliere*.
 † *Tóndere*, to shear. See *téscere*, p. 144. Also, perf. *tóni*,
 [I sheared; part. *tóso*, sheared.
Tórcere, to twist. See *víncere*.
Tórra, to take away. See *tógliere*.
Tradúcere or } to translate. See *cuócere*. Perf. *tradú-*
Tradúrra, } si, I translated; part. *tradólto*, trans-
Trággere, } to draw; var. p. 252. [lated.
Tráere or *trárra*, }
Tráfígere or } to transfix. See *figere* or *figgere*.
Tráfígere, }
 † *Trátúcere*, to shine through. See *lúcere*.
Trascéndere or *trascéndere*, to surpass. See *scéndere*.
Trascérrere or *trascérrere*, to transcribe. See *scrérrere*.
Trasfóndere or *trasfóndere*, to transfuse. See *fóndere*.
Trasméllere or *trasméllere*, to transmit. See *méllere*.
Trasparíre or *trasparíre*, to be transparent. See *ap-*
 [paríre.
Traspónere, *traspónere* or } to transpose. See *pónere*.
Traspórra, *traspórra*, }
Trárra, to draw. See *trárra*.
Trascégliere or *trascérra*, to select. See *scégliere*.
Trascéndere, to surpass. See *trascéndere*.
Trascérra, to select. See *trascégliere*.
Trascórrere, to run over. See *córrere*.
Trascrívere, to transcribe. See *trascrívere*.

- Strígnera* or } to bind fast. See *spégnere* or *grúngere*.
Stríngere, } Part. *stríctio*, bound fast.
Strúggere, to dissolve. See *léggere*.
 (Stupére), to be astonished; a defective verb; var. p. [302].
 † *Succédere*, to succeed. See *cédere*.
Succíngere or } to gird up. See *cíngere*.
 † *Súggere*, to suck. See *téssere*, p. 144. Also, perf. [(súsi), I sucked; part. *succhíáto*, sucked.
Svellere or *stérre*, to root up; var. p. 264.
Svenire, to faint. See *venire*.
Svèrré, to root up. See *svèllere*.
Svólgera or } to unfold. See *vólgera*.
Svólvere, }
Suppónere or } to suppose. See *pónere*.
Suppórre, }
Sussegúare, to follow. See *segúare*.
Susístere, to subsist. See *crédere*, p. 141. Part. *susístito*, subsisted. [333].
Tncére, to be or to keep silent; var. p. 233.
 (Tángere), to touch; a defective verb; var. p. 309.
 † *Tempestáre*, to hail; a unipersonal verb. See *píonere*.
 † *Téndere*, to tend. See *crédere*, p. 141. Also, perf. [tési, I tended; part. *tésato*, tended.
Tenére, to hold; var. p. 235.
Transfóndere, to transfuse. See *transfóndere*.
Transmíttere, to transmit. See *transmíttere*.
Transparente, to be transparent. See *transparente*.
Traspónere or } to transpose. See *traspónere*.
Traspórre, }
Traiténére, to entertain. See *tenére*.
Travedére, to see double. See *vedére*.
Tranvólgera or } to invert. See *vólgera*.
Travólvere, }
 † *Tuonáre*, to thunder; a unipersonal verb. See *píó-
 Uccídere*, to kill. See *drídere*.
Udíre, to hear; var. p. 292.
U'gnere or } to anoint. See *spégnere* or *grúngere*.
U'ngere, }
U'ngere, to urge; a defective verb; var. p. 309.
Uscire, to go out; var. p. 294.
Valére, to be worth; var. p. 237.
Vedére, to see; var. p. 240.
Venire, to come; var. p. 295.
 (Vígere), to be vigorous; a defective verb; var. p. 309.
Víncere, to conquer; var. p. 249.
Vínere, to live. See *scrivere*. Part. *visúto* or *vívúto*, [lived.
Vólére, to will; var. p. 242.
Vólgera or } to turn; var. p. 275.
Vólvere, }

CHAPTER VI.

Of Participles.

ITALIAN participles, like the adjectives, have three terminations; viz. *e* (in the *present*), and *o*, *a* (in the *past*).

Participles ending in *o* are masculine, and in the plural change *o* into *i*; as,

amáto, } loved; *uómo amáto*, loved man;
amáti, } *uómini amáti*, loved men.

Participles ending in *a* are feminine, and are formed from the masculine, by changing *o* into *a*; as,

temúto, } feared; *uómo temúto*, feared man;
temúta, } *dónna temúta*, feared woman;
 and in the plural change *a* into *e*; as,
temúta, } feared; *dónna temúta*, feared woman;
temúte, } *dónne temúte*, feared women.

Participles ending in *e* are of the common gender, and form their plural, by changing *e* into *i*; as,

dorménte, sleeping; } *uómo dorménte*, sleeping man;
 } *dónna dorménte*, sleeping woman;
dorménti, sleeping; } *uómini dorménti*, sleeping men;
 } *dónne dorménti*, sleeping women.

When participles are used as adjectives, they form their comparatives and superlatives according to the general rule.

There are many participles in *áto*, *áta*, which are commonly contracted, in these terminations, by suppressing the *at*; these are:

accétto,—*a*, (for) *accett-át-o*,—*át-a*, accepted;
accóncio, *acconciáto*, fitted up;

<i>adátto,</i> (for)	<i>adattáto,</i>	adapted ;
<i>adórno,</i>	<i>adornáto,</i>	adorned ;
<i>asciútto,</i>	<i>asciuttáto,</i>	dried ;
<i>avvézzo,</i>	<i>avvezzáto,</i>	accustomed ;
<i>cálmo,</i>	<i>calmáto,</i>	calmed ;
<i>cárico,</i>	<i>caricáto,</i>	loaded ;
<i>cáссо,</i>	<i>cassáto,</i>	void ;
<i>céreο,</i>	<i>cercáto,</i>	sought ;
<i>cólmo,</i>	<i>colmáto,</i>	heaped ;
<i>cómpro,</i>	<i>compráto,</i>	bought ;
<i>éοncio,</i>	<i>conciáto,</i>	fitted ;
<i>conféssο,</i>	<i>confessáto,</i>	confessed ;
<i>conténtο,</i>	<i>contentáto,</i>	contented ;
<i>cóntο,</i>	<i>contáto,</i>	counted ;
<i>créspo,</i>	<i>crespáto,</i>	wrinkled ;
<i>désto,</i>	<i>destáto,</i>	awakened ;
<i>diméntico,</i>	<i>dimenticáto,</i>	forgotten ;
<i>diméstico,</i>	<i>dimesticáto,</i>	tamed ;
<i>disadátto,</i>	<i>disadattáto,</i>	unfit ;
<i>dómo,</i>	<i>domáto,</i>	tamed ;
<i>férmo,</i>	<i>fermáto,</i>	stopped ;
<i>fisso,</i>	<i>fissáto,</i>	fixed ;
<i>gónfio,</i>	<i>gonfiáto,</i>	swollen ;
<i>guástο,</i>	<i>guastáto,</i>	spoiled ;
<i>inférmo,</i>	<i>infernáto,</i>	sickened ;
<i>infétto,</i>	<i>infettáto,</i>	infected ;
<i>ingómbro</i>	<i>ingomberáto,</i>	} incumbered ;
<i>ingómbro</i>	<i>ingombráto,</i>	
<i>lácero,</i>	<i>laceráto,</i>	torn ;
<i>lássο,</i>	<i>lassáto,</i>	wearied ;
<i>kíbero,</i>	<i>liberáto,</i>	delivered ;
<i>lógoro,</i>	<i>logoráto,</i>	} worn out ;
<i>lógro,</i>	<i>lográto,</i>	
<i>mácero,</i>	<i>maceráto,</i>	macerated ;
<i>manifésto,</i>	<i>manifestáto,</i>	manifested ;
<i>móstrο,</i>	<i>mostráto,</i>	shown ;
<i>mózzo,</i>	<i>mozzáto,</i>	cut off ;
<i>nétto,</i>	<i>nettáto,</i>	cleaned ;
<i>nóto,</i>	<i>notáto,</i>	noted ;
<i>págo,</i>	<i>pagáto,</i>	paid ;

<i>pésto,</i>	(for)	<i>pestáto,</i>	pounded ;
<i>prívo,</i>		<i>priváto,</i>	deprived ;
<i>riadórno,</i>		<i>riadornáto,</i>	readorned ;
<i>ricómpro,</i>		<i>ricompráto,</i>	rebought ;
<i>rimóstro,</i>		<i>rimostráto,</i>	remonstrated ;
<i>ripésto,</i>		<i>ripestáto,</i>	repounded ;
<i>ritócco,</i>		<i>ritoccháto,</i>	retouched ;
<i>rivólto,</i>		<i>rivoltáto,</i>	revolted ;
<i>rízso,</i>		<i>rizzáto,</i>	erected ;
<i>sálvo,</i>		<i>salváto,</i>	saved ;
<i>sáno,</i>		<i>sanáto,</i>	cured ;
<i>súzio,</i>		<i>saziáto,</i>	satisfied ;
<i>scálzo,</i>		<i>scalzáto,</i>	unshod ;
<i>scámpo,</i>		<i>scampáto,</i>	escaped ;
<i>seárico,</i>		<i>scaricáto,</i>	unloaded ;
<i>scémo,</i>		<i>scemáto,</i>	diminished ;
<i>scóncio,</i>		<i>sconciáto,</i>	spoiled ;
<i>sconténto,</i>		<i>scontentáto,</i>	discontented :
<i>sécco,</i>		<i>seccáto,</i>	dried ;
<i>sgómbero,</i>		<i>sgomberáto,</i>	cleared ;
<i>sgómbro,</i>		<i>sgombráto,</i>	
<i>spórco,</i>		<i>sporcháto,</i>	soiled ;
<i>stáncó,</i>		<i>stancáto,</i>	tired ;
<i>stracárico,</i>		<i>stracaricáto,</i>	overloaded ;
<i>stráccio,</i>		<i>stracciáto,</i>	torn off ;
<i>strácco,</i>		<i>straccáto,</i>	fatigued ;
<i>svéglío,</i>		<i>svegliáto,</i>	awakened ;
<i>tócco,</i>		<i>toccháto,</i>	touched ;
<i>trító,</i>		<i>tritáto,</i>	crumbled ;
<i>trónco,</i>		<i>troncáto,</i>	cut off ;
<i>úso,</i>		<i>usáto,</i>	used ;
<i>viéto,</i>		<i>vietáto,</i>	forbidden ;
<i>vólto,</i>		<i>voltáto,</i>	turned ;
<i>vuóto,</i>		<i>vuotáto,</i>	emptied.

CHAPTER VII.

Of Adverbs.

THE greater part of Italian adverbs are formed of a feminine adjective, and the noun *mén*te, manner (from the Latin *mens*); as,

<i>dó</i> tt	learned ;	<i>dotta-mén</i> te,	{	in a learned manner,
				learnedly ;
<i>sá</i> via,	wise ;	<i>savia-mén</i> te,	{	in a wise manner,
				wisely ;
<i>dól</i> ce,	sweet ;	<i>dolce-mén</i> te,	{	in a sweet manner,
				sweetly.

If the adjective ends in *le* or *re*, for the sake of euphony, the final *e* is dropped, in the formation of the adverb ; as,

<i>fedé</i> le,	faithful ;	<i>fedel-mén</i> te,	faithfully ;
<i>maggioré</i> ,	greater ;	<i>maggior-mén</i> te,	more greatly.

These adverbs have their comparatives and superlatives, formed from the comparatives and superlatives of the adjectives ; as,

<i>più sincé</i> ra,	more sincere ;	<i>più sinceramén</i> te,	more sin-
			[cerely ;
<i>méno fé</i> lice,	less happy ;	<i>méno felicemén</i> te,	less happi-
			[ly ;
<i>prudéntí</i> ssima,	very prudent ;	<i>prudéntíssimamén</i> te,	very
			[prudently.

Some adverbs are mere adjectives, and are used also in their comparatives and superlatives ; as,

<i>chiá</i> ro [<i>chiaramén</i> te],	clearly ;	<i>più chiá</i> ro,	more clearly ;
<i>schí</i> etta [<i>schiettamén</i> te],	candidly ;	<i>méno schí</i> etta,	less
			[candidly ;
<i>trí</i> ste [<i>tristamén</i> te],	sadly ;	{ <i>tristí</i> ssimo,	} very sadly.
		{ <i>tristí</i> ssima,	

The following are the other adverbs most in use in Italian, arranged according to their signification ; viz.

Of Time.

<i>adesso,</i>	} now ;	<i>diétro,</i>	} afterward ;
<i>mò,</i>		<i>dópo,</i>	
<i>ora,</i>	} then ;	<i>póí,</i>	} then,
<i>allóra,</i>		<i>dipóí,</i>	
<i>ancóra,</i>	} still ;	<i>dappóí,</i>	} afterward ;
<i>tuttóra,</i>		<i>póscia,</i>	
<i>talóra,</i>	sometimes ;	<i>índí,</i>	} then,
<i>ognóra,</i>	} always ;	<i>quíndí,</i>	
<i>sémpre,</i>		<i>sovénte,</i>	<i>appréssó,</i>
often ;	<i>testéso,</i>	<i>ínfíne,</i>	in fine ;
<i>testéso,</i>	} just now ;	<i>da cápo,</i>	once more ;
<i>testè,</i>		<i>già,</i>	} already ;
<i>iéri,</i>	yesterday ;	<i>digíà,</i>	
<i>avantiéri,</i>	the day before	<i>guári,</i>	not long since ;
	[yesterday ;	<i>mái,</i>	} never ;
<i>l'áltro,</i>	} the other day ;	<i>gíammái,</i>	
<i>l'altriéri,</i>		<i>omái,</i>	} now ;
<i>ièrmattína,</i>	yesterday morn-	<i>oramái,</i>	
	[ing ;	<i>oggímái,</i>	
<i>ièrséra,</i>	last evening ;	<i>quási,</i>	almost ;
<i>óggi,</i>	to-day ;	<i>círca,</i>	} about ;
<i>oggidí,</i>	in our days ;	<i>incírca,</i>	
<i>stamáne,</i>	this morning ;	<i>intórno,</i>	} late ;
<i>staséra,</i>	this evening ;	<i>tárdí,</i>	
<i>stanótte,</i>	to-night ;	<i>per témpo,</i>	soon ;
<i>domattína,</i>	to-morrow morn-	<i>présto,</i>	quick ;
	[ing ;	<i>adágio,</i>	slow ;
<i>dimáni,</i>	} to-morrow ;	<i>méntré,</i>	whilst ;
<i>dománe,</i>		<i>intánto,</i>	} in the mean
<i>posdimáni,</i>	the day after	<i>frattánto,</i>	
<i>posdománe,</i>	to-morrow,	<i>trattánto,</i>	
<i>innánzi,</i>	} before ;	<i>dacchè,</i>	since ;
<i>diánzi,</i>		<i>finchè,</i>	until ;
<i>príma,</i>	<i>quándo,</i>	when ;	
		<i>tuttavía,</i>	still.

- Of Place.

<i>quí,</i>	} here, hither ;	<i>dónde,</i>	whence ;
<i>quá,</i>		<i>ovúnque,</i>	} wherever ;
<i>lí,</i>	} there, thither ;	<i>dovúnque,</i>	
<i>lá,</i>			<i>ogni dóve,</i>
<i>costí,</i>	} there near you ;	<i>altróve,</i>	} elsewhere ;
<i>costà,</i>		<i>altrónde,</i>	
<i>collí,</i>	} there, thither ;	<i>avánti,</i>	} before ;
<i>colà,</i>		<i>davánti,</i>	
<i>sù,</i>	up ;	<i>diétro,</i>	} behind ;
<i>giù,</i>	down ;	<i>didiétro,</i>	
<i>glí,</i>	} there ;	<i>indiétro,</i>	} back ;
<i>ivi,</i>		<i>addiétro,</i>	
<i>quívi,</i>	} thence ;	<i>sópra,</i>	upon, above ;
<i>índi,</i>		<i>sótto,</i>	under, below ;
<i>quínci,</i>	from hence ;	<i>abbasso,</i>	below ;
<i>quíndi,</i>	from thence ;	<i>éntro,</i>	} within ;
<i>quassù,</i>	here above ;	<i>déntro,</i>	
<i>quaggiù,</i>	here below ;	<i>fuóri,</i>	} without ;
<i>insù,</i>	upward ;	<i>fuóra,</i>	
<i>ingiù,</i>	downward ;	<i>difuóri,</i>	} from without ;
<i>lassù,</i>	there above ;	<i>difuóra,</i>	
<i>laggiù,</i>	there below ;	<i>alláto,</i>	} aside ;
<i>colassù,</i>	there above ;	<i>accánto,</i>	
<i>colaggiù,</i>	there below ;	<i>attórno,</i>	} around ;
<i>costaggiù,</i>	there below near	<i>dattórno,</i>	
	[you ;	<i>rimpétto,</i>	} opposite ;
<i>costínci,</i>	from thence ;	<i>dirimpétto,</i>	
<i>óve,</i>	} where ;	<i>lúngi,</i>	far ;
<i>dóve,</i>		<i>óltre,</i>	beyond.

Of Order.

<i>prima,</i>	first ;	<i>assiéme,</i>	} together ;
<i>dipóí,</i>	then ;	<i>insiéme,</i>	
<i>quíndi,</i>	afterward ;	<i>a vicénda,</i>	by turns ;
<i>infíne,</i>	finally ;	<i>al tútto,</i>	altogether ;
<i>alla fíla,</i>	in a row ;	<i>al rovésccio,</i>	the reverse ;
<i>in giro,</i>	by turns ;	<i>sossópra,</i>	topsyturvy.

Of Quantity.

<i>più</i> , more ;	<i>niénte</i> , } nothing ;
<i>méno</i> , } less ;	<i>affátto</i> , }
<i>mánco</i> , }	<i>davantággio</i> , more ;
<i>assái</i> , much ;	<i>alpiù</i> , at the most ;
<i>abbastánza</i> , } enough ;	<i>alméno</i> , } at least.
<i>a sufficiénza</i> , }	<i>almánco</i> , }

Of Quality.

<i>béne</i> , well ;	<i>boccóne</i> , with one's face
<i>mále</i> , badly ;	[downward ;
<i>appéna</i> , hardly ;	<i>brancolóne</i> , crawlingly ;
<i>appósta</i> , purposely ;	<i>inginocchióne</i> , on one's
<i>a gára</i> , emulously ;	[knees ;
<i>a cáso</i> , by chance ;	<i>carpóne</i> , upon all fours ;
<i>a tórto</i> , wrongly ;	<i>a cavalcióné</i> , astride over.
<i>tentóne</i> , gropingly ;	

Of Affirmation.

<i>sì</i> , yes ;	<i>affè</i> , in faith ;
<i>già</i> , yes, certainly ;	<i>appúnto</i> , just ;
<i>béne</i> , well ;	<i>volentiéri</i> , willingly ;
<i>maìsì</i> , yes indeed ;	<i>benvolentiéri</i> , very willing-
<i>sì béne</i> , yes truly ;	[ly ;
<i>invéro</i> , } indeed,	<i>malvolentiéri</i> , unwillingly.
<i>davvéro</i> , }	
<i>da dovéro</i> , } truly,	
<i>in verità</i> , } in truth ;	

Of Negation.

<i>no</i> , no, not ;	<i>nonmái</i> , never ;
<i>mái</i> , never ;	<i>míca</i> , not ;
<i>mainò</i> , no indeed ;	<i>nonmíca</i> , not at all ;
<i>cérto no</i> , certainly not ;	<i>per nùlla</i> , by no means ;
<i>nongià</i> , not, not at all ;	<i>niénte affátto</i> , nothing at
	[all.

Of Doubt.

<i>fórze,</i>	} perhaps ;	<i>per accidénte,</i>	} perchance.
<i>forsechè,</i>		<i>per sórte,</i>	
<i>può éssere,</i>	} may be ;	<i>per avventúra,</i>	
<i>può dársi,</i>			

Of Comparison.

<i>si,</i>	} so, thus ;	<i>viappiù,</i>	} a great deal [more ;
<i>cost,</i>		<i>viemméno,</i>	
<i>cóme,</i>	as ;	<i>viemméno,</i>	
<i>siccóme,</i>	so, as ;	<i>a guísa,</i>	} like.
<i>più,</i>	more ;	<i>a módo,</i>	
<i>méno,</i>	less ;	<i>al pári,</i>	
<i>assái,</i>	much ;		

Of Interrogation.

<i>óve ?</i>	where ?	<i>chè ?</i>	how ?
<i>dóve ?</i>	where, whither ?	<i>cóme ?</i>	how ?
<i>dónde ?</i>	whence ?	<i>perchè ?</i>	why ?
<i>quándo ?</i>	when ?	<i>quánto ?</i>	how much ?

Of Choice.

<i>ánzi,</i>	} rather,	<i>piuprésto,</i>	} rather,
<i>prima,</i>		} sooner ;	

Of Demonstration.

<i>écco,</i>	here or there is, lo,	<i>eccolì,</i>	} there is, there [are.
	[behold ;	<i>eccoglì,</i>	
<i>eccoquí,</i>	} here is, here are ;	<i>eccolà,</i>	
<i>eccoquà,</i>			

A list of the adjectives, which are used in Italian, as adverbs.

<i>forte</i> , very much ;	<i>ráro</i> , rarely ;
<i>spesso</i> , often ;	<i>sólo</i> , only ;
<i>sódo</i> , fast, hard ;	<i>tútto</i> , all ;
<i>álto</i> , softly ;	<i>póco</i> , little ;
<i>cérto</i> , certainly ;	<i>mólto</i> , much ;
<i>tríste</i> , sadly ;	<i>tróppo</i> , too much ;
<i>dólce</i> , sweetly ;	<i>bélló</i> , handsomely ;
<i>chiáro</i> , clearly ;	<i>buóno</i> , very well ;
<i>schiétto</i> , candidly ;	<i>méglío</i> , better ;
<i>piáno</i> , low, softly ;	<i>péggio</i> , worse ;
<i>tárdo</i> , late ;	<i>apérto</i> , openly ;
<i>lénto</i> , slowly ;	<i>súbito</i> , immediately ;
<i>présto</i> , soon ;	<i>sicúro</i> , surely ;
<i>prónto</i> , readily ;	<i>diméssó</i> , lowly ;
<i>tósto</i> , } speedily ;	<i>somméssó</i> , humbly ;
<i>rátto</i> , } speedily ;	<i>vicíno</i> , near ;
<i>tánto</i> , so much ;	<i>lontáno</i> , far.

In order to know when these words are adjectives, and when adverbs, it is sufficient to observe whether in the discourse they stand by themselves, or are added to or used for a noun ; for, in the former case, they are always adverbs, and in the latter, adjectives.

Besides the above adverbs there are some expressions, which in several words announce the same idea, that might be expressed by an adverb. These are called *adverbial phrases*, and are, chiefly, the following :

<i>di súbito</i> , suddenly ;	<i>ad un trátto</i> , at once ;
<i>di bóttö</i> , presently ;	<i>di rádo</i> , } seldom, rarely ;
<i>in un baléno</i> , in an instant ;	<i>di ráro</i> , }
<i>in un báter d' ócchio</i> , in the [twinkling of an eye ;	<i>infátti</i> , } in fact ;
	<i>difátti</i> , }

<i>póco fa</i> , a little while ago ;	<i>di gran lúnga</i> , by far ;
<i>fra póco</i> , in a short time ;	<i>a lúngo andáre</i> , in the long
<i>un pézzo fa</i> , some time ago ;	[run, in time ;
	<i>a piú potére</i> , with all one's
<i>délie vólte</i> , at times ;	[might ;
<i>all' improvviso</i> , unexpected-	<i>di mála vóglia</i> , unwillingly ;
	[ly ; <i>a un di préssó</i> , almost ;
<i>all' avvenire</i> , in future ;	<i>d allóra in quà</i> , since that
<i>a minúto</i> , in detail ;	[time ;
<i>di frésco</i> , newly ;	<i>d' óra innánzi</i> , henceforth ;
<i>di buón grádo</i> , willingly ;	<i>in quél méntre</i> , in or at that
<i>mío malgrádo</i> , against my	[time ;
	[will ; <i>di púnto in púnto</i> , exactly ;
<i>senza méno</i> , positively ;	<i>di púnto in biáncó</i> , point-
<i>quánto prima</i> , very soon ;	[blank ;
<i>a bello stúdio</i> , } designedly ;	<i>di quándo in quándo</i> , } now
<i>a bella pósta</i> , }	<i>di tráttó in tráttó</i> , } and
<i>a méno che</i> , unless ;	<i>di tánto in tánto</i> , } then ;
<i>da per tútto</i> , } every	<i>il piú per lo piú</i> , on the
<i>per ógni dóve</i> , } where ;	[whole, at the utmost.

CHAPTER VIII.

Of Prepositions.

Prepositions of Place.

<i>a</i> , to ;	<i>círca</i> , } about ;
<i>da</i> , from ;	<i>incírca</i> , }
<i>di</i> , of, from ;	<i>cóntro</i> , }
<i>in</i> , in ;	<i>cóntra</i> , } against ;
<i>su</i> , upon ;	<i>incóntro</i> , }
<i>per</i> , through or by ;	<i>incóntra</i> , }
<i>lúngo</i> , along ;	<i>préssó</i> , } near ;
<i>áppo</i> , at or with ;	<i>vicíno</i> , }
<i>vérso</i> , towards ;	<i>appréssó</i> , }
<i>óltre</i> , beyond ;	

<i>lúngi,</i>	} far from ;	<i>diétro,</i>	} behind ;
<i>lontáno,</i>		<i>didiétro,</i>	
<i>sópra,</i>	} upon or above ;	<i>rimpétto,</i>	} opposite ;
<i>disópra,</i>		<i>dirimpétto,</i>	
<i>sótto,</i>	} under ;	<i>attórno,</i>	} around ;
<i>disótto,</i>		<i>dattórno,</i>	
<i>éntro,</i>	} in or within ;	<i>accánto,</i>	} aside ;
<i>déntro,</i>		<i>alláto,</i>	
<i>fuóri,</i>	} out of, without ;	<i>addóssó,</i>	upon ;
<i>fuóra,</i>		<i>appétto,</i>	} against ;
<i>difuóri,</i>		<i>a frónte,</i>	
<i>difuóra,</i>		<i>appiéde,</i>	} at the foot of ;
<i>avánti,</i>		<i>a piè,</i>	
<i>davánti,</i>		<i>di là,</i>	thence ;
<i>innánzi,</i>	<i>di quà,</i>	hence.	
<i>dinánzi,</i>	} before ;		

Of Time.

<i>di,</i>	of ;	<i>sino,</i>	} till, until ;
<i>da,</i>	from ;	<i>fino,</i>	
<i>infra,</i>	in or in about ;	<i>insino,</i>	
<i>verso,</i>	towards ;	<i>infino,</i>	
<i>círca,</i>	} about ;	<i>príma,</i>	first ;
<i>incírca,</i>		<i>ánzi,</i>	before ;
<i>intórno,</i>		<i>dópo,</i>	afterward ;
		<i>duránte,</i>	during.

Of Order.

<i>avánti,</i>	before ;	<i>príma,</i>	first ;
<i>diétro,</i>	after ;	<i>dópo,</i>	afterwards.

Of Union.

<i>con,</i>	with ;	<i>infra,</i>	} amongst ;
<i>fra,</i>	} amongst ;	<i>intra,</i>	
<i>tra,</i>		<i>in mézzo,</i>	

Of Separation.

<i>fuóri,</i>	}	out of, without;	<i>sálvo,</i>	}	except.
<i>infuóri,</i>			<i>eccétto,</i>		
<i>lúngi,</i>		far from;	<i>tránne,</i>		
<i>sénza,</i>		w.thout;			

Of Opposition.

<i>cóntra,</i>	against;	<i>nonostánte,</i>	notwithstanding;
<i>óltre,</i>	besides;	<i>malgrádo,</i>	in spite of.
<i>lúngi,</i>	far from;		

Of End.

<i>per,</i>	for;	<i>riguardánte,</i>	regarding;
<i>vérso,</i>	toward;	<i>concernénte,</i>	concerning.

Of Cause.

<i>a,</i>	to;	<i>a cáusa,</i>	on account of;
<i>da,</i>	from or by;	<i>attéso,</i>	whereas;
<i>per,</i>	for;	<i>mediánte,</i>	through.

Of Specification.

<i>di,</i>	of;	<i>giústa,</i>	}	according to.
<i>a,</i>	to;	<i>secóndo,</i>		
<i>da,</i>	from or by;	<i>confórme,</i>		
<i>in,</i>	in;			

Some of these prepositions are the same as the adverbs; as, *sópra, sótto, práma, dópo, déntro, difuóri,* &c. which, when they are followed by a noun, a pronoun, or a verb which they govern, are always prepositions, but otherwise are adverbs.

CHAPTER IX.

Of Conjunctions.

Copulative Conjunctions.

<i>e</i> , and ;	<i>ancóra</i> ,	} also, even.
<i>nè</i> and, either.	<i>eziandio</i> ,	
<i>anco</i> ,	<i>altresi</i> ,	
<i>anche</i> ,	} also, even ;	

Negative.

<i>no</i> , no, not ;	<i>neppure</i> ,	} neither.
<i>non già</i> , not, not at all ;	<i>nemméno</i> ,	
<i>anzi</i> , on the contrary,	<i>tampóco</i> ,	
<i>nè</i> , nor ;	<i>nettampóco</i> ,	

Augmentative or Adjunctive.

<i>di più</i> , moreover ;	<i>oltrecchè</i> ,	} besides this ;
<i>in óltre</i> ,	<i>oltracciò</i> ,	
<i>innóltre</i> ,	<i>ancóra</i> ,	} again,
<i>d'altrónde</i> ,	<i>altresi</i> ,	

Disjunctive.

<i>o</i> ,	} or ;	<i>ovvéro</i> ,	} or ;
<i>ossia</i> ,		<i>overaménte</i> ,	
<i>oppúre</i> ,		<i>nè</i> , nor, neither.	

Adversative.

<i>quantúnque</i> ,	} although ;	<i>comechè</i> ,	} as,
<i>sebbéne</i> ,		<i>avvegnachè</i> ,	
<i>benchè</i> ,		<i>ancorachè</i> ,	} even that ;
<i>contuttochè</i> ,		<i>ancorchè</i> ,	

<p><i>più,</i> <i>nondiméno,</i> <i>nulladiméno,</i> <i>tuttavía,</i> <i>tuttavólta,</i> <i>tuttafáta,</i> <i>contútto ciò,</i> <i>ciò non ostante,</i> <i>ciò non di méno,</i> <i>ciò non per tánto,</i> <i>non per quésto,</i></p>	}	<p>still, yet, however, nevertheless, notwithstanding, for all that.</p>
--	---	--

Elective.

<p><i>prima,</i> <i>ánzi,</i> <i>innánzi,</i> <i>méglío,</i> <i>piuttósto,</i> <i>più présto,</i></p>	}	<p>first, rather, sooner;</p>	<p><i>piucchè,</i> } rather, <i>anzichè,</i> } sooner ; <i>ánzi che no,</i> } rather than [not ; <i>più volentieri,</i> } more wil- [lingly.</p>
---	---	---------------------------------------	--

Exceptive.

<p><i>sálvo,</i> <i>eccétto,</i> <i>trátto,</i> <i>tránne,</i> <i>fuóri,</i> <i>infuóri,</i> <i>fuór di,</i> <i>fuorchè,</i> <i>inpoi,</i></p>	}	<p>save, saving, except ;</p>	<p><i>se non,</i> } if not, <i>se non che,</i> } otherwise, } but ; <i>ma,</i> } <i>però,</i> } but.</p>
--	---	---------------------------------------	--

Conclusive.

<p><i>perchè,</i> } because ; <i>poichè,</i> } because, since, } as, after ; <i>posciachè,</i> } since, after ;</p>	<p><i>però,</i> } but ; <i>perocchè,</i> } because ; <i>imperocchè,</i> }</p>
---	---

<i>perciò</i> ,	{ therefore, for which reason ;	<i>sicchè</i> ,	{ so, thus,
<i>perciocchè</i> ,	{ because,	<i>così che</i> ,	{ wherefore ;
<i>imperciocchè</i> ,	{ whereas,	<i>tal che</i> ,	{ so, so that ;
<i>conciossiachè</i> ,	{ as,	<i>tánto che</i> ,	
<i>avvegnachè</i> ,	{ since ;	<i>intantochè</i> ,	{ so that ;
<i>dúnque</i> ,	{ then ;	<i>di maniera che</i> ,	
<i>adúnque</i> ,	{ then ;	<i>di módo che</i> ,	{ in short,
<i>ónde</i> ,	{ wherefore,	<i>in guisa che</i> ,	
<i>laónde</i> ,	{ whereupon ;	<i>in sómma</i> ,	{ in conclusion ;
<i>il perchè</i> ,	{ therefore, for which reason ;	<i>in fine</i> ,	
<i>per lo chè</i> ,		<i>per fine</i> ,	{ otherwise ;
<i>per tánto</i> ,		<i>del résto</i> ,	
<i>per la quál cosa</i> ,		<i>óra</i> ,	{ now.

Explicative.

<i>cóme</i> , as, like ;	{ that is to say.
<i>costi</i> , so, thus ;	
<i>ciòè</i> , that is ;	
	<i>ciòè a díre</i> ,
	<i>vále a díre</i> ,
	<i>quánto a díre</i> ,

Causal.

<i>chè</i> ,	{ for, because ;	<i>cóme</i> ,	{ as,
<i>perchè</i> ,		<i>comechè</i> ,	
<i>che perciò</i> ,	{ wherefore ;	<i>per lo che</i> ,	{ for the which ;
<i>acciò</i> ,	{ to the end that ;	<i>per la quál cosa</i> ,	{ for which
<i>acciocchè</i> ,		[thing ;	
<i>affine</i> ,		<i>per la quál causa</i> ,	{ for which
<i>affinchè</i> ,		[cause.	

Conditiona!.

<i>se</i> , if ;	<i>ógni vólta che</i> ,	{ any time	
<i>se mái</i> , if, if ever ;	<i>tutte le vólte che</i> ,	{ that ;	
<i>pósto che</i> ,	{ supposing that,	<i>con pátto che</i> ,	{ on condi-
<i>dáto che</i> ,	{ granting that ;	<i>con quésto però</i> ,	{ tion ;
<i>ancorchè</i> , even, although ;	<i>quándo</i> , when ;	<i>quand' ánche</i> ,	{ even when,
<i>a méno che</i> , unless ;	<i>fórse</i> , perhaps.	[whenever.	
<i>purchè</i> , provided ;			

Periodic.

<i>prima che</i> , before that ;	<i>mentre che</i> , whilst that ;	} as soon as.
<i>dopo che</i> , after that ;	<i>tosto che</i> ,	
<i>tanto che</i> , so that ;	<i>subito che</i> ,	

CHAPTER X.

Of Interjections.

Interjections of Grief.

<i>ah!</i>	} ah!
<i>ahi!</i>	
<i>aimè!</i>	} alas!
<i>oimè!</i>	

<i>lásso!</i>	} alas!
<i>me lásso!</i>	
<i>ahi lásso!</i>	} poor me!
<i>póvero me!</i>	
<i>mísero me!</i>	

wretched me!

Of Joy.

ah! ah!
ah ah! ah ah!

oh! oh! [joy!
O che allegrézza! oh what

Of Desire.

deh! ah!
púre! yet!

oh se! oh if! [you!
di grázia! pray! I desire

Of Aversion.

<i>oibò!</i>	} fye! fye upon!
<i>eh via!</i>	

Of Anger.

<i>doh!</i>	} oh!
<i>oh!</i>	

puh! pooh!
via via! away!

Of Fear.

oh! oh!
oimè! alas!

sta! still!
oh Dío! oh!

Of Indignation or Contempt.

oh! oh!
eh! eh!
deh! pshaw!

puh! pooh!
vía! away!
oibò! fough!

Of Approbation.

st! yes!
cost! } yes certainly!
già! }
béne! well!

buóno! good!
brávo! bravo!
víva! } well done!
eh víva! }

Of Admiration.

oh! oh!
O! O!
cóme! why!

cápperi! } ay!
cáppita! } heyday!
poífáre! } marry!

Of Surprise.

oh! oh!

ah! ah!

Of Encouragement.

su! }
orsù! } come!
vía! }

ánimo! } courage!
corággio! } cheer up!
fáte cuóre! }

Of Warning.

badáte! } have care!
státe all' értta! } mind!

piáno! } slowly!
adágio! }
férmati olà! hold hold!

Of Beseeching.

<i>deh!</i> pray!	<i>per amór del Ciélo!</i> for the
<i>mercè!</i> prithee!	love of Heaven! for Hea-
<i>non più!</i> enough! [sake!	ven's sake!
<i>per carità!</i> for charity's	

Of Calling.

<i>O!</i> ho!	<i>éhi!</i>	} ho hey! ho there!
<i>chi è dî là!</i> who is there!	<i>olà!</i>	

Of Silencing.

<i>zi!</i> st!	<i>silénzio!</i> silence!
<i>zitto!</i> hush!	<i>tacéte!</i> peace there!
<i>chéto!</i> be still!	<i>básta!</i> enough!

The interjections *lásso!* *póvero!* *mísero!* are mere adjectives, and when used by a female take the feminine termination; as,

<i>lássa!</i>	} alas!	<i>póvera me!</i> poor me!
<i>me lássa!</i>		<i>mísera me!</i> wretched me!
<i>áhi lássa!</i>		

PART IV.

OF THE

ITALIAN SYNTAX.

CHAPTER I.

Of the Order of Words.

WORDS may be arranged, either in the natural order of the ideas which they are used to convey, or in a somewhat different order, in which euphony or emphasis is consulted. Hence there are two different constructions, the one called *simple* or *direct*, the other *inverse* or *indirect*.

In the *simple* construction, the subjective is put in the first place and always before the verb. It is generally a noun or a pronoun, an adjective or a verb used as a noun, or a phrase ; as,

Césare <i>vínse</i> ,	<i>Cæsar</i> conquered ;
io <i>scrívo</i> ,	<i>I</i> write ;
il bello [la bellézza] <i>piáce</i> ,	<i>the beautiful</i> [beauty] <i>pleas-</i>
	<i>es</i> ;
lo studiáre [lo stúdio] è <i>útile</i> ,	<i>to study</i> [study] is useful ;
il morir per la pátria è <i>cósa</i>	<i>to die for one's country</i> is a
<i>dólce</i> ,	<i>pleasant thing</i> .

The subjective is followed by the verb, and the verb by the objective, which is generally a noun, a pronoun, an adjective, a verb, or a phrase ; as,

Césare <i>vínse</i> Pompéo,	<i>Cæsar</i> conquered <i>Pompey</i> ;
io <i>ámo</i> te,	<i>I</i> love <i>thee</i> ;

ciascuno ammira il bello, every one admires *beauty* ;
quèi volendo morire, he wishing *to die* ;
e significò il fatto come stà- and declared *the fact as it*
va, *was.*

If the subjective or the objective consists of more than one noun, pronoun, &c. these are all of them put in their respective places with the conjunctions or other particles which accompany them ; as,

Piétro e Páolo léggono, *Peter and Paul read ;*
uccisero uómini ed animáli, they killed both *men and beasts.*

The adjectives belonging to the subjective or the objective are put immediately after them ; as,

gli scolári morigeráti e di- *the well-behaved and diligent*
ligénti stúdíano, *scholars study ;*
il maéstro prémia gli scolári *the master rewards the at-*
atténti e studiósi, *tentive and studious*
scholars.

If the subjective or objective has an article, this article is put always before ; as,

il sóle lúce, *the sun shines ;*
áma la virtù, love [*the*] *virtue.*

The adverb is placed immediately after the verb which it qualifies ; as,

Giovánni áma ardentemén- *John loves glory ardently.*
te la glória,

The preposition is always put before the word which it governs ; as,

vicíno a casa, near [*to*] *home ;*
veníte a vedére, come *to see.*

The conjunction is placed between those parts of a sentence which it connects ; as,

mángio e bévo, I eat *and* drink ;
biáncó o néro, white *or* black.

The interjection has no fixed place, because it has no intrinsic relation to other words ; it is, however, generally put at the beginning of the phrase ; as,
ahi ! traditóri, vói siéte ah ! traitors you are dead ;
 oimè ! *che díci tu ?* ^{[mórti,} *alas !* what do you say ?

The relative is always put after the antecedent ; as,
l'uómo, il quále adóra Iddío, the man, *who* adores God.

With regard to the *inverse* construction no certain rules can be established, it varying according to the taste and ear of the speaker or writer.

It can only be said, that in this construction the subjective may be placed likewise after the verb ; as,

già s' éra ribelláta l' armáta *the army of Misena* had already revolted ;
Miséna,
présemi allóra la mía scórta then *my guide* took me by the hand.
per máno,

The objective may be put before the verb ; as,
argénto e óro non áno, they have neither *silver* nor *gold* ;
umána cósá è avér compas- it is a *humane thing* to take
síone dégli afflítti, pity on the afflicted.

The adjective may be put before the substantive which it qualifies ; as,

col súo prezíoso sángue, with his *precious* blood ;
quantúnque fósse tóndo e although he was a man
gróssó uómo, *burly* and *fat*.

The adverb may be placed before the verb which it qualifies ; as,

focosaménte amáva, he loved *ardently* ;
non è áltro che súa víta va- it is nothing else but to
naménte menáre. pass one's life *in vain*.

These inversions are very common in Italian, and add great expression and beauty to the phrase, but in using them we must always consult euphony. A learner ought never to avail himself of such liberties until, by a competent knowledge of the language, and a long perusal of the classics, he be able to appreciate their value and to make use of them with propriety.

In the phrases which are commonly called *imperative*, the subjective, which, according to the simple construction, ought to be put before the verb, as in English, is always put after it in Italian; as,

<i>quinci estimino i sécoli chi</i>	let future times judge from
<i>fu Ottóne,</i>	this who Otto was;
<i>riábbiasi Vitéllio il fratél-</i>	let <i>Vitellius</i> take his broth-
<i>lo,</i>	er.

CHAPTER II.

Of Concordance or Agreement of Words.

ADJECTIVES agree with their nouns in gender and number; as,

<i>uómo virtuóso,</i>	virtuous man;
<i>vicénde umáne,</i>	human vicissitudes.

When two or more nouns singular of the same gender come together the adjectives belonging to them are put in the plural; as,

<i>Páolo e Giovánni sóno buóni,</i>	<i>Paul and John are good;</i>
<i>María e Francésca sóno sá-</i>	<i>Mary and Frances are</i>
<i>vie,</i>	<i>wise.</i>

If the nouns are of different genders or different numbers, the adjectives are put in the plural, agreeing with a masculine noun understood ; as,

<i>Páolo e María</i> [quésti indivídui] <i>sóno amábili,</i>	Paul and Mary [<i>these individuals</i>] are <i>amiable</i> ;
<i>le figliuóle e i figliuóli</i> [quésti soggétti] <i>sóno dócili,</i>	the daughters and the sons [<i>these persons</i>] are <i>docile</i> ;
<i>il figlio di Piétro e le soréle di lui</i> <i>sóno partíti,</i>	the son of Peter and his sisters have <i>gone</i> .

When, in a phrase in which there are several nouns, the adjective is affirmed or denied alternatively, this adjective always agrees with the nearest noun ; as,

<i>un tízzo, úna scintílla, è páce d' appicár fuóco,</i>	a brand, a <i>spark</i> might set fire ;
<i>Piétro o María è mórtá,</i>	Peter or <i>Mary</i> is <i>dead</i> ;
<i>nè Francésca, nè Giovánni non è partíto,</i>	neither <i>Frances</i> nor <i>John</i> has <i>gone</i> ;
<i>avéva la máno e il náso mózzo,</i>	he had his hand and his <i>nose cut off</i> ;
<i>il cappélló e la berétta [róssa,</i>	the <i>red</i> hat and <i>cap</i> .

And when there are in a phrase several names of inanimate beings which are not separated from their adjective by a verb, this adjective agrees likewise with the nearest noun ; as,

<i>l'affétto e la pietà matérna,</i>	the <i>maternal</i> affection and [piety ;
<i>la riverénza e l'amóre filiale,</i>	the <i>filial</i> respect and <i>love</i> ;
<i>égli è d' úna piacevolézza e d' un brío maraviglióso,</i>	he is of a <i>wonderful</i> agreeableness, and <i>vivacity</i> .

The verb agrees with the subjective, either expressed or understood, both in number and person; as,

io ti consolerò, *I will console thee;*
[églino] vògliono la mórte, *[they] wish for death.*

When the subjective consists of several nouns and the action can be performed either successively or alternately, the verb always agrees with the last noun; as,

gli ócchi vòstri ch' amóre, e your eyes which love, and
il ciélo onóra, *heaven honours;*
quál fortuna o destino what fortune or *destiny*
quaggiù ti ména? *brings you here below?*
non Cinna, non Sílla signo- neither Cinna nor *Sylla rul-*
reggiò lungaménte, *ed long.*

If there are different subjectives which concur simultaneously to perform the action of the verb, the verb agrees with a noun plural understood; as,

consíglío e ragióne [quéste advice and reason [*these*
dúe cóse] *condúcono la* *two things*] *lead to victo-*
vittória, *ry;*
se Virgilio ed Oméro [qué- if Virgil and Homer [*these*
sti dúe soggétti] *avésser* *two persons*] *had seen...*,
vísto...

Calandrino, Brúno, e Buf- Calandrino, Bruno, and Buf-
falmácco vánno cercándo *falmacco go in search of*
di trovár l' elitrópia, *the heliotrope.*

When the subjectives are of two or more different persons; as, *io e tu*, I and thou; *tu ed égli*, thou and he; &c. the verb agrees with a personal pronoun in the plural understood. If one of the subjectives is *io*, I, the pronoun understood with which the verb will agree, is *noi*, we; if one of the subjectives is *tu*, and *io* is not one of the others, the pronoun understood is *vói*, you; and if the subjectives are all of the third person, the pronoun understood is *églino* or *élleno*, they. Thus,

tu dall' ún láto e Stécchi *thou on one side and Stéc-*
dall' áltro [vói] mi verré- *chi on the other [you]*
te sostenéndo, *will support me;*

égli e élla [éssi] cenárono *he and she [they] supped on*
un póco di cárne saláta, *a little salt beef ;*
 tu, égli, Síro, e ío [nói] pi- *thou, he, Syrus, and I [we]*
 glierémo úno per. . . . *will take one for. . . .*

Sometimes one of the subjectives is a word which comprehends the others in its signification ; as, *áltro, áltri, nessúno*, &c. and then the verb agrees directly with this word ; as,

nè pióggia cadúta, nè ácqua *neither rain, nor the water*
gittáta, nè áltro umidóre *which they threw on it,*
glí spegnéva, *nor any other wet thing*
extinguished them ;

ío cêla farò dipíngere [la *I will cause it [the gener-*
cortesia] di maníera, che *osity] to be painted there*
mái nè vói nè áltro mi po- *in such a manner, that*
trà piú díre ch' ío non *neither you nor any other*
P ábbia vedúta, *one will be able to tell me*
any longer, that I have
not seen it ;

gránda, rícchi, píccoli, e pó- *great, small, rich, and poor,*
veri, nessúno pud sottrár- *no one can escape death.*
si álla móрте,

If the subjective is formed of two nouns dependent on each other, the one being a part of the other, the verb agrees with the whole and not with the part ; as,

la maggiór parte dégli uó- *the greater part of men are*
mini sóno ambiziósi, *ambitious ;*
ciascúno di nói sa che de' *every one of us knows that*
suói sóno la maggiór pár- *the greater part of our*
te mórti, *friends are dead :*

sometimes the noun expressing the whole is understood ; as,

la maggiór partíta [di indi- *the greater part [of the indi-*
vidui] fúron mórti e ta- *viduals] were killed and*
glíati, *cut to pieces.*

When the subjective is a collective noun, which, though composed of several individuals, still presents to the mind the idea of singleness, the verb is always put in the singular ; as,

dimmi perchè quel pópolo è tell me why *that people is*
st' émpio, so impious ;
comandò che tútta la súa fa- he commanded that *all his*
míglia gli venísse daván- *family should appear* be-
ti, fore him.

Participles, when they stand as adjectives, agree with nouns in gender and number.

When the participle is joined to the verb *éssere*, to be, it has always the force of an adjective qualifying the subject of the proposition, and consequently it agrees with the subjective in gender and number ; as,

mólti fúrono quest' áнно ac- many were accused this
cusáti, year ;
nè érano le fálte de' Vitelliá- the faults of Vitellius' troops
ni puníte, ma ben pagá- were not punished, but
te, well paid.

When it is joined to the verb *avére*, and this verb is used in the signification of *possedére*, to possess, *tenére*, to hold, and not as an auxiliary, the participle has the force of an adjective qualifying the object of the proposition, and agrees with the object we in gender and number ; as,

égli à tagliáta la máno, or, he has [possesses, holds] his
à [possiede, tiéne] la má- hand cut off ;
no tagliáta,
ò trováta úna scátola, or, ò I have [possess, hold] a box
[possiedo, téngo] úna scá- found [by me].
tola [da me] trováta,

But if the verb *avére* is used as an auxiliary, and not in the meaning of *possedére*, *tenére*, the participle then is a mere form of the verb ; as, *à tagliáta*, he has cut off ; *ò trováto*, I have found ; for *tagliò*, he cut off ; *trovái*, I found ; and consequently it remains invariable ; as,

la scátola che ò trováto, or, the box which I found ;
la scátola che ío trovái,
la máno che à tagliáto, or, the hand which he cut off.
la máno che éi tagliò,

When the participle is preceded by one of the conjunctive pronouns *lo*, *la*, *li*, *gli*, *le*, *ne*, it takes always the terminations analogous to the object represented by them ; as,

Alla medésima méle à dette she herself has told this, or
te, or, *mi à dette* quéste these things, to me ;
cóse,
dícéva avér-la éssò uccísa, or, he said that he had killed
avére éssò uccísa la dón- her, or the lady, himself.
na,

The relative *quále*, with the article, agrees with its antecedent ; but without the article, and denoting an absolute quality or likeness, it agrees with what follows ; as,

quél cuóre, il quále la líéta that heart, which propitious
fortúna non avéa potúto fortune had not been able
aprire, to open ;
vídési di tal monéta pagáto he saw himself paid in that
quáli érano státe, le der- money for which the pro-
ráte vendúte, visions had been sold.

Possessive pronouns agree with the thing possessed and not with the possessor ; as,

ed ella abbracciáudo il súo and she embracing her in-
bambino, fant ;
 [églí] *assestáte le súe bisó-* [he] having settled his af-
gne partí per Róma, fairs departed for Rome.

When the noun *béstia*, beast, fool ; is applied as an epithet to a man, the adjective or participle belonging to it agrees with the word *uómo* understood ; as,

quélla béstia [d' uómo] éra that fool [*of a man*] was
pur dispósto . . . , nevertheless *disposed . . .*

The pronoun *vói*, you, used instead of *tu*, thou, in addressing a person, takes the adjective in the singular, agreeing with *signóre*, Sir, or *signóra*, Madam, either expressed or understood, and has the verb in the plural ; as,
vói [signóre or signóra] you [Sir or Madam] are
siéte mólto civile, very *civil.*

The adjective *mézzo*, half, when preceded by a feminine noun qualified by a numeral adjective, remains invariable ; as,

tóglí úna líbbra e mézzo-di take *a pound* and *a half* of
castróne, mutton.

The adjective *tútto*, all, preceded by the preposition *per*, through, and followed by a feminine noun is invariable ; as,

sóno státo per tútto Róma, I have been all over Rome ;
è cérco per tútto la cása, I have looked all over the
 [house.]

CHAPTER III.

Of the Use of the Article.

A NOUN may be used either in an *indeterminate*, or in a *determinate* sense.

A noun may be used in a determinate sense in three different manners :

First, when it is employed to designate a kind of objects ; as, *gli uómini*, [the] men : the noun *uómini* being taken in its largest signification, the article *gli* shows that all the individuals composing the human kind are here spoken of.

Secondly, when the noun is employed to designate a class of objects of any kind ; as, *gli uómini virtuósi*, [the] virtuous men : here the noun *uómini*, expresses only a certain number of men, its signification being limited by the adjective *virtuósi*.

Thirdly, when it is employed to designate one object of a kind or of a class ; as, *l' uómo di cui vi párlo*, the man of whom I speak to you ; the noun *uómo* being taken individually, and the article used to express the man who is spoken of.

When a noun is used in a determinate sense the article is always employed ; but when used in an indeterminate sense, the article is never employed ; as,

<i>gli uómini di quèsta térra si</i>	the people of this land will
<i>leveránno a rumóre,</i>	rise in an uproar ;
<i>per crudeltà délla dónna</i>	by the cruelty of the be-
<i>amáta,</i>	loved lady :

<i>quál che tu sii, od ómbra, od</i>	whoever you are, whether
<i>uómo céрто,</i>	a shadow, or a real man ;
<i>rispósemi : Non uómo, uómo</i>	he answered me : I am not
<i>già fúu,</i>	a man, I was formerly a
	man.

The article is generally suppressed when the nouns are sufficiently determined by the nature of the thing, or by the circumstances of the case. Thus,

<i>gli dirébbe novélla,</i>	for <i>gli</i>	he would tell him [the]
<i>dirébbe le novélla,</i>		news ;
<i>così caválli, e uómini fur</i>		thus [the] horses and [the]
<i>víttime . . . ,</i>		men were victims . . . ;
<i>con átti e lusínghhe . . . ,</i>		with gestures and flatteries . . . ;
<i>quávi sospíri, piánti, ed ál-</i>		there sighs, tears, and
<i>tri guáì risonávan...</i>		groans echoed . . . ;
<i>sóni, cánti, vestír, giuóchi,</i>		music, singing, dresses,
<i>vivánde, quánto può cubér</i>		games, viands, all that
<i>pensár, può chiéder bócca,</i>		the heart can think of, and all that the palate can desire.

When we wish to designate a portion or a number of the objects in a class, this may be done in four different ways :

First, by naming only the objects of the class ; as, *ò buón víno,* or *buóni víni,* I have good wine, or good wines.

Secondly, by using the preposition *di,* of ; as, *ò di buón víno,* or *di buóni víni,* I have [of] good wine, or [of] good wines.

Thirdly, by using the same preposition and the article ; as, *ò del buón víno,* or *dei buóni víni,* I have [of] good wine, or [of] good wines.

Fourthly, by using the indefinite pronoun *úno,* a, an, in the singular ; *alcúni,* some, in the plural ; as, *ò un buón víno,* or *alcúni buóni víni,* I have a good wine or some good wines. Thus,

<i>gránda béstie áнно ne' lóro</i>	they have great beasts in
<i>bóschì,</i>	their woods ;
<i>avévan da lui di buóne me-</i>	they had from him [of]
<i>rénde,</i>	good luncheons ;
<i>égli ci sóno déi ben leggiá-</i>	there are some very hand-
<i>dri che m' ámano,</i>	some ones, who love me.

fatti prestamente chiamare [having] caused some friends
alcuni amici, to be immediately called.

In the comparison of equality, as we are obliged commonly to express the objects in an indeterminate sense, neither the preposition, the article, nor the indefinite pronoun is used ; as,

non come uomini, ma quasi they died not like men, but
come bestie morivano, like beasts ;
pareva che ruggisse come he appeared to roar like a
leone, e belasse come pec- lion, and to bleat like a
cora, e ragghiassse come sheep, and to bray like
asino, an ass.

When several nouns come together before or after the verb, and one of them takes the article, this article is repeated before every noun in the sentence ; as,

la debolezza, il timore, la weakness, fear, melanco-
malinconia, e l'ignoranza ly, and ignorance are the
sono le sorgenti della sources of superstition ;
superstizione,
i Romani erano assuefatti the Romans were inured to
al disagio, alla fatica, ed hardship, fatigue, and a
alla vita militare, military life :

But this rule is not without exceptions, since many instances are found in the classics in which the article is not so rigorously repeated ; as,

amore e l'ira del re, the love and anger of the
king ;
crepata per lo lungo, e per burst lengthwise and
traverso, breadthwise ;
pregandolo che gli piacesse praying him that he would
di dover con questa sua be pleased to come with
figliuola, e col figliuolo this daughter of his, and
venire . . . , with his son . . . ;
non è egli perciò, che alcuna for all this it is not the case,
volta fra folti boschi, that sometimes in the thick

*e tra le rigide Alpi, e
disérte spelónche non fá-
cia le sùe fórze sentire,* woods, and among the rug-
ged Alps, and in lonely
caves, it does not make us
feel its power.

These are the principles which regulate the use of the article in Italian; there are however some nouns which appear to require or to reject the article independently of these rules.

All adjectives used as nouns, require the article before them; as,
il bello, il buono, the beautiful, the good;
il sublime, l' eccellente, the sublime, the excellent.

All verbs used as nouns require the article; as,
e 'l sùo parlàre, e 'l bel viso both her conversation and
mi piàcquer sì . . . , her beautiful countenance
pleased me so . . . ;

la donna veggéndo che il the woman seeing that
pregàre non le valéva, ri- prayers were useless, had
córse al minacciàre. recourse to menaces.

Any other word, when used as a noun, requires the article; as,

il dove è già pensáto, I have already thought of
the where;
sarèi conténto di sapére il I should be happy to know
quándo, the when;
[còme potrémo nói?] Il còme [how can we?] I have al-
è io ben vedúto, ready seen the how;
del còme non ti cáglia, il do not trouble yourself a-
perchè ti dirò, bout the how, I will tell
you the why;
son certa del sì, I am certain of the affirma-
tive;
 ciascúno rispóse del no, every one answered in the
[negative.

The words *signóre*, Master ; *signóra*, Mistress or Madam ; when used before nouns denoting persons, take the article ; as,

<i>il signór Cárlo,</i>	Master Charles ;
<i>la signóra Terésa,</i>	Mistress Theresa ;
<i>il signór Dáti,</i>	Master Dati ;
<i>la signóra Spínola,</i>	Madam Spinola ;
<i>il signór avvocáto,</i>	Master lawyer ;
<i>la signóra marchésa,</i>	my lady Marchioness ;
<i>ò vedúto il signór . . . ,</i>	I have seen Master . . . ;
<i>P' ò dáto álla signóra . . . ,</i>	I gave it to Mistress or [Madam

These words also take the article when they are used in the signification of master or mistress of a thing ; as,

<i>il signóre [il signóre di</i>	the master [the master of this
<i>quésta cása] è uscíto,</i>	house] is gone out ;
<i>la signóra è occupáta,</i>	the mistress is engaged ;
<i>vóí quí siéte il signóre,</i>	you are the master here.

But, when *signóre*, *signóra*, are used as epithets in calling a person, they refuse the article ; as,

<i>signór Andréa,</i>	Master Andrew ;
<i>signóra Nina,</i>	Mistress Nina ;
<i>signór giúdice,</i>	Master judge ;
<i>signóra contéssa,</i>	my lady Countess ;
<i>Signóre, ascoltáte,</i>	Sir, listen.

They also refuse the article when used with the particles *sì*, yes ; *no*, no ; in an affirmative or negative phrase ; *sì*, *signóre*, yes, sir ; *no*, *signóra*, no, madam ; &c.

Quále, when a relative pronoun, always takes the article ; but when it is used as an adverb to express similitude, &c. always refuses it ; as,

<i>il quále esséndo venúto . . . ,</i>	who having come . . . ;
<i>e quále è quéi, che . . . ,</i>	and like him, who

The possessive pronouns *mío*, my or mine, *túo*, thy or thine, *suo*, his, her or hers, its, &c. when followed by a noun, either expressed or understood, always take the article; but when the noun precedes them they refuse it; as,

prendéte il mío [libro], take mine [*my book*];
il túo giardíno, thy garden:

quésta casa è súa, this house is his;
quéllo è il libro vóstro, that is your book.

When these pronouns are followed by a noun of quality, or kindred, and this noun is in the singular number, they refuse the article; but if the noun is in the plural, they always take it; as,

súa signoría, his lordship;
mío pádre, my father;
túo fratélllo, thy brother;
vóstra Santità; your Holiness:

le lóro signoríe or *le signo-* their lordships;
i miéi ávi, [*rie lóro*, my ancestors;
i tuóii fratélli, thy brothers;
le maestà lóro, their majesties.

Except when the pronouns are separated from the noun by an adjective placed between them, in which case they take the article; as, *al mío affezionatíssimo pádre*, to my very affectionate father; *la súa cara sorélla*, his or her dear sister. The pronoun *lóro*, their, never refuses it; as, *la lóro mádre*, their mother; *i lóro figliuóli*, their children; &c.

The ordinal numbers generally take the article; but they always refuse it when joined to a proper name; as,

io sóno il prímo, I am the first;
écco il secóndo, behold the second:

Luígi decimo-quárto, Louis the Fourteenth;
Leóne décimo, Leo the Tenth.

Names of kingdoms, provinces, mountains, and rivers, when they are considered with regard to their extent

take the article ; but when they are considered as single points or parts of the earth, they refuse it ; as,

<i>l' Itàlia è bélla,</i>	Italy is beautiful ;
<i>la Spàgna è spopolàta,</i>	Spain is depopulated ;
<i>à varcàto il Po,</i>	he has crossed the Po ;
<i>ò salìto il Vesúvio,</i>	I have ascended Vesuvius :
<i>stávi in Frància,</i>	thou wast in France ;
<i>viène d' Inghiltèrra,</i>	he comes from England ;
<i>è cadúto in A'rno,</i>	he fell into the Arno ;
<i>ò vísto E'tna,</i>	I have seen Etna.

Except *il Lázio*, [the] Latium, which always takes the article ; and *Ida*, *Ida* ; *O'ssa*, *Ossa*, which always refuse it.

Names of islands, cities, lakes, and seas are generally used without the article ; as,

<i>Málta,</i> Malta ;	<i>lágo di Gárda,</i> lake of Garda ;
<i>Corfù,</i> Corfu ;	<i>lágo di Cómo,</i> lake of Como ;
<i>Nápoli,</i> Naples ;	<i>mar Tirréno,</i> Tuscan sea ;
<i>Lóndra,</i> London ;	<i>mar Nèro,</i> Black sea.

Some names of islands ; as, *Sicília*, Sicily ; *Sardégna*, Sardinia ; *Córsica*, Corsica ; *E'lba*, Elba ; *Inghiltèrra*, England ; may be used with or without the article.

The names of those islands which are spoken of in the plural ; as, *le Baleári*, the Balearic islands ; *le Filippíne*, the Philippine islands ; &c. always take the article.

And the names of seas, when the word *mare* is omitted, require the article before them ; as, *il Mediterráneo*, the Mediterranean ; *l' Adriático*, the Adriatic ; *l' Atlántico*, the Atlantic ; *il Pacífico*, the Pacific.

Dío, God, and proper names of persons, when used in their full meaning, never take an article ; but when we limit their signification to designate a particular object, they always take the article ; as,

<i>Dío,</i> God ;	<i>il Dío délla guèrra,</i> the god [of the war ;
-------------------	--

<i>Apóllo</i> , Apollo ;	<i>l' Apóllo del Belvedére</i> , the [Apollo of Belvedere ;
<i>E'rcole</i> , Hercules ;	<i>l' E'rcole Farnése</i> , the Far- [nese Hercules.

Dio in the plural always takes the article ; *gli Déi*, the Gods.

Proper names also take the article when they are used to express persons familiarly or publicly known ; as,

<i>la Ninétta</i> ,	[the] Ninetta ;
<i>la Caterína</i> ,	[the] Catherine.

Or when they are preceded by a noun of quality, rank, or dignity, expressed or understood ; as,

<i>il poéta Dánte</i> ,	the poet Dante ;
<i>il cónte Ugolino</i> ,	[the] count Ugolino ;
<i>l' arcivéscovo Ruggiéri</i> ,	[the] archbishop Ruggieri.

<i>il [poéta] Tásso</i> ,	Tasso ;
<i>il [cónte] Borroméo</i> ,	[count] Borromeo ;
<i>il [cardinále] Mazzaríni</i> ,	[cardinal] Mazzarini.

But if proper names are preceded by one of the nouns, *Sére*, Sir ; *Messére*, Master ; *maéstro*, master ; *Dónno*, Don ; *Dónna*, Donna ; *Subra*, Sister ; *Fráte*, Friar or Brother ; *Sánto*, Saint ; they refuse the article : and the nouns *Pápa*, Pope ; *re*, king, before a proper noun, are better used without it ; as,

<i>Ser Brunétto</i> ,	Sir Brunetto ;
<i>Don Francésco</i> ,	Don Francis ;
<i>maéstro Giovánni</i> ,	Master John ;
<i>Suór María</i> ,	Sister Mary ;
<i>Frat' Albérto</i> ,	Brother Albert ;
<i>Sant' António</i> ,	Saint Antony ;
<i>re Cárlo</i> ,	King Charles ;
<i>Pápa Innocénzio</i> ,	Pope Innocent.

Finally, there are several expressions in Italian, in which the article is always suppressed ; as,

<i>avér fame</i> , to be hungry ;	<i>stáre in cása</i> , to be at
<i>avér cáldo</i> , to be hot ;	[home ;

<i>parlár Inglés</i> , to speak	<i>stáre in piázza . . .</i> , to live
[English ;	[in the square . . . ;
<i>parlár Francése</i> , to speak	<i>avére in máno</i> , to have at
[French ;	[hand ;
<i>dar mallevería</i> , to give se-	<i>menáre a spáso</i> , to take
[curity ;	[one to walk ;
<i>dáre órđine</i> , to give orders ;	<i>córrer ríschio</i> , to run a
<i>far testimoniánza</i> , to bear	[risk ;
[witness ;	<i>réndér cónto</i> , to give ac-
<i>far naufrágio</i> , to be ship-	[count ;
[wrecked :	<i>méttere in bócca</i> , to put into
<i>andáre a cása</i> , to go home ;	[one's mouth ;
<i>andáre a córte</i> , to go to	<i>tenér távola</i> , to give a din-
[court ;	[ner ;
<i>andáre a nózze</i> , to go to	<i>prestár féde</i> , to give credit.
[a wedding ;	

CHAPTER IV.

Of the Position of Adjectives.

Adjectives in Italian may, generally, be placed either before or after their nouns ; as,

<i>curiósá avventúra</i> or	}	a curious adventure ;
<i>avventúra curiósá,</i>		
<i>felíce succésso</i> , or	}	happy success ;
<i>succésso felice,</i>		
<i>nóbile aspétto</i> or	}	a noble countenance :
<i>aspétto nóbile,</i>		

there are however some adjectives which always follow their nouns, and others which always go before them ; as,

<i>uómo crudéle,</i>	a cruel man ;
<i>témpo fréddo,</i>	cold weather :
<i>buón páne,</i>	good bread ;
<i>béi fióri,</i>	beautiful flowers.

Adjectives that follow their Nouns.

The adjectives of *nations* ; as,

<i>un príncipe Románo,</i>	a Roman prince ;
<i>una dáma Inglés,</i>	an English lady ;
<i>l' idióma Spagnuolo,</i>	the Spanish idiom ;
<i>la letteratúra Italiána,</i>	the Italian literature.

Verbal adjectives ; as,

<i>vino cótto,</i>	burnt wine ;
<i>paróle finte,</i>	feigned words ;
<i>stráda battúta,</i>	beaten road ;
<i>passiúne predominánte,</i>	ruling passion.

Adjectives of *taste, smell, and hearing* : as,

<i>frútto dólce,</i>	sweet fruit ;
<i>érbe odorífere,</i>	odoriferous herbs ;
<i>vóce sonóra,</i>	sonorous voice ;
<i>pélle mórbida,</i>	soft skin.

Adjectives expressing *colours* ; as,

<i>páño nero,</i>	black cloth ;
<i>fazzolétto biáncó,</i>	a white handkerchief ;
<i>nástri giállí,</i>	yellow ribbons ;
<i>occhiáli vérdi,</i>	green spectacles.

Adjectives denoting *shape or form* ; as,

<i>távola rotónda,</i>	a round table ;
<i>spéccchio ovále,</i>	an oval looking-glass ;
<i>cámera lárga,</i>	a wide room ;
<i>vólta piána,</i>	a plane ceiling.

Various adjectives expressing *physical or mental qualities* ; as,

<i>una giòvane malaticcia,</i>	a sickly youth ;
<i>un uómo dótto,</i>	a learned man ;
<i>témpo piovóso,</i>	rainy weather ;
<i>ária salúbre,</i>	wholesome air.

Adjectives that may be used as nouns ; like *góbbo*, *un góbbo*, a hunchback ; *zóppo*, [*úno zóppo*, a cripple] ; *ciéco*, [*un ciéco*, a blind man] ; *guércio*, [*un guércio*, a squinting man] ; as,

<i>un uómo góbbo</i> ,	a hunchback ;
<i>cavállo zóppo</i> ,	a lame horse ;
<i>uccélllo ciéco</i> ,	a blind bird ;
<i>úna dónna guércia</i> ,	a squinting woman.

And, generally, the following adjectives :

<i>lúngo</i> ,	long ;
<i>córtto</i> ,	short ;
<i>pígro</i> ,	lazy ;
<i>néutro</i> ,	neuter ;
<i>intióro</i> ,	entire ;
<i>lánguido</i> ,	languid ;
<i>importúno</i> ,	importunate ;
<i>vizióso</i> ,	vicious ;
<i>virtuóso</i> ,	virtuous ;
<i>pauróso</i> ,	fearful ;
<i>singoláre</i> ,	singular ;
<i>particoláre</i> ,	particular ;
<i>generále</i> ,	general ;
<i>considerábile</i> ,	considerable :

but this rule is liable to exceptions.

Adjectives that go before their Nouns.

The numeral adjectives, both *cardinal* and *ordinal* ; as,

<i>cinque libre</i> ,	five pounds ;
<i>vénti ánni</i> ,	twenty years ;
<i>il prímo monárca</i> ,	the first monarch ;
<i>la secónda persóna</i> ,	the second person.

Except when the ordinal numeral adjectives are joined to a proper name, or are used in speaking of the divisions of a work ; in which case they are put after the nouns ; as, *Cárlo quínte*,

Charles the Fifth; *Bonifacio Ottavo*, Boniface the Eighth: *libro primo*, book first; *capítulo terzo*, chapter third; *página nona*, ninth page; *línea décima*, tenth line: *canto secondo*, second canto, *stánza decimalérsa*, thirteenth stanza; *terzina quárta*, fourth terzina; *verso undécimo*, eleventh verse. When, in speaking of books the article is used, we may also say, *il primo libro*, the first book, *la stánza ottáva*, the eleventh stanza; &c.

And, generally, the following adjectives :

<i>buóno</i> ,	good ;
<i>cattivo</i> ,	bad ;
<i>gránde</i> ,	great ;
<i>picciolo</i> ,	small ;
<i>béllo</i> ,	handsome, fine ;
<i>brútto</i> ,	ugly, bad ;
<i>ricco</i> ,	rich ;
<i>póvero</i> ,	poor :

but this rule is likewise liable to exceptions.

When two or more adjectives belong to the same noun, they are generally put after the noun ; as,

<i>una donna buóna e religiosá,</i>	a good and religious woman ;
<i>un uómo ricco, bello, e sávio,</i>	a rich, beautiful, and wise man.

Adjectives are always put after nouns, when the same adjective relates also to another noun following ; as,

<i>un giovane bello come un ángiolo,</i>	a youth as handsome as an angel.
--	----------------------------------

CHAPTER V.

Of the Use and the Position of Pronouns.

PERSONAL pronouns are generally put before the verb, but may also be placed after it; as,

égli avéva l' anéllo assái he held the ring very
cáro, dear;
éssi vi rúbano, they rob you:

nè vogl' ío passár sótto si- nor I wish to pass over in
lénzio, silence;
dímmi il perchè, diss' ío, tell me the reason, said I.

In the phrases commonly called *interrogative*, and in the *imperative*, they are always put after the verb; as,

la figliuóla conósei [tu] di dost thou know the daugh-
Cidíppe? ter of Cidippe?
abbiate [vói] compassióne take [ye] pity on the afflict-
dégli afflitti, ed;
vogliáte vói benedire . . . , may you be pleased to
 bless

These pronouns, in Italian, may be either expressed or understood, the verbs showing by their different terminations the person and number of the subject of the proposition; they ought however to be expressed before the *first* and *third* persons *singular* of the *imperfect* of the *indicative*, and the *first* and *second* persons *singular* of the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, to avoid a confusion of persons, the terminations of the verb in those instances being the same.

Conjunctive pronouns are, most commonly, put before the verb, but may also be placed after it. When before the verb, they are placed immediately after the personal pronoun, and when after, they are always joined to the verb; as,

ío ti favéllo, or favélloti, I speak to thee;
éi gli dicéva, or dicévagli, he said to him;

diédegli or gli diéde la súa benedizióne, he gave him his blessing.

When the verb is in the *infinitive*, in the *gerund*, in the *participle*, and in the *imperative* mood, the conjunctive pronouns are always put after the verb ; as,

<i>ricominciò a fàrgli i maggiór</i>	she began again to do him
<i>piacéri,</i>	the greatest kindnesses ;
<i>trovándosi égli úna vólta a</i>	he finding himself once in
<i>Parígi,</i>	Paris ;
<i>salutátolo, il domandò se</i>	after he had saluted him, he
<i>égli si sentísse niénte,</i>	asked him whether any
	thing ailed him ; [me.
<i>lasciami, non mi toccáre,</i>	let me alone, do not touch

But if the negative particle precedes the verb in the infinitive or in the imperative, the conjunctive pronouns must be put before the verb ; as,

<i>non mi parláre,</i>	do not speak to me ;
<i>non ti ricórda ?</i>	dost thou not remember ?

If the verb is in the gerund, the pronoun may be put either before or after ; as, *non gli scrivéndo*, or *non iscrivéndogli*, not writing to him ; but if in the participle, always after.

The conjunctive pronoun *loro*, to them, them, is always put after the verb ; as,

<i>e mandò loro dicéndo . . .</i>	, and sent to them saying . . . ;
<i>non diè loro che, . . .</i>	, he did not give them but . . . ;
<i>vedúti loro in sì póvera condizióne . . .</i>	having seen them in so miserable a condition

When *loro* is in the objective, the pronouns *gli* or *li* for the masculine gender, and *le* for the feminine, generally take its place.

If the conjunctive pronouns occur with the adverb *écco*, they are always put after the adverb, and form with it a single word ; as,

<i>éccomi,</i>	here I am ;
<i>éccola,</i>	here she is ;
<i>éccoci,</i>	here we are.

When the conjunctive pronouns are followed by the indefinite pronoun *si*, this is always put after, and sometimes joined to them ; as,

mi si vuol däre a credere, they wish to make me believe ;
glí or le si dice, they tell him or her ;
attributsceçisi, they attribute it to us.

Conjunctive pronouns are used instead of personal pronouns, when the phrase contains but one personal pronoun in the objective or in the relation of attribution ; but if the phrase consists of two or more propositions in each of which is found a personal pronoun in the objective or in the relation of attribution, the conjunctive pronouns are not used, and the personal pronouns retain their place ; as,

to ti ringrázio délla túa offerta, I thank you for your offer ;
che vi páre di quésta villa ? what do you think of this villa ?

quélle medésime bellézze, che présero e vínser te, áнно di pói présó e vinto me, the same beauties which captivated and conquered you, did afterwards captivate and conquer me ;

rubò a me úna figliuóla, e a vói la sorélla, he took away a daughter from me, and from you a sister.

The relative particles *ne*, of him, her, or it ; of them ; *ci*, *vi*, here, hither, there, thither, &c. follow the same rules as the conjunctive pronouns. They may be put either before or after the verb, except when the verb is in the infinitive, in the gerund, in the participle, and in the imperative, in which cases they are always put after it ; as,

égli mi piáce di parlárne, it pleases me to speak of it ;
núno veggéndone, seeing no one of them ;

ma púre uscítone, s' inco- notwithstanding having
minciò a maravigliàre, come out of it, he began
to wonder ;

gettónne i fondaménti il re King Tarquin laid the founda-
Tarquínio, tions of it :

io son del tútto dispósto ad I am entirely disposed to
andárvì, go there ;
ma pur niénte perdéndoci, still losing nothing here ;
il cuóco póstovi tútta l' arte, the cook having employed
there *or* in it all his art ;
fáteci dipíngere la cortesia, cause generosity to be paint-
ed there.

If the relative particles *ci, vi,* occur with one of the conjunctive pronouns *mi, ti, ci, vi,* usage strictly requires that the particles should be placed after the pronouns ; but they are put sometimes before them, particularly if euphony demands it ; as,

égli mi ci fa entràre, he makes me enter there ;
io ti ci védo sémpre, I see you here always :

io vi ti porrò úna tavolú- I shall place for you there
cia, a small table ;
dirò che vi ci ábbia fáttá I will say that he has caus-
veníre per denári, ed you to come here for
money.

When the particles *ci, vi,* occur with the pronouns, *lo, la, li, gli, le,* they are generally put before the pronouns and form with them a single word ; but they may be placed also after them, separately ; as,

ingégnati di ritenércelo, contrive to keep him
there ;
ringraziándo Iddío che con- thanking God that he had
dóttó vel' avéva, conducted him there :

nélla sua cámara il mise, e she put him in her room, and
déntro il vi serrò, there she locked him in.

Possessive pronouns may be placed either before or after the objects possessed ; as,

<i>una mia vicina,</i>	one of my neighbours ;
<i>mia madre misera,</i>	my unhappy mother ;
<i>mél disse il pádre mio</i>	my father told me that I
<i>ch' io mi guardássi . . . ,</i>	should take care . . . ;
<i>l' amico mio e non della ven-</i>	a friend, not of my fortune,
<i>túra,</i>	but of myself.

To avoid the ambiguity, which in many instances would arise in Italian, as it does very often arise in English, from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns, *suo, sua, suoi, sue*, his, her, or hers ; when these pronouns do not relate to the subject of the proposition, they are changed for the personal pronouns *di lui, di lei, di loro*, of him, of her, of them. Thus in the English phrase—John loves Peter and his children—if the pronoun *his* relates to *John*, the subject of the proposition, it is rendered in Italian by *i suoi* ; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i suoi figliuóli*, John loves Peter and his children [John's children] ; but if *his* does not relate to *John*, the subject of the proposition, but to *Peter*, then it is rendered by *i di lui* ; as, *Giovánni áma Piétro e i di lui figliuóli*, John loves Peter and his children [Peter's children]. The English language in similar cases labours under an ambiguity, which in Italian is always avoided by the use of different pronouns ; as,

<i>égli lo mandò ad uccidere</i>	he sent him to kill his
<i>suo pádre,</i>	father [the father of him
	who sent] ;
<i>mia madre áma egualménte</i>	my mother loves equally
<i>sua sorélla e i figli di lei,</i>	her sister and her chil-
	dren [the children of her
	sister].

CHAPTER VI.

Of the Change of Person.

IN Italian, as well as in English, in addressing persons, instead of using the pronoun *tu*, thou, in the second person singular, for a show of civility, we say *vói*, you, with the verb in the plural; while all the other words, such as, adjectives, participles, &c. agreeing with the subjective, remain in the singular; as, *vói saréte rispettáto*, you will be respected. This demonstration of politeness has been carried still further in Italian, since instead of saying, as in English, *vói il comandáte*, you command it; we often make use of the words *Vóstra Signoría*, your lordship or ladyship, (generally contracted into *Vossignoría*, and often written *V. S.*) to designate an individual whether of the masculine or of the feminine gender, with the verb in the third person singular; as, *vóstra signoría (vossignoría or V. S.) il cománda*, your lordship or ladyship commands it. To avoid the too frequent repetition of *vóstra signoría* it becomes necessary to substitute a pronoun, and *vóstra signoría* being feminine and in the third person, *élla*, she, takes its place; all the words agreeing with it taking the feminine gender, whether the person signified by it is feminine or masculine; as, *élla sará rispettáta*, you will be respected; *il comándo di léi*, or *il di léi comándo è stato esguító*, your command has been executed.

In addressing in Italian, then, in the most civil way, the pronoun *vói* is changed into *élla*; the verb is put in the third person singular; the adjectives and participles take the feminine termination; and the conjunctive pronoun *vi* is accordingly changed into *le*, *la*, to her, her, whether the subject is of the masculine or feminine gender. Thus, instead of saying *vói cantáte*, we say *élla cánta*, you sing;

to vi dico,
to vi védo,

to le dico,
to la védo,

I tell you;
I see you;

<i>io l'ò ricevúto da vói,</i>	<i>io l'ò ricevúto da léi,</i>	I received it from you;
<i>véne ringrázio,</i>	<i>ne la ringrázio,</i>	I thank you for it;
<i>véne darò,</i>	<i>gliéne darò,</i>	I will give you some of it;
<i>vélo dirò,</i>	<i>gliélo dirò,</i>	I will tell it to you;
<i>vói siéte rispettáto,</i>	<i>élla è rispettáta,</i>	you are respected:

as in the following examples :

<i>s'è compiaciúta di scrívermi,</i>	you have been pleased to write to me;
<i>io ne la ringrázio infinitaménte,</i>	I thank you for it infinitely;
<i>se ciò fósse véro, o quánta invídia le porteréi!</i>	were that true, O what envy I should bear you!
<i>che téme élla? téme di vederla e di léggerla? non téma, no,</i>	what do you fear? do you fear to see it and to read it? do not fear, no;
<i>la cása ov' élla abitáva, mi par tuttavía abitáta da léi medésima, quándo pásso per quélla stráda,</i>	the house where you lived, appears to me to be occupied still by you when I pass through that street;
<i>ónde, con ringranziárta cordialissimaménte dell' úno e dell' áltro, e piú ancóra del biásimo che délla lóde, crédo io dárte ben auténtica próva délla mia stíma, e non pérdere il drítto a conservármí la súa,</i>	therefore, thanking you very cordially both for the one and the other, and yet more for the blame than for the praise, I think I give you an authentic proof of my esteem, and do not lose the right of preserving yours.

When the pronoun *élla* is used in addressing a person the adjectives agree with it in gender; except those of *nations*, which always agree with the noun signified; as, *élla mi sémbra un Inglés*, you [Sir] seem to me an Englishman; *élleno* or *le signorie lóro saráno cërto Italiáni*, you [gentlemen] are certainly Italians.

CHAPTER VII.

Of the Use of the Moods and Tenses of Verbs.

Of the Use of the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods.

There are some conjunctions, in Italian, which require the verb to be in the indicative mood; as,

<i>súbito che,</i>	as soon as;	<i>intánto che,</i>	as long as,
<i>poichè,</i>	} since, seeing that;	<i>mentre che,</i>	whilst;
<i>atteso che,</i>		<i>forse che,</i>	perhaps;
<i>dí maniera che,</i>	} so that, in so much	<i>eccetto che,</i>	except that,
<i>talménte che,</i>		<i>se non che,</i>	unless, but, saye that;
<i>si ben che,</i>	} that;	<i>secondo che,</i>	according as;
<i>perchè,</i>		<i>oltre che,</i>	besides that;
<i>a cáusa che,</i>	} because;	<i>dopo che,</i>	since, after that.
<i>tánto che,</i>			

Others require it in the subjunctive; as,

<i>affinchè,</i>	} in order	<i>avánti che,</i>	} before that;
<i>acciocchè,</i>		<i>prima che,</i>	
<i>benchè,</i>	} that;	<i>a ménò che,</i>	except, unless;
<i>ancorchè,</i>		<i>in cáso che,</i>	in case that;
<i>sénza che,</i>	without;	<i>con pátto che,</i>	} on condition
<i>per téma che,</i>	for fear, lest;	<i>a condizióne</i>	
<i>dáto che,</i>	} suppose,	<i>che, purchè,</i>	} that; provided that;
<i>suppósto che,</i>		} grant that;	

With the conjunction *che*, not joined to any other word, the verb is sometimes used in the indicative, and sometimes in the subjunctive.

It is used in the indicative after all verbs that signify *telling, presaging, perceiving, seeing, knowing, understanding, judging*; after all verbs implying *affirmation*; and after all verbs used in such a manner as to denote *certainty* in the action spoken of; as,

vi dico ch' è móрто, I tell you that he is dead;

<i>crédo fermaménte ch' egli è ricco,</i>	I firmly believe that he is rich ;
<i>egli sta béne, sálvo che gli duóle il cápo,</i>	he is well, except that he has the headach ;
<i>so che egli è cost, ma non ne compréndo la ragióne,</i>	I know that it is so, but do not understand the reason ;
<i>mandárono ambasciadóri i quáli [or che] consultárono Sócrate.</i>	they sent ambassadors, who consulted Socrates.

The verb is used in the conjunctive after all verbs that signify *asking, entreating, suspecting, wondering, rejoicing, grudging, supposing, hoping, imagining, conjecturing, intimating*; after all verbs expressive of *desire, will, command, permission, prohibition, fear, belief*; after all verbs implying *doubt, ignorance, uncertainty, or future action*; and after all verbs used with a negative; as,

<i>che vuoi tu ch' io sappia ?</i>	what do you think that I know ?
<i>per amor di te ti prégo [che] téne rimángghi,</i>	for your sake I beseech you to desist ;
<i>si créde che sia il piú ricco preláto délla chiésa di Dio.</i>	it is thought he is the richest prelate in the Church ;
<i>commandò ad úno de' súbi famigliári che nélla sua casa il menásse,</i>	he ordered óne of his domestics to bring him into his house.

Some of these verbs, however, appear sometimes to be used indiscriminately, either in the indicative or in the conjunctive mood; but it is not so in fact, for when they are so used, each mood expresses the action in a different manner; as may be seen in the following examples,

<i>voglio sposáre úna dóнна che mi piáce,</i>	I wish to marry a woman who pleases me ;
<i>voglio sposáre úna dóнна che mi piáccia,</i>	I wish to marry a woman who may please me :

vádo cercándo úno che mi I am seeking one, who wish-
vuól béne, es me well ;
vádo cercándo úno che mi I am seeking one, who
vógliá béne, may wish me well :

se mi domándi qual è la ca- if you ask me what is the
gíone del mío dolóre, cause of my grief ;
se mi domándi qual sia la if you ask me what may
cagíone del mío dolóre, be the cause of my grief :

in which, in the first instance, being certain of the existence of the action expressed, we use the indicative; and in the second we use the conjunctive, because the existence of the action is not certain, but doubted or desired.

After *sembráre, parére, bisognáre*, or any other unipersonal verb, the conjunctive is always used ; as,
mi sembráva che avésse vó- he appeared as if he had a
glia di ridere, wish to laugh ;
parévami che élla fósse piú she appeared to me to be
che la néve biánca, whiter than snow ;
bisogna che vói partiáte do- you must go away to-mor-
máni, row.

The verb is also used in the conjunctive after the relative pronoun *che*, following a comparative or a superlative ; as,

bélla quant' áltra dónna as handsome as any other
[che] fósse mái in Fi- lady in Florence ever
renze, was ;
è la miglióre ópera che sia it is the best work which
compársa, ever appeared.

And after the relative *quále*, not used in an interrogative manner ; as,

úna párté quále volésse ne he might govern such a part,
reggerébbe, as he should wish ;

bisogna fare scelta de' mi- one must make a choice of
glióri scrittóri, e da qué- the best writers, and learn
sti conscere qual úso far from them how to make
si débba délle vóci, use of words.

Of the Use of the Imperfect, Perfect-definite, and Perfect-indefinite.

The preterite of English verbs answers to the *imperfect* as well as to the *perfect-definite* and *perfect-indefinite*. In Italian these three tenses are rendered in three different forms; *I loved*, for instance, may be rendered by *io amáva*, *io amái*, or *io ò amáto*; but these forms are not indifferently used.

We make use of the first, the *imperfect*, when the action of which we speak was present in respect to another action past at the same time; as,

cantáva quándo vói veníste, I was singing when you
came;
érano a távola quándo nói they were at table when
entrámmo, we entered.

The imperfect is also used when we speak of an action continued or repeated several times; as,

sedéva apprésso di me, she was sitting by me;
per quésto a Nápoli méne for this I was coming to
ventva, Naples;
quándo io éra giòvine, an- when I was young, I went
dáva a cáccia, a hunting.

Finally we use the same tenses in speaking of the qualities of persons who are no more; as,

éra bel parlatóre, he was a fine speaker;
Neróne éra un uómo crude- Nero was a very cruel
kssimo, man.

The *perfect-definite* is used to denote an action done in a period of time completely past; as,

fui gravemente ammalato I was dangerously sick last
l'anno scorso, year;
poichè a morte mi sentii fe- after I found myself mor-
rìto, tally wounded;
avvenne che il re di Francia it happened that the king
mori, ed in suo luogo fu of France died, and his
coronato il figliuolo, son was crowned in his
 stead.

The *perfect-indefinite* is used to express an action done in a period of time not specified, or if specified, not completely past.

è perduto mille ghinee al he has lost a thousand guin-
giuoco, eas in gaming;
è ricevuto molte visite in I have received many visits
questi ultimi giorni, during these last days;
è partito oggi, he has set out to-day.

Of the Tenses of the Dependent Verbs in a Compound Sentence.

When, in a compound sentence, the principal verb is in the *present* of the *indicative*, or the *future*, the dependent verb must be in the *present* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the present or future time; and in the *perfect* of the *conjunctive*, if we mean to imply the past; as,

bisogna or bisognerà che sia he must be more attentive;
più esatto,
basta che gli abbia dato it is sufficient that she has
una risposta, answered him.

When the principal verb is in the *imperfect* or the *perfect-definite* of the *indicative*, the dependent verb is generally put in the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive*, when we mean

to express the present with respect to the principal verb ; as,

<i>credéva che fósse partito</i>	I thought he was gone into
<i>per la campágná,</i>	the country ;
<i>temè che accadáesse quálche</i>	he feared that some mis-
<i>disgrázia,</i>	fortune would happen ;
<i>à avúto dúe maríti prima</i>	she had two husbands before
<i>che sposásse il príncipe,</i>	she married the prince.

When the dependent verb expresses an action which may be done at all times, it may be put either in the *imperfect* or the *present* of the *conjunctive*, although the principal verb be in the perfect-indefinite of the indicative ; as,

<i>Iddio ci à dato la ragióne</i>	God gave us reason in or-
<i>affinchè ci distinguámo,</i>	der that we might distin-
<i>or ci distinguéssimo, dá-</i>	guish ourselves from ani-
<i>gli animáti,</i>	mals.

In suppositive or conditional phrases, the imperfect of the indicative in English—*had, was* or *were*, is rendered in Italian by the *imperfect* of the *conjunctive* ; as,

<i>se io avéssi quésti denári,</i>	if I had this money, I would
<i>tégli presteréi inconta-</i>	lend it to you immedi-
<i>nente,</i>	ately ;
<i>chi starébbe méglío di me,</i>	who would be more happy
<i>se quélli denári fóssér</i>	than I, if that money was
<i>miéi ?</i>	mine ?

Of the Use of certain Tenses of the Indicative for some other Tenses of the same Mood ; and of the Use of the Infinitive for certain Tenses of the Indicative, and for the Conjunctive and Imperative moods.

The present of the indicative is sometimes used for the future ; as,

<i>che óra è ? [for sarà ?]</i>	what o'clock is it ?
<i>dománi è fésta,</i>	to-morrow is a holyday ;

she farái tu, se élla il díce what will you do, if she
á' fratèlli? tells it to her brothers?
se to infra ótto giòrni non if I do not cure you in
vi guarísco, fátemi bru- eight days, have me burnt.
giàre,

The perfect-definite may be used for the present, or for the perfect-indefinite; as,

or che avésti [for che ái], che now what ails you, that you
tu fái cotál viso, make such a face;
Anichíno gittò un gran so- Anichino gave a deep sigh.
spíro. La dóнна dísse: The woman said: What
Che avésti, Anichíno? ails you, Anichino?
ónde fósti tu [for séi stato where have you been this
tu] stamáne? non so óve morning? I know not
to mi fúí, where I have been;
scegliésti?—O scélto.— have you chosen?—I have
Emón?—Mórte—L' á- —Emón?—Death—You
vrái, shall have it.

The *infinitive* may be used for the third person singular of the present and of the imperfect of the indicative, and their compounds, depending on another verb of the same mood; as,

conóscó lui éssere. [for che I know that he is a wicked
égli è] un malvágio uómo, man;
dícéva lui éssere pérfido e she said he was perfidious
víle, and vile;
égli s' accórse [for si éra ac- he had found out, that the
córto] l' abáte avér man- abbot had eaten dry
giáto fáve, sécche, beans;
pensò costúí dovér ésser tále he thought that this man was
quále la malvágità de' such as the wickedness of
Borgognóni il richiedéa, the Burgundians required.

The infinitive may likewise be used for the third person singular of the present and of the imperfect of the conjunctive, and their compounds; as,

crédo lui ésser [for che égli I believe that he is rich;
sía] rícco,

<i>dicevano lui ésser morto,</i>	they said that he was dead ;
<i>ella credendo lui ésser [for</i>	she believing that he was
<i>che égli fosse] Gisippo,</i>	Gisippo, answered yes ;
<i>rispose di sí,</i>	
<i>se égli crede la república</i>	if he thinks that the republic
<i>avér bisogno che i senató-</i>	lic needs that the senators
<i>ri parlino libero . . . ,</i>	should speak freely

Finally the infinitive is used for the second person singular of the imperative mood when preceded by the negative particle *non* ; as,

<i>non fare strépito,</i>	do not make a noise ;
<i>non ti lusingáre,</i>	do not flatter thyself ;
<i>ciò non temér,</i>	do not fear that ;
<i>non mi toccare, ribáldo;</i>	do not touch me, rascal.

Of the Mode of Expressing the English Present Participle in Italian.

The English present participle may be expressed in Italian :

First, by the gerund of the corresponding verb ; as,

<i>avéndo il re ordináto,</i>	the king having ordered ;
<i>appiccándo il fuoco per</i>	setting fire to every
<i>ógni luógo . . . ,</i>	place . . . ;

Secondly, by the relative pronoun *che* and a tense of the indicative mood ; as,

<i>li ò incontráto che corréva-</i>	I met them riding post ;
<i>no la pósta,</i>	
<i>passáto che fu, or dópo che</i>	that day having passed ;
<i>fu passáto, quel giórno ;</i>	

Thirdly, by a preposition and the verb in the infinitive ; as,

<i>finíto di scrívere,</i>	having done writing ;
<i>quándo cominciò a cantáre,</i>	having commenced singing.

When the English present participle has before it a preposition, such as *of, from, with, on, in, for, without,*

before, after, it is always rendered in Italian by the corresponding verb in the infinitive with a preposition.

If the participle is preceded by the prepositions, *of, from, with*, they are expressed in Italian by the preposition *di*, attended by the infinitive ; as,

<i>ò avúto il piacére di vedér-</i>	I had the pleasure of seeing
<i>la,</i>	her ;
<i>élla m' impedisce di fárlo,</i>	she prevents me from do-
	ing it ;
<i>sóno conténto d' avére un</i>	I am content with having a
<i>amíco,</i>	friend.

The preposition *on*, before the participle, may be expressed by the prepositions *di, in, or su* ; as,

<i>égli si vánta d' avér la ló-</i>	he values himself on being
<i>ro conoscénza,</i>	acquainted with them ;
<i>nel partíre, or sul partíre,</i>	on my departure I recol-
<i>mi sovvenne di vói,</i>	lected you.

The preposition *in* is rendered by *a* or *in* ; as,

<i>aiutátemi a far ciò,</i>	assist me in doing that ;
<i>nel venír qui ò incontráto</i>	in coming here I met John.
<i>Giovánni,</i>	

The preposition *for* is expressed by *per* ; as,

<i>sóno státi impiccáti per a-</i>	they have been hanged for
<i>vér rubbáto,</i>	having robbed.

The prepositions *without, before, after*, are literally translated by *sénza, prima di, dópo* ; as,

<i>élla béve il tè sénza pórvì lo</i>	you drink tea without put-
<i>zúcchero,</i>	ting sugar in it ;
<i>le farò úna visita prima di</i>	I will pay you a visit be-
<i>partíre,</i>	fore setting out ;
<i>dópo avér détto quéstó,</i>	after having said thís, he
<i>sen' andò,</i>	went away.

If the participle is preceded by the preposition *by*, this preposition is generally omitted in Italian, and the participle rendered by the gerund of the corresponding verb ; as,

gli scolári impáranó le ré- scholars learn the rules of
gole di úna língua stu- a language by studying
diándole, them.

But if we wish to express the preposition, then the verb must be put in the infinitive, and *by* rendered by *con* or *col* ; as,

il divíno Giúlio rintuzzò la the divine Julius checked
sedizióne del súo esército the sedition of his army.
col dir sólo : Ah Quirítí ! by only saying : Ah Ro-
[mans !

Remarks on the Use of certain Italian Verbs as compared with the English.

There are in most languages many verbs, which are used with an idiomatic turn very different from their proper signification.

The verbs *veníre*, and *volére*, for instance, do not always answer to the English verbs, *to come*, and *to be willing* ; but the former is sometimes used instead of the verb *éssere*, to be ; and the latter, being preceded by the particles *ci*, *vi*, and unipersonally employed, has the same meaning as the verb *bisognáre*, must, or to be necessary ; as,

mi vién détto così, I am told so ;
il che veníva consideráto which was considered very
mólto importánte, important :

ci vuól paziénza, we must have patience ;
vi vorrà del témpo, time is necessary.

The verb *dovére* is expressed in English by the verb *to owe*, when it means *to be a debtor*, and by the verb *to be*

obliged, when it signifies duty or the necessity of doing an action ; it is also used instead of the verb *bisognare*, in the signification of *must* ; as,

<i>e' gli dovèva trecènto fiorini,</i>	he owed him three hundred florins ;
<i>dovrà sèmpre venire a un tal partito,</i>	she will still be obliged to come to this point ;
<i>dèvo andàr fuòri, se vòglio quálche còsa,</i>	I must go out, if I want anything.

The English verb *to be*, used in the sense of *to be one's turn, business, or duty*, is rendered in Italian by the verb *toccare* in the signification of *to belong* ; as,

<i>tócça a me a giuocàre,</i>	is it for me to play ;
<i>tócça a lui a léggere,</i>	it is for him to read ;
<i>tocçava a lei a dirlo,</i>	it was for her to tell it.

The verb *to think*, used in English in the sense of *to believe* or *to suppose*, is translated into Italian by the verb *credere*, and when in the sense of *to reflect* or *meditate*, by the verb *pensare*.

The verb *to know*, is translated by the verb *sapere*, when intellectual knowledge is meant, and by the verb *conoscere*, when personal knowledge, derived from the evidence of one of our senses, is intended.

CHAPTER VIII.

Of the Use of certain Prepositions.

Of the Prepositions di, a, da.

The preposition *di*, of, is generally used to express the idea of possession or of extraction ; as,

<i>e con il denàro di lui il pagò,</i>	and paid him with his own money ;
--	-----------------------------------

dátole un pèzzo di cárne saláta, la mandò con Dìo, having given to her a piece of salt meat, bid her God speed ;
la státua di mármo, o di lé-gno, o di metállo, rimása per memòria d' alcùn valénte úomo, the statue of marble, of wood, or of metal, remaining there in memory of some great man.

The preposition *a*, to, is used to express the idea of attribution or of tendency of action ; as,

al témpo dell' imperadóre Federigo prímo, in the time of the emperor Frederic the First ;
séne fuggírono a Rodi, they fled to Rhodes ;
a vói non vi sarébbe onóre che 'l vóstro lignággio andásse a povertáte. it would not be honourable to you that your lineage should become poor.

The preposition *da*, from, is used to express the idea of derivation ; as,

l' úna vién del séme di Pan, one is a descendant from Pan, the other from Alcides ;
l' áltra d' Alcíde,
da Parigi a Génova tornándo, returning from Paris to Genoa ;
crédesi che la marína da Réggio a Gaéta sia quá-si la piú dilettévole páрте d' Itália, it is believed that the sea-coast from Reggio to Gaeta is almost the pleasantest part of Italy.

These prepositions which express by themselves ideas so different from each other, appear sometimes to be used, in Italian indiscriminately ; we shall see however, that even in these instances their use is distinct, and invariable. In the following examples,

l'schia è un' isola assái vicina di Nápoli, Ischia is an island very near [to] Naples ;

*Io ò trováto úna giòvane
secóndo il cuór mío assái
préssò di què,* I have found very near [to]
here a girl to my liking ;
*érano úomini, e fémmine di
gróssò ingégno, e i piú di
táli servígi non usáti,* they were men and women
of common minds, and the
greater part not accus-
tomed to such a trade :

the preposition *di* appears to be used instead of the preposition *a*, but we shall be immediately convinced of the contrary, if we supply the words which in all these cases are suppressed by ellipsis ; as,

*Pschia è un' ísola assái vicí-
na [alla città] di Nápoli,* Ischia is an island very near
[to the city of] Naples ;
*Io ò trováto úna giòvane se-
cóndo il cuór mío assái
préssò [al luógo] di què,* I have found very near [to
the place of] here a girl
to my liking ;
*érano úomini, e fémmine di
gróssò ingégno, e i piú
[all' esercizio] di táli
servígi non usáti,* they were men and women
of common minds, and the
greater part not accus-
tomed to [the exercise of] such
a trade.

*Soppravvenúta cagíone a
Piétro di partírsi di Pa-
lérmo,* Peter having had occasion
to depart from Palermo ;
*il Guardastágo passáto di
quélla lánzia cádde, e pó-
co apprésso morì,* Guardastagno fell pierced
with that lance, and soon
after he died ;
*chiúnque di quèsti carbóni è
tóccho in ségno di cróce,
tútto quéllo ánno pud vi-
vere sicúro, che fuóco nol
toccherà,* whoever is marked with
these coals with the sign
of the cross, may live se-
cure that for all that year
he shall not be harmed
by fire :

in these examples the preposition *di* seems to be employed for the preposition *da*, but by supplying the el-

lipsis we find that *di* is used in its own meaning and that *da* has been suppressed; as,

<i>soppravvenúta cagíone a</i>	Peter having had occasion
<i>Piétro di partírsi [dálla</i>	to depart from [<i>the city</i>
<i>città] di Palérmo,</i>	<i>of]</i> Palermo;
<i>il Guardastáгно passáto</i>	Guardastagno fell pierced
<i>[con un cólpo or da un</i>	with [<i>a blow or by a</i>
<i>cólpo] di quèlla lánzia</i>	<i>blow of]</i> that lance . . . ;
<i>cádde . . . ,</i>	
<i>chiúnque [con úno] di què-</i>	whoever is marked with
<i>sti carbóni è tòcco, &c.</i>	<i>[one of]</i> these coals; &c.

<i>Po vi menerò da léi,</i>	I will conduct you to her;
<i>dal fráte partítosi, dálla</i>	having departed from the
<i>cása n' andò délla dón-</i>	friar's, he went to the
<i>na,</i>	house of the lady;
<i>dal cardínal Moróne, appé-</i>	all the ambassadors went
<i>na arriváto, andárono</i>	to the cardinal Morone's,
<i>tútti gli ambasciadóri,</i>	when he had hardly ar-
	rived;

in these examples the word *davánti* is suppressed, and the preposition *da*, far from being used for the preposition *a*, as it might appear, is employed in its own meaning; as,

<i>io vi menerò [davánti] da</i>	I will conduct you to [or
<i>léi,</i>	<i>before]</i> her;
<i>dal fráte partítosi [daván-</i>	having departed from the
<i>ti] dálla cása n' andò,</i>	friar's he went to [or <i>be-</i>
<i>délla dónna,</i>	<i>fore]</i> the house of the
	lady;
<i>[davánti] dal cardínal Mo-</i>	all the ambassadors went to
<i>róne andárono tútti gli</i>	[or <i>before]</i> the cardinal
<i>ambasciadóri,</i>	Morone.

There are some other phrases in the language in which usage appears to have sanctioned the employment of one of these prepositions rather than the others; but these it is difficult to subject to any positive rule. We give here a collection of phrases, which, consulted by learners, may direct them to make a proper use of these prepositions in similar instances by analogy.

Phrases in which the Preposition di is used.

<i>práti semináti di amaránti,</i>	meadows sown with amarantus ;
<i>cámpi spārsi di violé,</i>	fields sprinkled with violets ;
<i>montágne copérte di pámpano;</i>	mountains covered with vine-leaves ;
<i>un uómo opprésso, or penetráto, di dolóre,</i>	a man oppressed, or penetrated, with grief ;
<i>éssere annoiáto di úno,</i>	to be tired of one ;
<i>égli è occupáto di móde, d' inézie,</i>	he is occupied with fashions, with trifles ;
<i>sóno stáncó or stúfo di viággi, déi piacéri, di vivere,</i>	I am weary or tired of travelling, of pleasures, of living ;
<i>élla éra ornáta, or fregiáta, di ricchi vestiméti,</i>	she was adorned with rich garments ;
<i>la frónte coronáta d' allori,</i>	the forehead crowned with laurels ;
<i>úna città cíntra di múra,</i>	a city surrounded by walls ;
<i>ísolé circondáte di úgli,</i>	islands surrounded by linden-trees,
<i>un luógo chiúso d' álberi,</i>	a place encircled by trees ;
<i>fu trováto mórtó di fúme,</i>	he was found dead from hunger ;
<i>vívère di limósina,</i>	to live on alms ;
<i>mórir di fúme, di séte,</i>	to die of hunger, of thirst ;
<i>ridere or piángere d' allegrezza,</i>	to laugh or to weep for joy ;
<i>piángere di dolóre, d' íra,</i>	to weep for grief, for anger ;

<i>morr</i> di trent' ánni,	to die at thirty years of age ;
<i>ésser</i> di guárdia,	to be on guard ;
<i>ésser</i> di nóia,	to be tiresome ;
<i>puníre</i> di mórte,	to punish with death ;
<i>temére</i> d' úno,	to have fear of one ;
<i>cadér</i> di máno,	to fall from one's hand ;
<i>uscír</i> di ménte, di cápo, di bócca,	to slip out of one's mind, head, mouth ;
<i>scappár</i> di máno, di bócca,	to escape from one's hand, mouth ;
<i>levare</i> , <i>trárre</i> , <i>caváre</i> di tésta, di bócca, di díto, di cubre,	to take out of one's head, mouth, finger, heart ;
<i>sapére</i> di gramática, di matemátiche, di política,	to know grammar, mathematics, politics.

Phrases in which the Preposition a is used.

<i>a máni chiúse,</i>	with closed hands ;
<i>a bócca apérta,</i>	with open mouth ;
<i>a chióme sciólte,</i>	with dishevelled hair ;
<i>a suon di cétra, di trómbe, di tambúro,</i>	at the sound of a lyre, of trumpets, of a drum ;
<i>a rómor d' ármi,</i>	with the noise of arms ;
<i>orológio a mólla,</i>	a watch ;
<i>scála a lumáca,</i>	a winding stair-case ;
<i>sála a manziúre,</i>	a dining-room ;
<i>cámara a dormíre,</i>	a bed-chamber ;
<i>cammináre a cercárlo,</i>	to walk to find him ;
<i>véndere a péso,</i>	to sell by weight ;
<i>andáre a spásso, a dipórto,</i>	to go to take a walk ;
<i>andare a génio,</i>	to suit one's taste ;
<i>éssere a piédi, a caválo,</i>	to be on foot, on horseback ;
<i>giuocáre a pálla, a scácchi, al bigliárdo, álle dáme,</i>	to play at ball, at chess, at billiards, at draughts ;
<i>éssere a tiro di sússo, di moschétto, di cannone,</i>	to be at a stone's throw, within a musket shot, a cannon shot ;

<i>andáre a véla,</i>	to sail ;
<i>andáre a rúba,</i>	to pillage ;
<i>andáre a grádo,</i>	to be agreeable ;
<i>veníre a nóia,</i>	to be tiresome ;
<i>parláre a giúbco,</i>	to jest ;
<i>tórre ad úno,</i>	to take away from one ;
<i>imparáre, sapére a ménte,</i>	to learn, to know by heart ;
<i>avére, tenére a ménte,</i>	to have, to hold in mind ;
<i>fáre a sténto, a péna,</i>	to do hardly, scarcely, with difficulty ;
<i>moríre a migliáia,</i>	to die by thousands ;
<i>cadére a torrénti,</i>	to fall in torrents ;
<i>tagliáre a fétte, a pézzi,</i>	to cut in slices, in pieces ;
<i>andáre a gálla, a fónido,</i>	to go adrift, to the bottom ;
<i>béllo a vedére,</i>	beautiful to see ;
<i>cáro or gráto ad udíre,</i>	pleasant to hear.

Phrases in which the Preposition da is used.

<i>occupáto dal piacére,</i>	occupied by pleasure ;
<i>commóssó da pietá,</i>	moved by pity ;
<i>penetráto da dolóre,</i>	penetrated by grief ;
<i>oppréssó da nemíci,</i>	oppressed by enemies ;
<i>fastidíto da úno,</i>	troubled by any one ;
<i>feríto da úna saétta,</i>	wounded by an arrow ;
<i>stáncó da viággi,</i>	fatigued by travelling ;
<i>cínto da córda,</i>	girded with a rope ;
<i>passáto da úna pálla,</i>	pierced by a bullet ;
<i>puníto da Dío,</i>	punished by God ;
<i>astenérsi da úna cósa or da</i> <i>fáre úna cósa,</i>	to abstain from doing a thing ;
<i>distornáre, disviáre úno da</i> <i>una cósa,</i>	to divert one from doing a thing ;
<i>ritirársi da cánto,</i>	to step aside ;
<i>éssere, stáre da un láto,</i>	to be, to stand aside ;
<i>andáre, fuggíre da úna</i> <i>párte, [párte,</i>	to go, to fly in any direc- tion ;
<i>entráre da un láto, da úna</i>	to enter by any way ;

<i>udire da un lato, da una parte,</i>	to hear from any side ;
<i>inclinare da un lato, da una parte,</i>	to incline to any side ;
<i>voltarsi, or voltare una cosa da un lato, da una parte,</i>	to turn one's self, or turn a thing to any side ;
<i>volversi, or volgere gli occhi da un lato, da una parte,</i>	to turn one's self, or to turn one's eyes to any side ;
<i>parlare da parte mia, vostra,</i>	to speak in my name, in your name ;
<i>andate da parte mia, loro,</i>	to go in my name, in their name ;
<i>dire da sua parte, da parte del principe,</i>	to tell on his part, on the part of the prince.

Phrases in which, by using the Preposition di for da or the Preposition da for di, the meaning of the expression is altered.

<i>io non voglio niente di voi,</i>	I wish nothing of yours ;
<i>io non voglio niente da voi,</i>	I wish nothing from you :
<i>non ricevo niente di lui,</i>	I receive nothing of his ;
<i>non ricevo niente da lui,</i>	I receive nothing from him ;
<i>che à tu saputo da loro ?</i>	what hast thou learnt from them ? [cerning them ?
<i>che à tu saputo di loro,</i>	what hast thou learnt con-
<i>che à inteso dire da lui ?</i>	what hast thou heard from him ? [cerning him ?
<i>che à inteso dire di lui ?</i>	what hast thou heard con-
<i>è ricevuto la lettera della moglie, ma non quella del marito,</i>	I have received the wife's letter, but not the husband's ;
<i>è ricevuto la lettera dalla moglie, e la cassa dal marito,</i>	I have received the letter from the wife, and the box from the husband.

In the phrases, *è tempo di ritirarsi, di scostarsi, di uscire, di desinare, &c.* and, *è tempo da ritirarsi, da scostarsi, da uscire, da desinare &c.*—*è cosa da ridere, da piangere, da osservare, da vendere, &c.* and, *è cosa di ridere, di piangere, di osservare, di vendere, &c.* though the preposition *di* appears to hold indifferently the place of *da*, and *da* that of *di*; yet the difference between the two expressions is very great, and the employment of the prepositions remarkably distinct.

E tempo di ritirarsi, signifies that is already time to retire, that it is the time when one ordinarily retires; but *è tempo da ritirarsi*, means that it is a time convenient, propitious to retire, that it is the time when one ought to take the opportunity to retire, the time when one must retire, and which having passed one cannot retire. *E cosa da vendere* means that it is a thing which is good to be sold, which ought to be sold; but *è cosa di vendere* signifies that it is a thing which is commonly offered for sale.

Of the way of rendering into Italian the English particle to before the infinitive of verbs.

The particle *to* prefixed to English verbs is used sometimes as a mere *sign*, and sometimes as a *preposition*. When it is a mere sign, it is never rendered in Italian, except when the infinitive is used as a noun, and then it is expressed by the articles *il, lo*. When *to* has the force of a preposition, it is rendered by the prepositions *di, a, per*.

When the infinitive of verbs can be expressed in Italian by a noun; as,—to read is useful,—*la lettura è utile*; —always to study is fatiguing,—*lo studio continuo è faticoso*; the particle *to* is rendered by the article *il* or *lo*; as,

il leggere è utile,

to read is useful;

lo studiár sémprè è faticóso, always to study is fatiguing :

gli viétàil prodúrre le [or la he forbids him to produce
produzióne délle] pruóve the proofs of his inno-
délla súa innocénza, cence ;
la dóнна veggéndo che il the woman, seeing that
pregáre [or le preghiére] prayers were useless, had
non le valéva, ricórse al recourse to threats.
minacciáre [or úlle mi-
nácce],

But if the infinitive cannot be expressed by a noun, the particle *to* is rendered by a preposition.

If the particle *to* is preceded by a verb signifying remembering or forgetting, pleasing or displeasing, rejoicing or grieving, owning or denying, permitting or prohibiting, telling, declaring, affirming, supposing, suspecting, fearing, commanding, asking, entreating, doubting, promising, advising, concluding, finishing, proposing ; or by any verb implying desire or aversion, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *di* ; as,

mí rallégro di vedér-la, I am very glad to see you ;
mi dispiáce di trovárvi cost I am sorry to find you so
afflitto, afflicted ;
teméva d' éssere udíto, I feared to be heard ;
vi prégo di accordármi quel I beseech you to grant me
favóre, that favour.

The particle *to* is translated by the preposition *a*, when it comes after verbs signifying beginning, teaching, learning, attaining, insisting, persisting, proceeding, remaining, continuing, opposing, contributing, engaging, liking, accustoming, encouraging, obliging ; after verbs implying inclination, difficulty, application, thought, reluctance, fitness ; and after verbs signifying motion ; as,

coméncia a pióvere, it begins to rain ;
égli áma a giuocáre, he likes to play ;
égli sténta a parláre, he can hardly speak ; ,
è venúta a balláre, she came to dance.

The conjunction *and*, used sometimes in English between a verb expressive of motion and another verb in the same tense, person, and number with the former, is rendered in Italian by the preposition *a*, and the verb which follows it is put in the infinitive ; as, I will come and dine with you, *verrò a pranzár con vói*.

And whenever the particle *to* joined with the infinitive of English verbs can be explained by the phrases *in order to*, *with the design of*, or by the preposition *for* with the gerund of the same verbs, it is rendered in Italian by the preposition *per* with the verb in the infinitive ; as,

lo féci per obbligárvi, I did so to oblige you ;
párla cosí per tormentármi, she speaks thus to vex me.

CHAPTER IX.

Of Expletives.

EXPLETIVES are certain words which are not absolutely necessary in grammatical construction, but serve to give strength and energy to the discourse. Such are the following :

Béne, ben, be' :

gli demandái, se gli bastáva I asked him, if he had courage to send him away ;
P' ánimo di cacciárlo vía ; age to send him away ;
ed égli rispóse : Sì béne, and he answered : Yes,
indeed :

égli è quà un malvágio uó- here is a wicked man, who
mo, che m' à tagliáto la has cut my purse with *full*
bórsa con ben cento fiórt- one hundred florins of
ni d' óro, gold ;

be', rispos' io, messère, par- well, Sir, answered I, we
lerém pói; non fáte qui will speak afterwards; do
per or quésto fracásso, not make now such a
noise here.

Béllò :

il vòstro vestíto è béll' e fát- your suit of clothes is fin-
to, ished;
per bélla paura gittò le ban- through fear he threw down
dière del comúne, the standards of the com-
monwealth.

Tútto :

son tútto stánco, I am quite tired;
la dónna uléndo costúi par- the woman hearing this
lúre, il quále élla credéva man speak, whom she
mútolo, tútta stordì, thought dumb, was quite
amazed.

Míca :

son novélla e vére, non son these are news and true,
míca fávole, they are not fables;
non míca idióta nè materiá- not an idiot nor a vulgar
lo; ma scienziáto, e di man; but learned, and of
acúto ingyéno, an acute mind.

Púnto :

sénza sbigottír púnto, without being frightened at
all;
non ne vòglio púnto, I do not wish for any at all.

Púre :

ma se púre avvenísse, but even if it should happen;
la còsa andò pur costì, the affair went off so;
fa púre che tú mi móstri do but show me him whom
qual ti piáce, you like.

Già :

già Dío non vòglia, may God forbid;

non crédo ío già che ne avé- I do not think you take
te a mále, it ill.

O'ra :

deh ! or t' avéssero éssi af- ah ! would that they had
fogáto, drowned you ;
óra che vorrà dir quésto ? now what does this mean ?

E'cco :

ed écco Piétro chiamò all' and lo Peter called at the
úscio, door ;
écco, Giannótto, a te piáce here, John, you wish that I
ch' ío divénga cristá- should become a chris-
no . . . , tian

Pói :

non è pói véro quánto mi what you told me is not
-dicéste, true.

Vía :

va vía, rispóse, e ciò che tu go away, answered he, and
vubí cóna, relate what you please.

Sì :

sì è tánta la benignità, e so great is the goodness
la misericórdia di Dío, and the mercy of God,
che . . . , that

Ne :

chetaménte n' andò per la he went tranquilly through
cámara insíno ulla finé- the room to the win-
stra, dow.

Non :

témo che vói non mi abban- I fear you will abandon
doniáte, me.

*Con :**stássi con méco,*

he is with me.

*U'no :**vuóti tu quell' úno?*

do you want that one?

*E'gli :**égli è úna compassióne a vedérlo,*

it excites pity to see him ;

*E'lla :**élla non andrà sémpre cost,*

it shall not always go on so.

*E'sso :**to mi son venúto a stáre al-
quánta con éssó léi,*I have come to stay a little
while with you.

E'sso, as an expletive, is invariable and may be used equally well before a masculine and a feminine pronoun, both singular and plural ; as, *con éssó méco*, with me ; *con éssó téco*, with thee ; *con éssó lúti*, with him ; *con éssó léi*, with her, or with you ; *con éssó nóti*, with us ; *con éssó vóti*, with you ; *con éssó lóro*, with them.

CHAPTER X.

Of the Ellipsis.

ELLIPSIS is a figure in grammar, which consists in the omission of one or more words in order to add conciseness and elegance to the phrase without affecting its clearness. This figure is very frequent in Italian, and offers one of the principal difficulties in the grammatical analysis of the Classics. We will here give some

examples in which the ellipsis is employed, supplying the words which are omitted, that the learner may familiarize himself with similar locutions.

Ellipsis of the Noun.

<i>Rúppe</i> [la náve] <i>in máre,</i>	he made shipwreck ;
<i>mi scusái</i> [dèlla cólpa] <i>di</i>	I exculpated myself from
<i>ciò,</i>	that fault ;
<i>Alessádro muóre</i> [per amóre]	Alexander dies for that
<i>di quèlla védova,</i>	widow ;
<i>conoscéndo che quívi non éra</i>	knowing that here was no
[luógo] <i>da piángere . . . ,</i>	place to weep . . . ;
<i>bástami</i> [la disgrázia] <i>di</i>	it is enough to have been
<i>éssere státo scherníto úna</i>	insulted once ;
<i>vólta,</i>	
<i>io ci tornerò, e daróttene</i>	I will return and give you
<i>tánte</i> [bússe], <i>ch' io ti</i>	so many blows, that I will
<i>farò tristo per tútto il</i>	make you sorry as long as
<i>témpo, che tu ci viverái,</i>	you live ;
<i>niúno mále si féce nèlla ca-</i>	he did not hurt himself in
<i>dúta, quantúnque alquán-</i>	falling, although he fell
<i>to cadésse da álto</i> [luógo],	from a high place.

Ellipsis of the Adjective.

<i>E, sémpre pói per</i> [buóno]	and considered him always
<i>da mólto l' ébbe, e per</i>	afterwards as a very good
<i>amíco,</i>	man, and as a friend ;
<i>fu</i> [ábile] <i>da tánto, e tánto</i>	he was so able, and knew
<i>séppe fáre, ch' égli pacifi-</i>	how to do so much, that
<i>cò il figliuólo col padre,</i>	he reconciled the son with
	the father ;
<i>non suspicò, che ciò Gúccio</i>	he did not suspect that Guc-
<i>Baléna gli avésse fáttö,</i>	cio Balena had done this
<i>perciocchè nol conoscéva</i>	to him, because he did
[capáce] <i>da tánto,</i>	not think him capable of
	so much ;

il re gli chiamò, e quèi, the king called them, and
quándo il videro, ténnersi they, when they saw him,
[immóbili], stopped.

Ellipsis of Relative Pronouns.

Esaminiamo se delle cose let us examine if he has
[che si sóno] dette ne à done any of the things
fátto alcuna, which have been said ;
la donna gli fece apprestare the woman caused clothes
pánni [i quáli erano] stá- to be prepared which had
ti del maríto, been her husband's ;
riscontróllo quívi Petílio Ce- there met him Petilius Ceri-
riále [il quále era] fug- alis, who had escaped from
gíto dalle guardie di Vi- the guards of Vitellius.
téllio,

Ellipsis of the Infinitive of Verbs.

Andáte per [préndere] éssi, go after them ;
quí il sóle non vi puó [pe- here the sun cannot pen-
netraré], etrate ;
ío éra un asináccio che non I was a great ass, that could
potéva [sostenére] la ví- not endure life.
ta,

Ellipsis of the Verb in the Indicative Mood.

Téssa, ódi tu quel ch' ío Tessa, do you hear what I
[ódo] ? hear ?
questi è il capitáno, gli áltri this is the captain, the oth-
[sóno] da nùlla, ers are of no account ;
éra parénte strétto di Vespa- he was a near relation of
siáno e [éra] soldáto di Vespasian and a good sol-
cónto, dier.

Ellipsis of the Verb in the Conjunctive.

<i>què à quèsta cèna, e non sarèbbe chi [potèsse] mangiàrla,</i>	here is this supper, and there is no one to eat it ;
<i>e avréi gridáto, se non státo] che égli ni chiése mercè per Dio, e per vói,</i>	and I would have cried out, had it not been that he besought mercy both in the name of God and in your name ;
<i>ah ! ah ! se non [fósse] ch' ío ò reverénza a vói, pádre, ío diréi púre il bell' onóre ch' éi mi fa,</i>	ah ! ah ! were it not for the respect - that I bear to you, father, I would tell the great honour he does me.

Ellipsis of the Gerund.

<i>[Esséndo] duránte la guèrra,</i>	during the war ;
<i>[avéndo] vedúto il luógo solitário,</i>	having seen the solitary place ;
<i>giúnto il famigliáre a Génova, e [esséndo státe da lúi] dáte le lèttère, e [esséndo státa da lúi] fátta l' ambasciáta . . . ;</i>	the domestic having arrived at Genoa, and having consigned the letters and delivered the message

Ellipsis of the Participle.

<i>Se éssi mi cacciásser gli ócchi a che sare' ío [ridóto] ?</i>	if they should pull out my eyes, to what should I be reduced ?
<i>se non fósse [státo] il gran préte, a cúi mal prénda,</i>	if it had not been for the high priest, whom curses light on ;
<i>e se non fósse [státo] ch' égli éra giovane, égli avrébbe avúto móltó a sostenére,</i>	and had he not been a young man, he would have had a great deal to suffer.

Ellipsis of Adverbs.

- Ora* [così] *fóssero éssi pur* would that they were dis-
già dispósti a venire, che posed to come, so that we
veramente potrémmo dè- might truly say . . . ;
re . . . ,
- al móndo non fur mái persó-* never among men did any
ne [talménte] *rátte, a far* with such speed haste to
lor pro . . . com' io dópo their profit . . . as I when
cotái paróle fátte, these words were spoken.

Ellipsis of Prepositions.

- In cása* [di] *quésti usurái,* in the house of these usu-
 rers ;
- servíva* [a] *céрти pescatóri,* she served certain fisher-
 men ;
- usáva mólto* [in] *la chiésa,* he frequented much the
 church ;
- sedétte re* [per] *ánni quín-* he reigned for fifteen years ;
dici,
- cenerémo* [con] *un póco di* we will sup upon a little
cárne saláta, salt meat.

Ellipsis of Conjunctions.

- I'o sóno la mísera* [e] *sven-* I am the miserable and un-
turáta Zinévra, fortunate Ginevra ;
- real nátura,* [e] *angélico in-* a royal nature, and an an-
tellétto, [e] *chiar' álma,* gelic mind, and "clear
 [e] *prónta vísta,* [e] *ó-* spirit," and a quick sight,
chio cerviéro, and piercing eyes.

THE END.

ANALYTICAL TABLE

OF

CONTENTS.

	Page
INTRODUCTION—DEFINITIONS OF THE TERMS OF GRAMMAR - - - - -	1-11
<i>Grammar, Words</i> - - - - -	I
Words considered as <i>Articulate Sounds</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Syllables, Letters, Vowels, Consonants	<i>ib.</i>
— considered as <i>Signs of our Thoughts</i> -	2
<i>Parts of Speech</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
NOUN—Proper, common - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Gender</i> —masculine, feminine, common,	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Number</i> —singular, plural - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Case</i> —subjective, objective, relation of possession, of attribution, of deriva- tion - - - - -	3
<i>Declension</i> or Variation of Nouns -	<i>ib.</i>
ARTICLE—definite, indefinite - - -	<i>ib.</i>
ADJECTIVE—positive, comparative, superlative (relative, absolute) - - - - -	4
PRONOUN—personal, conjunctive, possessive, demonstrative, interrogative, relative, indefinite - - - - -	5

	Page
VERB —active, passive, neuter—pronominal, unipersonal - - - - -	6
<i>Mood</i> —infinitive, indicative, conditional, imperative, conjunctive - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Tense</i> —present, past, future - - -	7
<i>Present</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Past or Preterite</i> —imperfect, per- fect-definite, perfect-indefinite, pluperfect-definite, pluperfect- indefinite - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Future</i> —indefinite, definite - - -	8
<i>Number</i> —singular, plural - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Person</i> —first, second, third, (see p. 5.) -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Conjugation</i> or Variation of verbs -	<i>ib.</i>
————— or Assemblage of verbs -	<i>ib.</i>
Regular, irregular, defective verbs -	<i>ib.</i>
PARTICIPLE —present or active, past or passive	9
<i>Gerund</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
ADVERB —of time, place, order, quantity, &c.	<i>ib.</i>
PREPOSITION —of place, order, union, separa- tion, &c. - - - - -	10
CONJUNCTION —copulative, augmentative, al- ternative, adversative, &c. - - -	<i>ib.</i>
INTERJECTION —of grief, joy, indignation, con- tempt, &c. - - - - -	11
<i>Division of the Grammar</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
ALPHABET - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
PRONUNCIATION—ORTHOGRAPHY—ANALOGY— SYNTAX - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
OF THE ITALIAN ALPHABET - - - - -	12

	Page
PART I. OF THE ITALIAN PRONUNCIATION	13-36
CHAP. I. Of the Pronunciation of Vowels	13
<i>a</i> ; <i>e</i> —open, close; <i>i</i> ; <i>o</i> —open, close; <i>u</i> ,	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. II. Of the Pronunciation of Conso-	
nants	14
<i>c</i> —hard, soft; <i>cc</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>g</i> —hard, soft; <i>gg</i>	15
<i>s</i> —sharp, flat	16
<i>z</i> —sharp, flat	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. III. Of <i>J</i> and <i>H</i>	17
<i>j</i> , a vowel in Italian	<i>ib.</i>
<i>h</i> has no sound, a sign, a mark of distinction, rather than a letter	18
CHAP. IV. Of the Pronunciation of Syllables	19
<i>ch</i> , <i>gh</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>gl</i> —hard, liquid	<i>ib.</i>
<i>gn</i>	20
<i>sc</i> —hard, soft	<i>ib.</i>
<i>sch</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>guá</i> , <i>gué</i> , <i>guí</i>	21
<i>quá</i> , <i>qué</i> , <i>quí</i> , <i>quó</i>	<i>ib.</i>
General Remarks on the Italian Pronunciation	<i>ib.</i>
Diphthongs—Double consonants	<i>ib.</i>
Final consonants— <i>gli</i> followed by a vowel	<i>ib.</i>
Rules for determining when the vowels <i>E</i>, <i>O</i>, are pronounced <i>open</i> or <i>close</i>.	22
A Synoptical Table of the Sounds of the Letters	27

Words of Similar Orthography, but of Different Signification, distinguished by the Different Sound of <i>E</i> , <i>O</i>	Page 34
---	------------

PART II. OF THE ITALIAN ORTHOGRAPHY 37-49

CHAP. I. Of the Accent - - - 37

Accent—grave, acute - - - *ib.*

Words on which the accent is generally put *ib.*

The accent used, in Italian, as a mark of distinction between words of the same spelling, but of different signification - - - *ib.*

_____ used by some instead of *h* in the words *ho, hai, ha, hanno* - - - 39

CHAP. II. Of the Apostrophe - - - *ib.*

Words which are written with an Apostrophe 40

t', l', g' - - - - - *ib.*

m', t', c', v', s', d', n' - - - - - *ib.*

e', de', a', da', co', ne', pe', be', se', ve', po', me', vo' *ib.*

Apostrophe, whether used when the elision of the vowel might produce in nouns a confusion of gender, number, &c. - - - 41

_____ when it would change the sound of the consonants; as, in *glí, ci*, and in nouns ending in *ce, ci, ge, gi*, followed by one of the vowels, *a, o, u* - *ib.*

_____, other instances in which it is not used - - - - - 42

CHAP. III. Of the Reduplication of Consonants - - - - - *ib.*

Words in which the consonants are generally doubled - - - - - *ib.*

g doubled before the vowels *ia, io, iu*, and when - - - - - *ib.*

z doubled between two vowels, and when *ib.*

	Page
CHAP. IV. Of the Formation of Syllables	44
A vowel can receive after it, in the same syllable, no more than one consonant ;	
\— may be preceded by more than one	ib.
Double consonants in the middle of a word, what syllable they belong to - - -	45
A consonant between two vowels, what vowel it belongs to - - -	ib.
CHAP. V. Of the Increase of Words -	ib.
Increase of words beginning with an <i>im-pure s</i> - - - - -	ib.
<i>Impure s</i> , what - - - - -	ib.
Other instances of Increase of words— <i>ad, ed, od, sur, insúr</i> - - - -	46
CHAP. VI. Of the Diminution of Words	ib.
Diminution or <i>Retrenchment</i> of words ending in <i>le, me, ne, re ; lo, mo, no, ro</i>	ib.
_____ of words ending in <i>llo, nno</i>	ib.
The words <i>únq, béne, búno, bello, quéllo, gránde</i> , retrenched, and when	ib.
_____ <i>Fráte, Sánto, Suóra, óra, fub-ri</i> , retrenched - - - -	47
Words that are retrenched before a consonant, how written before a vowel -	ib.
_____ that are never retrenched -	48
<i>Contraction of words</i> —infinitive of verbs—imperfect of the indicative - -	ib.
The words <i>cavá', capé', fraté', qué', be', de', a', da', ne', pe', co', su', tra', quá', ma', ta'</i> , for <i>cavái, capéi, fratéi, &c.</i> contractions of <i>caválli, &c.</i> - - - -	ib.
<i>E'</i> for <i>éi</i> , contracted from <i>égli</i> or <i>églino</i>	49

PART III. OF THE ITALIAN ANALOGY Page
50—351

CHAP. I. Of the Articles - - -	50
Use of the articles <i>il, lo</i> ,—their plural -	<i>ib.</i>
— of the article <i>la</i> —its plural -	51
Union of the prepositions <i>di, a, da, in, con,</i> <i>per, su, tra</i> , with the articles <i>il, lo, la</i> -	52
The English indefinite article <i>a, an</i> , how expressed in Italian - - -	54
The adjectives <i>some</i> and <i>any</i> , how express- ed - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. II. Of Nouns - - - -	55
Terminations of nouns— <i>a, e, i, o, u</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Gender</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of nouns ending in <i>a, i, u</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
— of nouns ending in <i>o</i> -	56
— of nouns ending in <i>e</i> - - -	57
— of the nouns <i>fine, fúne, sérpe, trá-</i> <i>ve, grégge</i> - - - -	58
— of <i>óste, brúine, márgine, dimáne</i>	<i>ib.</i>
— of names of countries, and cities	<i>ib.</i>
— of names of trees - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of names of fruits - - - -	59
— of the names of the vowels -	<i>ib.</i>
— of the names of the consonants	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Number</i> —formation of the plural - -	<i>ib.</i>
Plural of feminine nouns ending in <i>a</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
— of masculine nouns ending in <i>a</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
— of nouns ending in <i>e, o</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of the nouns <i>móglie, Dio, úmo, búe</i> , &c.	<i>ib.</i>
— of nouns ending in <i>i, u</i> - - -	60
— of nouns ending in <i>ie</i> - - -	<i>b.</i>
— of nouns in which a syllable has	

	Page
been suppressed, and of nouns ac- cented on the last syllable - -	ib.
— of nouns ending in <i>ca, ga</i> - -	ib.
— of nouns ending in <i>co, go</i> - -	ib.
Nouns ending in <i>co, go</i> , which in the plural have two terminations	61
— of nouns ending in <i>cia, gia</i> -	62
— of nouns ending in <i>cio, gio</i> -	ib.
— of nouns ending in <i>chio, ghio, glio</i>	ib.
— of nouns ending in <i>áio, bio,</i> -	ib.
— of all other nouns ending in <i>io</i> -	ib.
Some nouns have two terminations in the singular, and two in the plural	63
Some masculine nouns have two ter- minations in the singular, and but one in the plural - - -	ib.
Masculine nouns which have one ter- mination in the singular, and two in the plural,— <i>i, a</i> - - -	ib.
Masculine nouns which in the plural have only the termination <i>a</i> -	65
— of the nouns <i>ríso, mémbro, gèsto,</i> <i>frútto, légno, ósso</i> - - -	66
Nouns which have no plural - -	ib.
— which have no singular -	ib.
Case—variation of nouns - - -	ib.
Variation of proper nouns - - -	67
— of the noun <i>Día</i> - - -	68
— of common nouns - - -	ib.
— of common nouns taken in an indefinite sense - - -	74
CHAP. III. Of Adjectives - - -	78
Terminations of adjectives— <i>o, a, e</i> -	ib.
Gender of adjectives ending in <i>o</i> -	ib.
— of adjectives ending in <i>a</i> -	ib.
Their formation - - -	ib.

	Page
<i>Gender</i> of adjectives ending in <i>e</i> - -	78
<i>Plural</i> of adjectives ending in <i>o</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of <i>bello</i> before nouns beginning with a vowel, a <i>z</i> , or an <i>impure s</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
— of adjectives ending in <i>a</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of adjectives ending in <i>e</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of adjectives ending in <i>co, go, ca,</i> <i>ga, cio, cia, gio, chio, ghio,</i> and <i>io</i>	<i>ib.</i>
COMPARATIVES AND SUPERLATIVES -	
<i>Formation of Comparatives</i> of superiority	<i>ib.</i>
— of comparatives of inferiority	79
The particle <i>than</i> which follows com- paratives of superiority and inferior- ity in English, how rendered into Italian - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of comparatives of equality	<i>ib.</i>
Comparatives derived from the Latin, which do not require, in Italian, the ad- dition of any adverb - - -	80
Use of the adverbs <i>mólto, assái,</i> and of the particles <i>vía, vie,</i> before comparatives	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Formation of Superlatives</i> relative -	<i>ib.</i>
— of superlatives absolute -	81
A few superlatives take the terminations <i>érrimo, érrima</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Adjectives derived from the Latin, which in Italian are superlatives by themselves, without any addition or alteration -	<i>ib.</i>
Superlatives of Exaggeration - -	<i>ib.</i>
AUGUMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES.	
82	
<i>Augmentatives</i> expressing bigness and grandeur—terminations <i>óne, ózzo; óne,</i> <i>ózza</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— expressing strength, vigor, and beauty— <i>ótto, ótta</i> - - -	83
— expressing contempt— <i>áccio,</i> <i>ázzo, ástro, áccia, ázza, ástra, áglia</i>	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
_____ double, treble - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Diminutives</i> expressing smallness or prettiness—terminations <i>ino, étto, éllo, úccio, úzzo; ina, étta, élla, úccia, úzza</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ expressing kindness or tenderness— <i>erélllo, erélla</i> - - -	84
_____ expressing compassion— <i>ino, étto, éllo, úccio, úzzo, icciúolo; ina, étta, élla, úccia, úzza, icciúóla</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ expressing contempt and indignation— <i>étto, éllo, úccio, úzzo, icciúolo, icciátto, icciáttole; étta, élla, úccia, úzza, icciúóla, icciátta, icciáttole</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Other terminations of diminutives— <i>cino, icino; célllo, icélllo; cína, icína; célla, icélla</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Lino, lina, ; uólo, uóla</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Nouns which have an irregular termination in their diminutives - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Double diminutives - - -	86
Augmentatives diminished - - -	87
Diminished Augmentatives augmented	<i>ib.</i>
Verbs and Adverbs which may be augmented or diminished - - -	<i>ib.</i>
NUMERAL ADJECTIVES - - -	88
Cardinal numbers - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Ordinal numbers - - - -	89
Collective, distributive, and proportional numbers - - - -	91
Numbers that vary either with regard to gender or number - - -	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. IV. Of Pronouns - - -	94
<i>Personal Pronouns</i> — <i>io, tu, égli, élla, éssa, sè,</i> —their gender, their plural, their use	<i>ib.</i>
_____ variation of - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Désslo, déssa,</i> used instead of <i>ésslo, éssa,</i> and when - - -	97

	Page
Pronouns <i>stésso, stéssa, medésimo, medésima</i> added to personal pronouns—their force - - - - -	98
<i>Méco, téco, séco</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Conjunctive Pronouns— <i>mi, ti, gli</i> or <i>li, il</i> or <i>lo, le, la, ci</i> or <i>ne, vi, lóro, gli</i> or <i>li, lóro, le, si, ne</i> ,—their gender, their use	99
Union of the pronouns <i>mi, ti, gli, ci, vi, si</i> , with the pronouns <i>lo, la, gli, li, le, ne—mélo, télo, gliélo, &c.</i> - - -	100
<i>Mélo, télo, &c.</i> contracted into <i>mel, tel, &c.</i> and when—written with an apostrophe	101
<i>Nol</i> contracted from <i>non lo</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Possessive Pronouns— <i>mío, túo, súo, nóstro, vóstro, lóro</i> —their gender—their plural	102
————— variation of - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Demonstrative Pronouns - - -	104
————— that point out an object near the person who speaks— <i>quéstó, costúí</i> —their feminine, their plural	105
————— that point out an object at a distance from the person who speaks, as well as from the person who is spoken to— <i>quéllo, colúí</i> —their feminine, their plural - - -	105
————— that point out an object near the person who is spoken to— <i>codésto, cotésto</i> —their feminine, their plural - - -	<i>ib.</i>
————— <i>quéstó, quello, codésto, cotésto—costúí, colúí</i> , when used	<i>ib.</i>
Ciò a demonstrative pronoun—its meaning, its use - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— variation of - - - - -	106
<i>Stamattina, stamáne, staséra, stanótte</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Plural of <i>quéllo</i> , when followed by a vowel, a <i>z</i> , or an impure <i>s</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
<i>Quésti, quégli, quéi</i> , in the singular, and <i>quéglino</i> in the plural—their meaning, their use - - - - -	ib.
<i>E' sto, ésta, cotestúi, cotestéi</i> ,—their meaning—obsolete - - - - -	ib.
<i>Relative Pronouns—quále, che, chi</i> ,—their gender, their plural, their use - - -	ib.
----- variation of - - -	107
<i>Cúi</i> a relative pronoun—its meaning, its number, when used - - - - -	108
<i>Onde</i> used as a relative pronoun, and when—its meaning when so used - - -	ib.
<i>Relative Particles—ne, ci, vi</i> ,—their signification, their use - - - - -	ib.
<i>Interrogative Pronouns—chi? che? quále?</i> —their gender, their number, their use	110.
----- variation of - - -	ib.
<i>Indefinite Pronouns—ógni, quálche, &c. úno, un'áltro, &c. l' úno, alcúno, &c.</i> —their gender, their number - - -	ib.
----- their use - - -	112
----- variation of - - -	ib.
<i>Si</i> considered as an indefinite pronoun—its equivalent meaning in English—its gender, its number - - - - -	ib.
<i>Chi</i> used as an indefinite pronoun, and when,—its meaning - - - - -	113
<i>Áltri</i> , used in the singular, and when—its signification - - - - -	ib.
CHAP. V. Of Verbs - - - - -	ib.
Terminations of verbs— <i>áre, ére</i> or <i>ere, íre</i> —three different conjugations—varied with one of the auxiliary verbs <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> - - - - -	114
Variation of <i>avére</i> - - - - -	ib.

	Page
Poetical forms— <i>ave</i> ; <i>avia</i> , <i>aviéno</i> , -	115
<i>avria</i> , <i>avriano</i> or <i>avrieno</i> , -	117
Variation of <i>éssere</i> , - - - -	119
Poetical forms— <i>éts</i> - - - -	ib.
<i>fúrno</i> , <i>fúro</i> , <i>fur</i> , <i>féro</i> - - - -	120
<i>fia</i> , <i>fiano</i> or <i>fieno</i> ; <i>saria</i> , <i>fóra</i> , <i>sariano</i> or <i>sarieno</i> , <i>fórano</i> - - - -	121
Of Regular Verbs - - - -	123
Variation of <i>Active Verbs</i> —with the auxili- ary verb <i>avére</i> - - - -	ib.
<i>First conjugation</i> — <i>amáre</i> ,—paradigm of verbs ending in <i>áre</i> - - - -	124
Poetical forms— <i>amáro</i> or <i>amár</i> , - - - -	125
<i>ameria</i> , <i>ameriano</i> or <i>amerieno</i> , - - - -	126
<i>áme</i> - - - -	127
Variation of verbs ending in <i>cáre</i> , <i>gáre</i> 128	
<i>Cercáre</i> —paradigm of verbs ending in <i>cáre</i> ib.	
Poetical forms— <i>cercheria</i> , <i>cercheriano</i> or <i>cercherieno</i> - - - -	130
<i>cérche</i> - - - -	131
<i>Pregáre</i> —paradigm of verbs ending in <i>gáre</i> 132	
Poetical forms— <i>pregheria</i> , <i>pregheriano</i> <i>pregherieno</i> - - - -	134
<i>préghe</i> - - - -	135
<i>Second conjugation</i> — <i>ére</i> , <i>ere</i> ,—perfect defi- nite <i>éi</i> and <i>éti</i> , or <i>éi</i> only - - - -	ib.
<i>Temére</i> —paradigm of verbs ending in <i>ére</i> , accented - - - -	ib.
Poetical forms— <i>temeria</i> , <i>temeriano</i> or <i>teme- rieno</i> - - - -	139
<i>Crédere</i> —paradigm of verbs ending in <i>ere</i> , unaccented - - - -	141
Poetical forms— <i>credia</i> ; <i>credto</i> , <i>credéro</i> , <i>crederia</i> , &c. - - - -	142 143
<i>Téssere</i> —paradigm of verbs ending, in the <i>perfect-definite</i> , in <i>éi</i> only - - - -	144
Poetical forms— <i>téstto</i> , <i>téstta</i> , <i>téstti</i> , <i>téstte</i> ; <i>tes- stó</i> , <i>testéro</i> - - - -	145

	Page
Participle of verbs ending in <i>cère, scère</i>	147
Regular Verbs of the second conjugation that in the <i>perfect-definite</i> have the termination <i>éi</i> only - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Participle of the verbs <i>annettere, connettere, sconnettere; esigere, esimere, rescindere, rifléttere, scindere, sòlvere; fèrvere, fiédere, sérpere, strépere, tépere, tórperè; suggere</i> - - - -	149
<i>Third conjugation</i> —present indicative, <i>o</i> , <i>isco, o</i> and <i>isco</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Sentire</i> —paradigm of the verbs which in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> ends in <i>o</i> only	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms <i>sentto</i> - - - -	151
<i>sentiria, sentiriano</i> - - - -	152
<i>Esibire</i> —paradigm of those verbs, which in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> have the termination <i>isco</i> only - - - -	154
Poetical forms— <i>esibiria, &c.</i> - - - -	156
<i>Abborrire</i> —paradigm of those verbs which in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , end both in <i>o</i> and <i>isco</i> - - - -	157
Poetical form— <i>abborriria, &c.</i> - - - -	159
Regular verbs of the third conjugation, that in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> have the termination <i>o</i> only - - - -	161
—— verbs that have the termination <i>isco</i> only - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Participle of the verbs <i>ostruire; costruire, costruire, instruire, istruire; apparire, comparire, trasparire, riapparire</i>	174
—— verbs that end both in <i>o</i> and <i>isco</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Participle of the verbs <i>benedire, maledire; offerire, offrìre, sofferire, soffrìre</i>	175
Verbs which in the <i>infinitive</i> have two terminations— <i>ire</i> and <i>ere</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

	<i>Page</i>
Verbs which have the two terminations <i>ire</i> and <i>áre</i> - - - - -	176
—— which have all three terminations— <i>ire, ere, áre</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of <i>Passive Verbs</i> —with the aux- iliary verb <i>éssere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Éssere amáto</i> —páradigm of the passive verbs - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of <i>Neuter Verbs</i> —with the aux- iliary verb <i>éssere</i> - - - - -	182
<i>Partíre</i> —páradigm of the neuter verbs	<i>ib.</i>
Neuter verbs that are varied with the aux- iliary verbs <i>éssere</i> and <i>avére</i> - - -	185
—— verbs that are varied with the aux- iliary verb <i>avére</i> , only - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of <i>Pronominal Verbs</i> —with the auxiliary verb <i>éssere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Pentírsi</i> —páradigm of the pronominal verbs - - - - -	186
Active verbs may become pronominal by the addition of the conjunctive pronouns <i>mí, tí, sí, &c.</i> - - - - -	189
Pronominal verbs that may be varied with either the auxiliary verb <i>éssere</i> or <i>avére</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of <i>Unipersonal Verbs</i> —with the auxiliary verb <i>avére</i> - - - - -	190
<i>Pióvere</i> —páradigm of the unipersonal verbs	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical form <i>pióbbe</i> - - - - -	191
The unipersonal verbs most in use - - -	192
Verbs, which, though not unipersonal in themselves, are often unipersonally used	193
<i>Éssere</i> unipersonally used—its variation— <i>here is, there is</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Avére</i> substituted for <i>éssere</i> , when uniper- sonally used— <i>ci à, vi à</i> - - - - -	196
The greater part of active verbs may be- come unipersonal, and how - - - - -	197

	Page
How to express in Italian <i>here is</i> or <i>there is</i> <i>some of it, here are</i> or <i>there are some of them</i>	<i>ib.</i>
The English unipersonal verb <i>it is</i> , expressed in Italian by <i>fa</i> , and when	<i>ib.</i>
A Synoptical Table of the Variations of the Regular Verbs, showing their Different Terminations in their Simple Tenses	198
Of Irregular Verbs	202
Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the first conjugation	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Andàre</i> —varied with <i>èssere</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>andèria, andria, &c.</i>	203
<i>vàdi</i>	204
<i>Dàre</i> —varied with <i>avére</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>dièti, dièto, diè, dièrono, diè-</i> <i>ro, dièr, dèrno; darìa, &c.</i>	205
<i>Fàre</i> —varied with <i>avére</i>	206
Poetical forms— <i>fàccio, fàce, fan; fta, &c.</i> <i>fèi, fèsti, fèto, fè', fèmmo, fèste, fen, fènno,</i> <i>fer, féro, fèrno, fèrono; farìa, faré', &c.</i>	207
<i>fèssi, fèsse, fèste, fèsseno, fèssono</i>	208
<i>Stàre</i> —varied with <i>èssere</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>stèti, stè, stèro, ster, stièro,</i> <i>stièr.</i>	209
The verbs <i>andàre, dàre, stàre</i> , in some of their compounds become regular	210
Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the sec- ond conjugation in <i>ère</i> accented	211
<i>Cadére</i> —varied with <i>èssere</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>càggio, caggiàmo, càggiono;</i> <i>cadèti, cadètti, cadèto, cadètte, cadè, cadèro,</i> <i>cadèr, cadèrono, cadèltero; cadrò, &c.</i>	212
<i>cadrèti, cadèria, cadria; càggia, caggi-</i> <i>àmo, caggiàte, càggiano</i>	213
<i>Dissuadére</i> —varied with <i>èssere</i> or <i>avére</i>	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>dissuadèria, &c.</i>	214
<i>Dolére</i> —varied with <i>èssere</i>	215

	Page
Poetical forms— <i>dógljo, dóle, dógljono ; dor-</i>	
<i>ria, &c.</i> - - - - -	216
<i>dóglja, dógljano</i> - - - - -	217
<i>Dovére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>déggio, déti, dée, debbiámo,</i>	
<i>deggiámo, devémo, déggiono, déono, déno-</i>	
<i>no ; doveria, dovría, &c.</i> - - -	218
<i>déggia, deggiámo, deggiáte, déggiano</i>	219
<i>Giacére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>giacéria, &c.</i> - - -	220
<i>Parére</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	221
Poetical forms— <i>par ; pársi, pársé, pársero</i>	222
<i>parria, &c.</i> - - - - -	223
<i>Persuadére</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> or <i>avére</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Piacére</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	224
<i>Potére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	225
Poetical forms— <i>puó', puóte, póte, potémo,</i>	
<i>pónno, pon</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>potría, &c.</i> - - - - -	226
<i>Rimanére</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	227
Poetical forms— <i>rimáso ; rimágnó</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Sapére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	229
Poetical forms— <i>sápe ; sapría</i> - - -	230
<i>Sedére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	231
Poetical forms— <i>seggéndo</i>	
<i>sedró ; sedréi, sedería ; seggiámo</i> -	232
<i>stéggia, stéggi, seggiáte, stéggiano</i> -	233
<i>Tacére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>táccio, tácciono ; taceria, &c.</i>	234
<i>táccia, tácciano</i> - - - - -	235
<i>Tenére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>terría, &c.</i> - - -	236
<i>tégna</i> - - - - -	237
<i>Valére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>válsó ; vágljo, val</i>	238
<i>varría, &c.</i> - - - - -	239
<i>Vedére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	240
Poetical forms— <i>vístó ; ve'</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
<i>videt; vedría, &c.; ve'</i> - - -	241
<i>Volére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - -	242
Poetical forms— <i>vuóli, vuó'</i> ; <i>vorria, &c.</i>	
Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the second conjugation ending in <i>ere</i> unaccented—arranged according to their terminations— <i>bere, cere, dere, ere, gere, ggere, gliere, gnere, guere, lere, mere, nere, rere, tere, ttere, vere</i> - - - -	244
<i>Assórbere</i> —paradigm of the verbs ending in <i>bere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i>	247
<i>Cuócere</i> —first paradigm of verbs in <i>cere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	248
Verbs ending in <i>cere</i> , syncopated in the <i>infinitive, future-indefinite</i> , and <i>present</i> of the <i>conditional</i> , and when—form their <i>participle</i> in <i>ótto</i> - - - -	ib.
<i>Vincere</i> —second paradigm of verbs in <i>cere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	ib.
<i>A'rdere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>dere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - - -	250
Particle and present of the verb <i>chíttere</i>	252
Participle and perfect of <i>fóndere</i> -	ib.
Participle of <i>rispóndere, ascóndere</i>	ib.
<i>Tráere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>ere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	ib.
Verbs in <i>ere</i> , syncopated in the <i>infinitive, future-indefinite</i> , and <i>present</i> of the <i>conditional</i> - - - -	253
<i>Dirígere</i> —first paradigm of verbs in <i>gere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	254
<i>Giúngere</i> —second paradigm of verbs ending in <i>gere</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> -	255
Participle of the verb <i>stringere</i> -	256
Verbs in <i>ngere</i> may end also in <i>guere</i>	ib.
<i>Mérgere</i> —third paradigm of verbs in <i>gere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> -	257

	Page
<i>Léggere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>ggere</i> — varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	258
Verbs in <i>ggere</i> , syncopated in the <i>infinitive</i> , <i>future-indefinite</i> , and <i>present</i> of the <i>conditional</i> , and when	
<i>Cógliere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>gliere</i> — varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	259
Poetical form— <i>cóglío</i> - - -	260
Verbs in <i>gliere</i> may be syncopated into <i>rre</i> , and then are syncopated also in the <i>future-indefinite</i> and <i>present</i> of the <i>conditional</i> - - -	
	261
<i>Spégnere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>gnere</i> — varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	ib.
Poetical form— <i>spégnó</i> - - -	262
Verbs in <i>gnere</i> may end also in <i>ngere</i> -	
	ib.
<i>Distínguerere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>guere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	ib.
<i>Svéllere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>lere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - - - -	264
Poetical form— <i>svélgó</i> - - -	ib.
Participle and perfect-definite of the verbs <i>espéllere</i> , <i>impéllere</i> - - -	
	265
<i>Esprímere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>mere</i> — varied with <i>avére</i> - - - -	ib.
Participle and perfect of the verbs <i>assúme- re</i> , <i>redímere</i> - - - -	
	266
<i>Pónere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>nere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - - - -	267
Verbs in <i>nere</i> , syncopated in the <i>infinitive</i> , <i>future-indefinite</i> , and <i>present</i> of the <i>condi- tional</i> - - - - -	
	268
<i>Córrere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>rere</i> —vari- ed with <i>éssere</i> or <i>avére</i> - - -	ib.
<i>Discútere</i> —first paradigm of verbs in <i>tere</i> — varied with <i>avére</i> - - - -	270

	Page
<i>Rivértete</i> —second paradigm of verbs in <i>tere</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	271
<i>Connéttere</i> —paradigm of verbs in <i>ttete</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	272
Participle and perfect of the verb <i>méttere</i>	273
<i>Scrívete</i> —first paradigm of verbs in <i>vere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	
<i>Vólvere</i> —second paradigm of verbs in <i>vére</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> - -	275
Variation of other Irregular Verbs in <i>ere</i> unaccented not included in any of the preceding classes - - - -	276
<i>Conóscere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Participle and perfect of the verb <i>créscere</i>	277
<i>Náscere</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	278
Participle and perfect of the verb <i>nuócere</i>	279
<i>Rómpere</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of the verb <i>bévere</i> or <i>bére</i> —with <i>avére</i> - - - -	280
Poetical forms— <i>béo, béi, bée, bette, béono</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>bébbi, bébbe, bébbero; beveró, bevró, &c.; bevertí, bevería, bevría, &c.</i> - - -	281
<i>béi, béa, bette, béano, bévi, betssero, betsono</i> - - - -	282
Variation of the Irregular Verbs of the third conjugation - - - -	283
<i>Cúctre</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Díre</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	285
Poetical form— <i>dícere</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Moríre</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	287
Poetical form— <i>muór</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>moríría, morría; móra, móia; móri</i>	288
<i>Salíre</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i> - -	289
Poetical forms— <i>saglióno</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>sálsi, sálse, sálto, sálsero, saltro, saltir; ságlia</i> - - - -	290

	Page
<i>Seguire</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> or <i>éssere</i>	291
Poetical forms— <i>ségui, siégui</i> - - -	292
<i>Udire</i> —varied with <i>avére</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical form— <i>ódi</i> - - -	293
<i>Uscire</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	294
<i>Ventre</i> —varied with <i>éssere</i> - - -	295
Poetical forms— <i>végno, vognámo, végnono</i> ; <i>ventro ; verria</i> - - -	296
<i>Bollire</i> - - - - -	297
Defective Verbs - - - - -	298
Variation of defective verbs in <i>ére</i> ac- cented - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Calére</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Colére</i> - - - - -	299
<i>Pavére</i> - - - - -	300
<i>Silére</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Solére</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Poetical forms— <i>sóle, solémo</i> - - -	301
<i>Stupére</i> - - - - -	302
Variation of defective verbs in <i>ere</i> unac- cented - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>A'lgere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>A'ngere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Arrógere</i> - - - - -	303
<i>Cápere</i> - - - - -	304
<i>Chérere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Convéllere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Lécere</i> and <i>licere</i> , or <i>lecére</i> and <i>licére</i>	306
<i>Mólcere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Riédere</i> - - - - -	307
<i>Sérpere</i> - - - - -	308
<i>Tángere</i> - - - - -	309
<i>U'rgere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Vígere</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Variation of defective verbs in <i>ire</i> - - -	310

	Page
<i>Giire</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
<i>I're</i> - - - - -	311
<i>Olíre</i> - - - - -	318
General Observations on the Conjugations of Italian Verbs, and the Formation of their Tenses - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Regular Tenses— <i>imperfect</i> of the <i>indicative</i> , <i>future-indefinite</i> , <i>present</i> of the <i>conditional</i> — <i>imperfect</i> of the <i>conjunctive</i> — <i>gerund</i>	<i>ib.</i>
————— their terminations - -	314
Irregular Tenses— <i>present</i> and <i>perfect-definite</i> of the <i>indicative</i> ; <i>imperative</i> ; <i>present</i> of the <i>conjunctive</i> — <i>participle</i> -	315
————— their formation - -	316
A General Alphabetical Table of the Irregular Verbs, with References to their Paradigms - - -	318
CHAP. VI. Of Participles - - -	334
Terminations of participles— <i>e, o, a</i> -	<i>ib.</i>
Gender—plural - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Comparatives—superlatives - -	<i>ib.</i>
Participles which are generally contracted in their terminations - - -	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. VII. Of Adverbs - - -	337
Formation of the greater part of Italian adverbs	<i>ib.</i>
Comparatives and Superlatives of these adverbs - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Adverbs of time - - - - -	338
————— of place, order - - -	339

	Page
Adverbs of quantity, quality, affirmation, negation - - - -	340
----- of doubt, comparison, interroga- tion, choice, demonstration	341
Adjectives, which are used in Italian as adverbs - - - - -	342
Rules for determining when these words are used as adjectives, and when as ad- verbs - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Adverbial Phrases - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
 CHAP. VIII. Of Prepositions - - -	 343
Prepositions of place - - -	<i>ib.</i>
----- of time, order, union -	344
----- of separation, opposition, end, cause, specification -	345
Rule for determining when a word is us- ed as a preposition, and when as an adverb - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
 CHAP. IX. Of Conjunctions - - -	 346
Conjunctions copulative, negative, aug- mentative <i>or</i> adjunctive, dis- junctive, adversative -	<i>ib.</i>
----- elective, exceptive, conclu- sive - - - -	347
----- explicative, causal, conditional	348
----- periodic - - - -	349
 CHAP. X. Of Interjections - - -	 <i>ib.</i>
Interjections of grief, joy, desire, aversion, anger - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
----- of fear, indignation <i>or</i> con- tempt, approbation, admira- tion, surprise, encouragement, warning - - - -	350

	Page
———— of beseeching, calling, silen- cing - - - - -	351
The interjections <i>lásso! póvero! mísero!</i> mere adjectives—their change with re- gard to gender.	

PART IV. OF THE ITALIAN SYNTAX 352-408

CHAP. I. Of the Order of Words - 352

<i>Simple Construction</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Place of the subjective, verb, objective	<i>ib.</i>
—— of the adjective, article, adverb, pre- position, conjunction - - -	353
—— of the interjection, relative - - -	354
<i>Inverse Construction</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Place of the subjective, objective, adject- tive, adverb - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

**CHAP. II. Of Concordance or Agreement
of Words** - - - 355

Agreement of adjectives - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— of verbs - - - - -	357
———— of participles - - - - -	359
———— of the relative <i>quále</i> - - - - -	360
———— of possessive pronouns - - - - -	361
———— of the noun <i>béstia</i> ,—the pro- noun <i>vói</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— of the adjectives <i>mézzo, tútto</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

CHAP. III. Of the Use of the Article 362

Nouns used either in an <i>indeterminate</i> or in a <i>determinate</i> sense - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Different ways of making use of a noun in a <i>determinate</i> sense - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Article, when used and when not - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— suppressed, and when - - -	363

	Page
Different ways of designating a portion or a number of the objects in a class —by a preposition, article, indefinite pronoun - - - - -	363
Instances in which the preposition, arti- cle, or indefinite pronoun is not used	364
Whether the article used before a noun, is to be repeated before the other nouns in the same sentence, either before or after the verb - -	<i>ib.</i>
Words which require the article in Ital- ian—adjectives, verbs, all other words that can be used as nouns - . -	365
<i>Signóre, signóra</i> , when they require the article - - - - -	366
<i>Quále</i> , when - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Possessive pronouns, when - - -	367
Ordinal numbers, when - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Names of kingdoms, provinces, moun- tains, rivers, when - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Names of islands, cities, lakes, seas, when - - - - -	368
<i>Dio</i> , and proper names of men, when	<i>ib.</i>
Different expressions in which the arti- cle is always suppressed in Italian	369
CHAP. IV. Of the Position of Adjectives	370
Adjectives that follow their nouns -	371
_____ of nations, verbal, of taste, of smell and hearing, expressing colours, denoting shape <i>or</i> form, various expressing physical <i>or</i> mental qualities - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ that may be used as nouns, other abjectives - - -	372
Adjectives that go before their nouns	<i>ib.</i>
_____ numeral - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
other adjectives - - -	373
Instances in which adjectives are generally put after the noun - - -	ib.
CHAP. V. Of the Use and the Position of Pronouns - - -	374
Position of <i>Personal</i> pronouns - - -	ib.
Personal pronouns, may be either expressed or understood—when they ought not to be suppressed - - -	ib.
— of <i>Conjunctive</i> pronouns when they occur with a verb - - -	ib.
— of the pronoun <i>loro</i> - - -	375
— of conjunctive pronouns when they occur with the adverb <i>écco</i> - - -	ib.
— when they are followed by the indefinite pronoun <i>si</i>	376
Use of conjunctive pronouns - - -	ib.
Position of the <i>Relative</i> particles <i>ne, ci, vi</i> , when they occur with a verb - - -	ib.
—, when they occur with the pronouns <i>mi, ti, ci, vi</i> - - -	377
—, when they occur with the pronouns <i>lo, la, li, gli, le</i> - - -	ib.
— of <i>Possessive</i> pronouns - - -	378
How to avoid in Italian the ambiguity arising in English from the indiscriminate use of the possessive pronouns <i>his, her</i> or <i>hers</i> - - -	ib.
CHAP. VI. Of the Change of Person	379
Polite way of addressing in Italian—use of <i>Vóstra Signoría</i> or <i>Vossignoría, V. S.</i> ,— <i>élla</i> —agreement of adjectives	

	Page
and participles in this case—use of the conjunctive pronouns <i>le, la</i> - - -	379
CHAP. VII. Of the Use of the Moods and Tenses of Verbs - - -	381
Of the Use of the Indicative and Subjunctive Moods - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Conjunctions that require the indicative mood - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
————— that require the conjunctive	<i>ib.</i>
With the conjunction <i>che</i> the verb is some- times used in the indicative, and some- times in the conjunctive - - -	<i>ib.</i>
When it is used in the indicative - - -	<i>ib.</i>
When in the conjunctive - - -	382
Some verbs appear to be used indiscrimi- nately either in the indicative or in the conjunctive mood, but are not so - -	<i>ib.</i>
Verbs used in the conjunctive after <i>sembrá- re, parére, bisognáre</i> , or any other uni- personal verb - - - - -	383
————— after the relatives <i>che, quále</i> , and when - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of the Use of the Imperfect, Perfect-de- finite, and Perfect-indefinite - - -	384
The <i>preterite</i> of English verbs, how ren- dered in Italian - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Use of the <i>imperfect</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
— of the <i>perfect-definite</i> - - - - -	385
— of the <i>perfect-indefinite</i> - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
Of the Tenses of the Dependent Verbs in Compound Sentence - - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
Of the tenses of a verb depending on another verb in the <i>present</i> of the <i>indicative</i> or the <i>future</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ depending on a verb in the <i>imperfect</i> or the <i>perfect-definite</i>	<i>ib.</i>
_____ of a dependent verb expressing an action which may be done at all times - - -	386
_____ corresponding to the <i>imperfect</i> of the indicative in English, in a suppositive or a conditional phrase	<i>ib.</i>
Of the Use of certain Tenses of the Indicative for some other Tenses of the same Mood ; and of the Use of the Infinitive for certain Tenses of the Indicative, and for the Conjunctive and the Imperative Moods	<i>ib.</i>
The present of the indicative used for the future - - -	<i>ib.</i>
The perfect-definite for the present, or for the perfect-indefinite - -	387
The <i>infinitive</i> for the third person singular of the present and imperfect of the indicative and their compounds -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ for the third person singular of the present and imperfect of the conjunctive - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ for the second person singular of the imperative, and when - -	388
Of the mode of expressing the English Present Participle in Italian - - -	<i>ib.</i>
The English Present participle expressed in Italian, by a gerund—by the relative <i>che</i> , and a tense of the indicative—by a preposition with the infinitive -	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
The present participle expressed by the infinitive with a preposition, and when	388
The prepositions <i>of, from, with</i> , before the participle, how rendered in Italian	<i>ib.</i>
_____ <i>on, in, for</i> , how rendered	389
_____ <i>without, before, after</i> , how rendered - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ <i>by</i> , how rendered -	390
 Remarks on the Use of certain Italian Verbs as compared with the English - -	 <i>ib.</i>
On the verbs <i>venire, volere</i> , - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ <i>dovere</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
On the English verb <i>to be</i> - -	391
_____ <i>to think</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ <i>to know</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
 CHAP. VIII. Of the Use of certain Prepositions - - -	 <i>ib.</i>
Of the Prepositions <i>di, a, da</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
Use of the preposition <i>di</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ the preposition <i>a</i> - - -	392
_____ the preposition <i>da</i> - -	<i>ib.</i>
Phrases in which the preposition <i>di</i> appears to be used instead of the preposition <i>a</i> - - -	<i>ib.</i>
_____ in which the preposition <i>di</i> appears to be used for the preposition <i>da</i>	393
_____ in which the preposition <i>da</i> appears to be used for the preposition <i>a</i>	394
A collection of phrases, which, consulted by learners, may direct them to make a proper use of the prepositions <i>di, a, da</i> , in similar instances, by analogy	395
Phrases in which the preposition <i>di</i> is used	<i>ib.</i>

	Page
———— in which the preposition <i>a</i> is used	396
———— in which the preposition <i>da</i> is used	397
———— in which by using the preposition <i>di</i> for <i>da</i> , or the preposition <i>da</i> for <i>di</i> , the meaning of the expression is altered	398
Difference between the phrases <i>è tempo di</i> <i>ritirarsi, di scostarsi, di uscire, di desinare,</i> &c. and <i>è tempo da ritirarsi, da</i> <i>scostarsi, da uscire, da desinare,</i> &c.	399
Of the way of rendering into Italian the English particle <i>to</i> before the Infini- tive of Verbs - - - -	ib.
<i>To</i> either a <i>sign</i> or a <i>preposition</i> in English—how expressed -	ib.
— rendered by the article <i>il, lo,</i> and when - - - -	ib.
— rendered by the preposition <i>di, a,</i> <i>per,</i> and when - - - -	400
CHAP. IX. Of Expletives - - -	401
<i>Béne, ben, be' - - - -</i>	<i>ib.</i>
<i>Béllo—tutto—mica—punto—pure—già</i>	402
<i>Ora—ecco—póì—vía—sì—ne—non -</i>	403
<i>Con—uno—egli—élla—éssò - -</i>	404
<i>E'sso</i> invariable, when used as an exple- tive - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
CHAP. X. Of the Ellipsis - - -	ib.
Ellipsis of the <i>Noun</i> - - - -	405
———— of the <i>Adjective</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— of <i>Relative Pronouns</i> - - - -	406
———— of the <i>Infinitive of Verbs</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— of the <i>Verb</i> in the <i>Indicative Mood</i>	<i>ib.</i>
———— of the <i>Verb</i> in the <i>Conjunctive</i>	407
———— of the <i>Gerund</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>
———— of the <i>Participle</i> - - - -	<i>ib.</i>

Ellipsis of <i>Adverbs</i>	-	-	-	Page 408
—— of <i>Prepositions</i>	-	-	-	<i>ib.</i>
—— of <i>Conjunctions</i>	-	-	-	<i>ib.</i>
ANALYTICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS	-			409

ERRATA.

	For	Read
Page 19 line 33	son	child
" 25 " 4	from Latin the	from the Latin
" 38 " 8	<i>crimist</i>	<i>cremist</i>
" 41 " 10	plural	plurals
" — " 12	which, preceded	preceded
" 55 " 3	those of the five } vowels	the five vowels
" 59 " 16	<i>j</i> , of	<i>j</i> , and of
" 61 " 7	<i>maniscáo</i>	<i>maniscálo</i>
" 83 " 31	<i>ino</i>	<i>ina</i>
" 85 " 20	<i>conzoncina</i>	<i>canzoncina</i>
" 98 " 6	<i>ó i</i>	<i>nó i</i>
" 111 " 10	<i>taluán</i>	<i>talúna</i>
" — " 38	Orthog. pp. 48, 49	Orthog. p. 46
" 114 " 10	<i>av re</i>	<i>avére</i>
" — " 14	latter, from	latter from
" — " 15	former the	former, the
" 141 " 18	<i>cred-éndo</i>	<i>cred-énte</i>
" 147 " 10	<i>abállersi</i>	<i>abbállersi</i>
" 161 " 25	<i>abbélire</i>	<i>abbellíre</i>
" 168 " 19	<i>ínquisir</i>	<i>inquisíre</i>
" 207 " 24	* <i>farò</i>	<i>faró</i>
" 209 " 26	* <i>stáro</i>	* <i>starò</i>
" 210 " 13	* <i>stía</i>	* <i>stia</i>
" — " 15	her	she
" 216 " 8	<i>dólgano</i>	<i>dólgono</i>
" 238 " 4	<i>Past</i>	<i>Participle</i>
" 239 " 14	might	may
" 243 " 19	<i>vorrò</i>	* <i>rorrò</i>
" — " 23	<i>vorréi</i>	* <i>vorréi</i>
" 245 " 13	from	form
" 246 " 25	<i>revér-si</i>	<i>rivér-si</i>
" 268 " 7	* <i>póssero</i>	* <i>pósero</i>
" 308 " 6	(<i>sérpéndo</i>)	(<i>serpéndo</i>)
" 317 " 18	singular, from	singular from
" — " 19	<i>infinitive</i> by	<i>infinitive</i> , by
" — " 33	<i>moiano</i>	<i>móiano</i>
" 321 " 24	<i>Cantrappónere</i>	<i>Contrappónere</i>
" 343 " 8	<i>d allóra</i>	<i>d' allóra</i>
" 359 " 25	object we	objective
" 372 " 1	<i>un góbbo</i> , a hunchback	[<i>un góbbo</i> , a hunchback]
" 384 " 27	tenses	tense
" 387 " 17	<i>L' avrái</i>	<i>L' avrái</i>
" 415 " 13	Some nouns	Some feminine nouns
" 420 " 1	<i>aviéno</i>	<i>aríeno</i>
" 426 " 2	<i>ávère</i>	<i>avére</i>
" 432 " 34	abjectives	adjectives

9
100

**HARVARD COLLEGE
LIBRARY**



**THE ESSEX INSTITUTE
TEXT-BOOK COLLECTION**

**GIFT OF
GEORGE ARTHUR PLIMPTON
OF NEW YORK**

JANUARY 25, 1924

